

DON QUIXOTE

BY

MIGUEL DE CERVANTES SAAVEDRA

TRANSLATED BY CHARLES JERVAS

EDITED, WITH NOTES AND AN INTRODUCTION
BY JAMES FITZMAURICE-KELLY



IN TWO VOLUMES: VOL. I

HUMPHREY MILFORD
OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS
London Edinburgh Glasgow Copenhagen
New York Toronto Melbourne Cape Town
Bombay Calcutta Madras Shanghai

saved from the iniquity of oblivion; and he must have studied them with microscopic eyes, for, nearly half a century later, he was able to say off-hand and with confidence (in the twentieth chapter of *Don Quixote*) that Gasabel, the mute squire of Galaor, is only mentioned once in *Amadis de Gaula*—that history as long as it is faithful. And his reading—wide, deep, close and desultory—was supplemented by observation of the motley company which he met on the road. He became familiar with the shifts of strolling actors, the craft of predatory innkeepers, and the wiles of gipsies; he exchanged suave compliments with lying Andalusian rogues, learned to talk the spluttering jargon of illiterate outlanders from Biscay, and rubbed shoulders with every class of adventurer. While still a boy, Cervantes had acted in the sordid tragic-comedy of hunger, played in every province of picaresque Spain.

Settling in Madrid, possibly as usher in a school, he made his first appearance in print (1569) with a sonnet, four *redondillas*, and an elegy on the death of Philip the Second's third wife, Isabel de Valois.

From tender years I've loved, with passion rare,
The winsome art of Poesy the gay,
In this to please thee hath been all my care.

So he said, truly enough no doubt, in the *Voyage round Parnassus*. Whatever may be thought of his later efforts, these juvenile poems give no indication of his powers—even as a writer of verse. For the next eleven years, he had little time to spare to literature. Before he was twenty-two he set out to see the world, to study mankind—and to eat his bread with tears.

He worked his way to Rome, became chamberlain to a future cardinal (Giulio Acquaviva), and had ample opportunities of observing the clerical varieties of human frailty. Some traces of this experience are noticeable in his scornful reference to that poor wind-bag, the pompous churchman attached to the Duke's household, who was rash enough to call Don Quixote a booby :—' one of those who, not being born grandees themselves, cannot teach those who are to behave as such ; one of those who would fain measure the greatness of the great by their own pettiness of spirit '. The words ring with a resentment which tells its own story—a story of humiliations overpast, but unforgotten.

A year or less in Acquaviva's service answered Cervantes's purpose. He was provided with a store of material which he has utilized in creating Don Quixote's lively parish-priest, the learned canon who discussed the principles of dramaturgy, the Archbishop's chaplain who narrowly escaped being galled by Neptune at Seville, and other diverse clerics. In 1570 Cervantes enlisted in the Spanish army, and was present next year at the battle of Lepanto. Nothing delighted him more than to dwell on his share in what he calls ' the most important action ever fought in all the history of the centuries—past, present, and to come '. And he had reason to be proud of it. Though he is modestly silent on the point, we learn from other sources that he was personally congratulated on his conspicuous gallantry by his chief, Don John of Austria. Fancy portraits (and there are no authentic likenesses of Cervantes) often represent him as having

INTRODUCTION

ix

he did it simply for the sake of doing it, and because nature made him murderously inclined to all the race of man. One alone tarred well with him—a Spanish soldier, something-or-other Saavedra by name, to whom he himself never gave a blow, nor ordered a blow to be given, nor said a harsh word, though he had done deeds which will live for many years in the memory of those people, and all to regain his liberty; and for the least of the many things he did we all feared that he would be impaled, and more than once he feared it himself; and, if time only allowed, I could now tell you somewhat of that soldier's deeds which would interest and amaze you far more than the relation of my own story.'

Reaching Spain towards the end of 1580, Cervantes found the country overrun with discharged soldiers like himself. His patron, Don John, was dead, and, in default of any other employment, he betook himself to literature. In 1585 he brought out the First Part of a pastoral romance called *La Galatea*. It won no great success in its day, nor did it deserve to succeed. Prose pastorals are artificial performances at the best, and there was nothing artificial in the nature of Cervantes. His genius is spontaneous, buoyant, and sincere, and in *La Galatea* he compels himself to be restrained and affectedly lachrymose. But the book was always a favourite with the author, and he is careful to place it prominently on the shelves of Don Quixote's library. He followed the literary mode of the hour because his daily bread depended on his pen. He must please, or he must starve. Indeed, he would have starved, had he not written copiously for the stage. In his bland ironical fashion he recalls that his plays 'were not hused, nor hooted, nor did any-

- one throw pumpkins at the actors while the pieces were being given'. And he willingly or banteringly makes believe that he was a successful dramatist for a time. These are the retrospective illusions of a brave spirit, deliberately optimistic to the last; the fact remains that Cervantes gave up the struggle in 1587, and was glad to go to Seville to collect stores for the Invincible Armada. It seemed clear that there was no place for him in literature.
- His new work was squabld and ill-paid, and he plainly accepted it as a last resource. After the defeat of the Armada, he remained in the public service as a tax-collector; but he disliked the business, and vainly applied for employment in America. Fortunately for his fame, and fortunately for mankind, his petition was rejected. He remained to levy contributions with a perfect indiscretion which brought down on him the displeasure of his official superiors, and a threat of excommunication from the clergy. His high-handed, over-zealous proceedings led to his imprisonment in 1592, and he was imprisoned again at Seville in 1597, owing to his imprudence in entrusting Treasury funds to a fraudulent agent. As there was no charge of bad faith against him, he was speedily released; but he gave the impression of being careless or incompetent, and, as he was unable to make good the deficit, he was cashiered. Not a word as to these trials ever escapes him, even in his most expansive mood; none the less they were invaluable to the future author of *Don Quixote*.

He was now fifty years of age, and it was too late for him to make a fresh start in life. He seemed to

have no future: as to the past, he had tried many things and failed in all—failed as schoolmaster, as chamberlain, as soldier, as poet, as novelist, as playwright, as commissary, as tax-gatherer. He had been a slave for five years; he had been under threat of excommunication; he had been at least twice in prison. Naturally no one wished to employ a man with such a history. When Cervantes came out of Seville jail in 1597 he found himself little better than a pariah: in reality, though he himself never guessed it, he was on the threshold of immortality. Any other man might have been soured by an unbroken series of misfortunes, but the distinguishing notes of Cervantes's character are his calm courage and unwavering hopefulness—the very qualities with which he has endowed *Don Quixote*. There is nothing querulous in his attitude towards fate; so far from yielding to the fatal instinct of self-pity, he contemplates the riotous farce of human action with an air of interested and philosophic detachment. And he was now free to indulge his vein of whimsical speculation, for he was forgotten by all the world except the Treasury officials. Unable to repay the missing money, he was imprisoned in 1598 and again in 1601-2. But these interruptions did not gravely disturb his resigned tranquillity, and they even seem to have stimulated his creative genius. He describes *Don Quixote* as a book 'full of imaginings of every sort, and such as were never conceived in any other mind, just what might be begotten in a prison where every misery is lodged, and every dismal sound has its abode'; and the probability is that he began it in Seville jail. There are unmistakable signs that

common sense without reason or imagination; and Cervantes not only shows the excellence and power of reason in Don Quixote, but in both him and Sancho the mischiefs resulting from a severance of the two main constituents of sound intellectual and moral action. Put him and his master together, and they form a perfect intellect; but they are separated and without cement; and hence each having a need of the other for its own completeness, each has at times a mastery over the other. For the common sense, although it may see the practical inapplicability of the dictates of the imagination or abstract reason, yet cannot help submitting to them. These two characters possess the world, alternately and interchangeably the cheater and the cheated. To impersonate them, and to combine the permanent with the individual, is one of the highest creations of genius, and has been achieved by Cervantes and Shakspeare, almost alone.

It was not, however, from this philosophic point of view that Don Quixote and Sancho Panza were judged when the First Part of their history appeared early in 1605. *Don Quixote* was not regarded as a work packed with esoteric doctrine, but as a 'book of entertainment'—*libro de entretenimiento*—and its unflagging gaiety secured its instant triumph. There were some readers, as Cervantes himself informs us, who 'would have been glad if the author had omitted some of the innumerable cudgellings which were administered to Señor Don Quixote in various encounters'; and Cervantes appears to have felt the justice of this criticism, for (in the third chapter of the Second Part) he goes on to remark in the person of Don Quixote that it is useless to record events which tend to bring contempt upon the hero. But the cavillers were few.

now 'the tearful humour of a soul deeply conscious of man's ludicrous futility in his relation to his fellow-men'; and there is a more intense depth in his melancholy brooding on the absurdities of existence. But his spirit of fun, though less stormy than before, is unabated, and he has become an absolute expert in his craft. The flow of the story is no longer interrupted by the irrelevant digressions which were censured in the First Part; and yet the variety of incident is greater, the resources of the writer's invention being apparently inexhaustible. The numerous new personages are finely conceived—the Duchess indeed achieves the impossible in compensating for Dorothea, and the Bachelor Carrasco and Doctor Pedro Recio de Agüero easily outshine Cardenio and Fernando. There are more high spurs, more 'cataracts of laughter' in the First Part; in the Second there are loftier divinations, more intellectual force, more comprehension and therefore more delicate sympathy. The two central characters retain their logical unity, but acquire a profounder significance. And, in this connection, I may quote from Mr. George Meredith's striking appreciation:

'Heart and mind laugh out at Don Quixote, and still you brood on him. The juxtaposition of the knight and squire is a Comic conception, the opposition of their natures most humorous. They are as different as the two hemispheres in the time of Columbus, yet they touch and are bound in one by laughter. The knight's great aims and constant mishaps, his chivalrous valiancy exercised on absurd objects, his good sense along the highroad of the crariest of expeditions; the compassion he plucks out of derision, and the admirable figure he preserves while

striking through the frantically grotesque and burlesque smiling him, are in the softest sounds of humor, fused the Tragic sentiment with the Comic narrative.

Cervantes died with the gratification of knowing that his ambitious attempt to repeat his triumph had succeeded, and that not only in Spain but out of it he was regarded as a great master of imaginative art. He was not, however, aware that during his lifetime the First Part of *Don Quixote* had been done into English (1612) by Thomas Shelton, and into French (1616) by Cisse Oudin; but he slyly declares his conviction that 'there will be no land or language without a translation of it'. His general premonition has been fairly fulfilled. He asserts, with an air of inscrutable urbanity, that 'he who has shown most concern for the book has been the Emperor of China', who brought the author to send him the Second Part, 'since he purposed founding a college in which Castilian should be studied, and he wished that the textbook read might be the history of *Don Quixote*'. Cervantes refused the Emperor's petition, and China still lives on the aims of hope; but the story of the mad Manchegan knight's adventures is read to-day at Tokio in the Japanese version (1906) of Matsui Shōjō, and at Lucknow in the Hindustani (1894) of Pandit Ratan Nath.

Among English translations of *Don Quixote*, that of Charles Jervas¹ has maintained its popularity ever

¹ The name was so written by friends, and counterpoises of the painter. Cp. Pope's *Sandys' Ghost*:

Let W—r—r's muse with Ash—t join,

And Ocell's with Lord Hervey's

Tickell and Addison combine,

And P—po translate with Jervas.

since it was issued (posthumously) in 1742. Jervas, once a fashionable painter, is the hero of a story to the effect that 'having succeeded happily in copying [he thought in surpassing] a picture of Titian, he looked first at the one, then at the other, and then with parental complacency cried, "Poor little Tit! how he would stare!"'¹ And Pope's lines testify to Jervas's celebrity in his day:

Oh! lasting as these colours may they shine,
Free as thy stroke, yet faultless as thy line!
New graces yearly, like thy works, display;
Soft without weakness, without glaring gay.

Jervas's free stroke and faultless line are no longer esteemed, and the famous artist would now be forgotten but for his version of *Don Quixote*, and, as it happens, some doubt has been thrown on his right to be regarded as author of the translation which bears his name. Warburton records that 'Mr. Pope used to say he had had an acquaintance with three eminent Painters, none of which had common sense. Instead of valuing themselves on their performances in that art, where they all had merit; the one was deep in military Architecture, without a line of Mathematics,

¹ Another instance of Jervas's egregious vanity is given by Horace Walpole in his *Anecdotes of Painting in England*, edited by Ralph N. Wornum (London, 1843), ii. 655. He was in love with the Countess of Bridgewater, and one day, as she was sitting to him "he ran over the beauties of her face with rapture. "But," said he, "I cannot help telling your ladyship that you have not a handsome ear." "No!" said lady Bridgewater, "pray, Mr. Jervas, what is a handsome ear?" He turned his cap and showed her his own.'

stalking through the frantically grotesque and burlesque, assailing him, are in the loftiest moods of humour, fusing the Tragic sentiment with the Comic narrative.'

Cervantes died with the gratification of knowing that his ambitious attempt to repeat his triumph had succeeded, and that not only in Spain but out of it he was regarded as a great master of imaginative art. He was not, however, aware that during his lifetime the First Part of *Don Quixote* had been done into English (1612) by Thomas Shelton, and into French (1611) by César Oudin; but he slyly declares his conviction that 'there will be no land or language without a translation of it'. His genial presentiment has been fairly fulfilled. He asserts, with an air of uncrystalline urbanity, that 'he who has shown most concern for the book has been the Emperor of China, who brought the author to send him the First and Part, 'since he purposed founding a college in which it should be studied, and he wished that the textbook read might be the history of Don Quixote'. Cervantes refused the Emperor's petition, and 'was still alive on the cline of hope; but the story of the great Manchegan knight's adventures is read in the original in the Japanese version (1904 of Murakami), and at Larkhow in the Haktan version (1914) and in the Haktan Nihon.

Among English translations of *Don Quixote*, that of Charles Jarvis' has been the most popularly ever

The same was done in the original, and contrived
 for the use of the printer: - a single sheet
 for the first - a single sheet for the second
 and the third - and the fourth
 The first and second were published,
 and the third was translated with Jarvis.

INTRODUCTION

2

since it was issued (posthumously) in 1742 Jervas once a fashionable painter, is the hero of a story the effect that 'having succeeded happily in copying [he thought in surpassing] a picture of Titian, he looked first at the one, then at the other, and then with parental complacency cried, "Poor little Tit! how he would stare!"'¹ And Pope's lines testify Jervas's celebrity in his day:

Oh! lasting as these colours may they shine,
Free as thy stroke, yet faultless as thy line!
New graces yearly, like thy works, display;
Soft without weakness, without glaring gay.

Jervas's free stroke and faultless line are no longer esteemed, and the fatuous artist would now be forgotten but for his version of *Don Quixote*; and, as happens, some doubt has been thrown on his right to be regarded as author of the translation which bears his name. Warburton records that 'Mr. Pope used to say he had had an acquaintance with three eminent Painters, none of which had common sense. Instead of valuing themselves on their performances in that art, where they all had merit: the one was deep military Architecture, without a line of Mathematics

* ¹ Another instance of Jervas's egregious vanity is given by Horace Walpole in his *Anecdotes of Painting in England*, edited by Ralph N. Wornum (London, 1843), ii, 6. He was in love with the Countess of Bridgewater, and one day, as she was sitting to him 'he ran over the beauties of her face with rapture. "But," said he, "I cannot help telling your ladyship that you have not a handsome ear." "No!" said Lady Bridgewater, "pray, Mr Jervas, what is a handsome ear?" He turned his cap and showed his own.'

INTRODUCTION

stalking through the frantically grotesque and burlesque
 . assailing him, are in the loftiest moods of humour, losing
 the Tragic sentiment with the Comic narrative.

Cervantes died with the gratification of knowing
 that his ambitious attempt to repeat his triumph had
 succeeded, and that not only in Spain but out of it he
 was regarded as a great master of imaginative art.
 He was not, however, aware that during his lifetime
 the First Part of *Don Quixote* had been done into
 English (1612) by Thomas Shelton, and into French
 (1614) by Cesar Oudin; but he shyly declares his
 conviction that 'there will be no land or language
 without a translation of it.' His genial presentment
 has been fairly fulfilled. He asserts, with an air of
 inscrutable urbanity, that 'he who has shown most
 concern for the book has been the Emperor of China
 who brought the author to send him the Second Part
 'since he purposed founding a college in which Castilian
 should be studied, and he wished that the textbook
 read might be the history of *Don Quixote*'. Cervantes
 refused the Emperor's petition, and China still lives
 the alms of hope; but the story of the mad Manchurian
 knight's adventures is read to day at Tôkyô in a
 Japanese version (1898) of Matsui 1887, and at Lu
 now in the Hindustani (1894) of Pandit Natan Nath.
 Among English translations of *Don Quixote* the
 Charles Jervas' has maintained its popularity.

The name was so written by Izaak, and the
 portrait of the painter. Cp. Pope's *Windsor* 1719
 Let W—r—k's muse with Ash—t—t
 And Ocell's with Lord Hervey's
 Tarkell and Addison combine,
 And Pope translate with Jervas.

INTRODUCTION

since it was issued (posthumously) in 1742 Jervas once a fashionable painter, is the hero of a story to the effect that 'having succeeded happily in copying [he thought in surpassing] a picture of Titian, he looked first at the one, then at the other, and then with parental complacency cried, "Poor little Tit! how he would stare!"'¹ And Pope's lines testify to Jervas's celebrity in his day :

Oh ! lasting as these colours may they shine,
Free as thy stroke, yet faultless as thy line !
New graces yearly, like thy works, display ;
Soft without weakness, without glaring gay.

Jervas's free stroke and faultless line are no longer esteemed, and the fatuous artist would now be forgotten but for his version of *Don Quixote* ; and, as happens, some doubt has been thrown on his right to be regarded as author of the translation which bears his name. Warburton records that 'Mr. Pope used to say he had had an acquaintance with three eminent Painters, none of which had common sense. Instead of valuing themselves on their performances in the art, where they all had merit ; the one was deep in military Architecture, without a line of Mathematic

¹ Another instance of Jervas's egregious vanity is given by Horace Walpole in his *Anecdotes of Painting in England*, edited by Ralph N. Wornum (London, 1843), ii, 6. He was in love with the Countess of Bridgewater, and one day, as she was sitting to him "he ran over the beauties of her face with rapture. "But," said he, "I cannot help telling your ladyship that you have not a handsome ear." "No!" said Lady Bridgewater, "pray, Mr. Jervas, what is a handsome ear?" He turned his cap and showed his own."

arguments advanced to support a case for the independent origin of the Academy engraving were poor inventions, and are now abandoned. It must be said in the plainest terms that what has so long passed even in Spain itself, as Cervantes's portrait is a pure conventional likeness done to order in England by an inferior artist who was not born till Cervantes had been in his grave for nearly seventy years.

In default of an authentic likeness of Cervantes, it has been decided to insert in the present reprint a copy of the engraving which precedes Thomas Shelton's English translation of the First Part of *Don Quixote*, and François de Rosset's French version of the Second Part. The best bibliographer of Cervantes's works has believed that this engraving was published in the first edition of Shelton's translation (1612),¹ and he appears to have seen one of the few perfect copies of this edition. The engraving was issued with Rosset's version (1618), and was reproduced in Shelton's translation of both Parts (1620). In any case, it cannot be later than 1618, while it may actually have appeared during the lifetime of Cervantes himself, and it is especially interesting as the earliest illustration accompanying the text.

¹ Leopoldo Ruas, *Bibliografía crítica de las obras de Miguel de Cervantes Saavedra* (Madrid, 1895-1903), 233-4.

CONTENTS OF VOL. I

	PAGE
THE AUTHOR'S PREFACE	1
CHAP. I.—Which treats of the quality and manner of life of the renowned gentleman Don Quixote de la Mancha	9
CHAP. II.—Which treats of the first sally the ingenious Don Quixote made from his Village	16
CHAP. III.—In which is related the pleasant method Don Quixote took to be dubbed a knight	23
CHAP. IV.—Of what befell our knight after he had sailed out from the inn	30
CHAP. V.—Wherein is continued the narration of our knight's misfortune	37
CHAP. VI.—Of the pleasant and grand scrutiny made by the priest and the barber in our ingenious gentleman's library	43
CHAP. VII.—Of the second sally of our good knight Don Quixote de la Mancha	53
CHAP. VIII.—Of the good success which the valorous Don Quixote had in the dreadful and never-before- imagined adventure of the windmill, with other events worthy to be recorded	59
CHAP. IX.—Wherein is concluded, and an end put to the stupendous battle between the vigorous Bucaramer and the valiant Manchegan	64
CHAP. X.—Of the discourse Don Quixote had with his good squire Sancho Panza	74

	PAGE
CHAP. XXXI.—Of the relishing conversation which passed between Don Quixote and his squire Sancho Panza, with other incidents	309
CHAP. XXXII.—Which treats of what befell Don Quixote's whole company in the inn	319
CHAP. XXXIII.—In which is recited 'the Novel of the Curious Impertinent'	329
CHAP. XXXIV.—In which is continued 'the Novel of the Curious Impertinent'	348
CHAP. XXXV.—The conclusion of 'the Novel of the Curious Impertinent', with the dreadful battle betwixt Don Quixote and certain wine-skins	360
CHAP. XXXVI.—Which treats of other uncommon accidents, that happened at the inn	379
CHAP. XXXVII.—Wherein is continued the history of the famous Infanta Blacamorana, with other pleasant adventures	390
CHAP. XXXVIII.—The continuation of Don Quixote's curious discourse upon arms and letters	401
CHAP. XXXIX.—Wherein the captive relates his life and adventures	406
CHAP. XL.—In which is continued the history of the captive	415
CHAP. XLI.—Wherein the captive continues the story of his adventures	429
CHAP. XLII.—Which treats of what farther happened in the inn, and of many other things worthy to be known	450
CHAP. XLIII.—Which treats of the agreeable history of the young muleteer: with other strange acci-	

CONTENTS

xiii

	PAGE
CHAP. XLIV.—A continuation of the unheard-of adventures of the man	409
CHAP. XLV.—In which the dispute concerning Mambrino's helmet and the pannel is decided, with other adventures that really and truly happened	473
CHAP. XLVI.—In which is finished the notable adventure of the troopers of the Holy Brotherhood; with the great ferocity of our good knight, Don Quixote	487
CHAP. XLVII.—Of the strange and wonderful manner in which Don Quixote de la Mancha was enchanted, with other remarkable occurrences	496
CHAP. XLVIII.—In which the canon prosecutes the subject of books of chivalry, with other matters worthy of his genius	507
CHAP. XLIX.—Of the ingenious conference between Sancho Panza and his master Don Quixote	515
CHAP. L.—Of the ingenious contest between Don Quixote and the canon, with other accidents	525
CHAP. LI.—Which treats of what the goatherd related to all those who accompanied Don Quixote	532
CHAP. LII.—Of the quarrel between Don Quixote and the goatherd, with the rare adventure of the disciplinants, which he happily accomplished with the sweat of his brow	538

THE AUTHOR'S PREFACE

You may believe me without an oath, gentle reader, that I wish this book, as the child of my brain, were the most beautiful, the most sprightly, and the most ingenious, that can be imagined. But I could not control the order of nature, whereby each thing engenders its like: and therefore what could my sterile and uncultivated genius produce, but the history of a child, meagre, adust, and whimsical, full of various wild imaginations, never thought of before. Like one you may suppose born in a prison, where every inconvenience keeps its residence, and every dismal sound its habitation? Whereas repose of body, a desirable situation, unclouded skies, and above all, a mind at ease, can make the most barren places fruitful, and produce such offspring to the world, as fill it with wonder and content. It often falls out, that a parent has an ugly child, without any good quality; and yet fatherly fondness cleps such a bandage over his eyes, that he cannot see its defects: on the contrary, he takes them for wit and pleasantry, and recounts them to his friends for smartness and humour. But I, though I seem to be the father, being really but the step-father of *Don Quixote*, will not go down with the stream of custom, nor beseech you, almost as it were with tears in my eyes, as others do, dearest reader, to pardon or disguise the faults you shall discover in this my child. You are neither his kinsman nor friend; you have your soul in your body, and your will as free as the bravest of them all, and are as much lord and master of your own house, as the king of his subsidies, and know the common saying, 'Under my

cloak, a *Es* for the king. All which exempts and frees you from every regard and obligation: and therefore you may say of this history whatever you think fit, without fear of being calumniated for the evil, or rewarded for the good you shall say of it.

Only I would give it you neat and ask'd, without the ornament of a preface, or the rabble and catalogue of the accustomed sonnets, epigrams, and encomiums, that are wont to be plac'd at the beginning of books. For, let me tell you, though it cost me some pains to write it, I reckon'd none greater than the writing of this preface you are now reading. I often took pen in hand, and as often laid it down, not knowing what to say: and once upon a time, being in deep suspense, with the paper before me, the pen behind my ear, my elbow on the table, and my cheek on my hand, thinking what I should say, unexpectedly in came a friend of mine, a pleasant gentleman, and of a very good understanding: who, seeing me so pensive, asked me the cause of my musing. Not willing to conceal it from him, I answered, that I was musing on what preface I should make to *Don Quixote*, and that I was so much at a stand about it, that I intended to make none at all, nor publish the achievements of that noble knight. For would you have me not be concerned at what that ancient lawgiver, the vulgar, will say, when they see me, at the end of so many years, slept away in the silence of oblivion, appear, with all my years upon my back, with a legend as'dry as a keez, empty of invention, the style flat, the conceits poor, and void of all learning and erudition: without quotations in the margin, or annotations at the end of the book; seeing that other books, though fabulous and profane, are so full of sentences of Aristotle, of Plato, and of all the tribe of philosophers, that the readers are in admiration, and take the authors of them for men of great reading, learning, and eloquence? for, when they cite the Holy Scriptures, they pass for so many St. Thomases, and doctors of the church; observing herein a decorum so ingenious, that, in one

line, they describe a raving lover, and, in another give you a little scrap of a Christian homily, that it is a delight, and a perfect treat, to hear or read it. All this my book is likely to want: for I have nothing to quote in the margin, nor to make notes on at the end; nor do I know what authors I have followed in it, to put them at the beginning, as all others do, by the letters A. B. C. beginning with Aristotle, and ending at Xenophon, Zolus, or Zeno: though the one was a raller, and the other a painter. My book will also want sonnets at the beginning, at least such sonnets whose authors are dukes, marquesses, earls, bishops, ladies, or celebrated poets: though, should I desire them of two or three obliging friends, I know they would furnish me, and with such, as those of greater reputation in our Spain could not equal¹. In short, my dear friend, continued I, it is resolved, that Señor Don Quixote remain buried in the records of La Mancha, until heaven sends somebody to supply him with such ornaments as he wants; for I find myself incapable of helping him, through my own insufficiency and want of learning; and because I am naturally too idle and lazy to hunt after authors, to say what I can say as well without them. Hence proceeds the suspense and thoughtfulness you found me in, sufficiently occasioned by what I have told you.

My friend, at hearing this, striking his forehead with the palm of his hand, and setting up a loud laugh, said: Before God, brother, I am now perfectly undeceived of a mistake I have been in ever since I knew you, still taking you for a discreet and prudent person in all your actions: but now I see you are as far from being so, as heaven is from earth. For how is it possible, that things of such little moment, and

¹ A hint at Cervantes's rival, Lope de Vega, who exceeded even the graver measures of the age in the number of eclogues poems by 'obliging friends' which he printed at the beginning of his works. Amusingly enough, Cervantes himself had contributed a most flattering sonnet to Lope's *Drogonadas* (1607).

so easy to be remedied, can have the power to puzzle and confound a genius so ripe as yours, and so made to break through and trample upon greater difficulties? In faith, this does not spring from want of ability, but from an excessive laziness, and penury of right reasoning. Will you see whether what I say be true? then listen attentively, and you shall perceive, that, in the twinkling of an eye, I will confound all your difficulties, and remedy all the defects that, you say, suspend and deter you from introducing into the world the history of this your famous Don Quixote, the light and mirror of all knight-errantry.

Say on, replied I, hearing what he said to me: after what manner do you think to fill up the vacancy made by my fear, and reduce the chaos of my confusion to clearness? To which he answered: the first thing you seem to stick at, concerning the sonnets, epigrams, and eulogies, that are wanting for the beginning, and should be the work of grave personages, and people of quality, may be remedied by taking some pains yourself to make them, and then baptizing them, giving them what names you please, fathering them on Prester John of the Indies, or on the Emperor of Trapisonda; of whom I have certain intelligence that they are both famous poets: and though they were not such, and though some pedants and bachelors should backbite you, and murmur at this truth, value them not two farthings; for, though they should convict you of a lie, they cannot cut off the hand that wrote it.

As to citing in the margin the books and authors from whom you collected the sentences and sayings you have interspersed in your history, there is no more to do but to contrive it so, that some sentences and phrases may fall in pat, which you have by heart, or at least which will cost you very little trouble to find. As for example, treating of liberty and slavery:

Non bene pro toto libertas venditur auro.

And then in the margin cite Horace, or whoever

said it.¹ If you are treating of the power of death presently you have:

*Pallida Mors aequo pulsat pede pauperum tabernae
Regumque turres*

If of friendship and loving our enemies, as God enjoins, go to the Holy Scripture, if you have never so little curiosity, and set down God's own words: *Ego autem dico vobis, diligite inimicos vestros.*² If you are speaking of evil thoughts, bring in the gospel again: *De corde erunt cogitationes malae.*³ On the instability of friends, Cato will lend you his distich:

*Donec eris felix, multos numerabis amicos,
Tempora si fuerint nebula, solus eris.*⁴

And so with three scraps of Latin and the like, it is odds but people will take you for a great grammarian, which is a matter of no small honour and advantage in these days. As to clapping annotations at the end of the book, you may do it safely in this manner. If you name any giant in your book, see that it be the giant Goliath; and with this alone (which will cost almost nothing) you have a grand annotation, for you may put: 'The giant Goliaa, or Gobat, was a Philistine, whom the shepherd David slew with a great blow of a stone from a sling, in the valley of Terrebethus, as it is related in the book of Kings, in the chapter wherein you shall find it'.

Then, to show yourself a great humanist, and skilful in cosmography, let the river Tagus be introduced into the history, and you will gain another notable annotation, thus: 'The river Tagus was so

¹ Aesop, *fab.* 14, *The Felle of the Dog and the Wolf*.

² Horace, *Odes*, l. 4. 13-14.

³ St. Matthew, v. 44.

⁴ St. Matthew, xv. 12.

⁵ The popularity of the *Disticha Catonis* in Spain is shown by Professor Karl Fretsch in the University of Chicago's *Decennial Publications* (1902), vol. vii. The above lines do not, however, occur in Dionysius Cato's *Disticha*. They are in Ortil's *Tristia*, l. 2. 5-6.

subject. In fact, there is no more to be done but naming these names, or listing these stories in your book, and let me alone to write the annotations and quotations; for I will warrant to fill the margins for you, and scrub the end of your book with half a dozen leaves into the bargain.

We come now to the catalogue of authors, or drawn in other books, that is wanting in yours. The remedy offered is very easy. For you have nothing to do but to find a book that has them all, from A down to Z, as you say, and then transcribe that very alphabet into your work, and suppress the falsehood be ever so apparent, from the little word you have to make use of them, it signifies nothing. and perhaps some will be so foolish as to believe you had occasion for them all in your simple and sincere history. But though it served for nothing else, that long catalogue of authors will, however, at the first blush, give some authority to the book. And who will go about to dispute, whether you followed them or no, seeing they can get nothing by it?

After all, if I take the thing right, this book of yours has no need of these ornaments you say it wants; for it is only an invective against the books of chivalry, which sort of books Aristotle never dreamed of, Ramt Reed never mentioned, nor Cicero once heard of. Nor does the relation of its fabulous extravagances fall under the punctuality and preciseness of truth; nor do the observations of astronomy come within its sphere: nor have the dimensions of geometry, or the rhetorical arguments of logic, any thing to do with it; nor has it any concern with preaching, mixing the human with the divine, a kind of mixture which no Christian judgement should meddle with. All it has to do is, to copy nature: imitation is the business, and how much the more perfect that is, so much the better what is written will be. And since this writing of yours aims at no more than to destroy the authority and acceptance the books of chivalry have had in the world, and

DON QUIXOTE

among the vulgar, you have no business to go begging sentences of philosophers, passages of holy writ, poetical fables, rhetorical orations, or miracles of saints: but only to endeavour, with plainness, and magnificent, decent, and well-ordered words, to give your periods a pleasing and harmonious turn, expressing the design in all you advance, and as much as possible making your conceptions clearly understood, without being intricate or obscure. Endeavour also, that by reading your history, the melancholy may be provoked to laugh, the gay humour be heightened, and the simple not tired; that the judicious may admire the invention, the grave not undervalue it, nor the wise forbear commending it. In conclusion, carry your aim steady to overthrow that ill-compiled machine of books of chivalry, abhorred by many, but applauded by more: and, if you carry this point, you gain a considerable one.

I listened with great silence to what my friend said to me, and his words made so strong an impression upon me, that I approved them without disputing, and out of them chose to compose this Preface, wherein, sweet reader, you will discern the judgement of my friend, my own good hap in finding such a counsellor at such a pinch, and your own ease in receiving, in so sincere and unostentatious a manner, the history of the famous Don Quixote de la Mancha: of whom it is clearly the opinion of all the inhabitants of the district of the field of Montiel, that he was the chaste lover, and the most valiant knight, that has been seen in those parts for many years. I will not enhance the service I do you in bringing you acquainted with so notable and so worthy a knight; but I beg the favour of some small acknowledgement for the acquaintance of the famous Sancho Panza, his squire, in whom I think I have deciphered all the squire-like graces that are scattered up and down in the whole rabble of books of chivalry. And so, God give you health, not forgetting me. Farewell.

THE INGENIOUS GENTLEMAN DON QUIXOTE

de la Mancha

FIRST PART

CHAPTER I

Which treats of the quality and manner of life of the renowned gentleman Don Quixote de la Mancha

IN a village of La Mancha, the name of which I purposely omit, there lived not long ago, one of those gentlemen, who usually keep a lance upon a rack, an old target, a lean horse, and a greyhound for coursing. A dish of boiled meat, consisting of somewhat more beef than mutton, the fragments served up cold on most nights, an omelet¹ on Saturdays, lentils on Fridays, and a small pigeon by way of addition on Sundays, consumed three-fourths of his income. The rest was laid out in a surtout of fine black cloth, a pair of velvet breeches for holidays, with slippers of the same; and on week-days he prided himself in the very best of his own homespun cloth. His

¹ *Duclos y quebrantos*, the phrase in the original, has greatly puzzled translators and commentators. M. Alfred Morel-Fatio satisfactorily explains it as a common binary form, akin to 'aches and pains', applied by extension to the *moigne* of Saturdays which consisted in Castile of the head, tail, trotters, or entrails of animals. Similarly, *arme Ruler* is the name of a common Saturday dish in Germany, and "bubble-and-squeak" is an analogous formation.

family consisted of a housekeeper somewhat above forty, a niece not quite twenty, and a lad for the field and the market, who both supplied the horses and handled the pruning hook. The age of our gentleman bordered upon fifty years. He was of a robust constitution, spare-bodied, of a meagre visage, a very early riser, and a keen sportsman. It is said his surname was Quixada, or Quixada (for on this there is some difference among the authors who have written upon this subject), though by probable conjectures it may be gathered that he was called Quixana. But this is of little importance to our story, let it suffice that in relating we do not swerve a jot from the truth.

You must know then, that this gentleman aforesaid, at times when he was idle, which was most part of the year, gave himself up to the reading of books of chivalry, with so much attachment and relish, that he almost forgot all the sports of the field, and even the management of his domestic affairs; and his curiosity and extravagant fondness herein arrived to that pitch, that he sold many acres of arable land to purchase books of knight-errantry, and carried home all he could lay hands on of that kind. But, among them all, none pleased him so much as those composed by the famous Feliciano de Silva: for the *glaziness* of his prose, and the *intricacy* of his style, seemed to him so many pearls; and especially when he came to peruse those love-speeches and challenges, wherein in several places he found written: 'The reason of the unreasonable treatment of my reason enfeebles my reason in such wise, that with reason I complain of your beauty'; and also when he read—'The high heavens that with your divinity divinely fortify you with the stars, making you meri-

¹ This quotation from Feliciano de Silva's *Don Florido de Niquea* (Valladolid, 1532) had been previously ridiculed in the *Carta del Bachiller de Arcadia al Capitan Salazar*, ascribed to Diego Hurtado de Mendoza, and printed by Sr. D. Antonio Paz y Melia in *Salas Españolas* (Madrid, 1900), part 1.

torious of the merit merited by your greatness.' With this kind of language the poor gentleman lost his wits, and distracted himself to comprehend and unravel their meaning, which was more than Aristotle himself could do, were he to rise again from the dead for that purpose alone. He had some doubts as to the dreadful wounds which Don Belianis gave and received; for he imagined, that notwithstanding the most expert surgeons had cured him, his face and whole body must still be full of scars and scars. Nevertheless he commended in his author the concluding his book with a promise of that unfirmable adventure: and he often had it in his thoughts to take pen in hand, and finish it himself, precisely as it is there promised: which he had certainly performed, and successfully too, if other greater and continual cogitations had not diverted him.

He had frequent disputes with the priest of his village (who was a learned person, and had taken his degree in Sigüenza¹) which of the two was the better knight, Palmerin of England, or Amadís de Gaul. But master Nicholas, barber-surgeon of the same town, affirmed, that none ever came up to the Knight of the Sun, and that if any one could be compared to him, it was Don Galaor, brother of Amadís de Gaul; for he was of a disposition fit for everything, no epical gentleman, nor such a whumperer as his brother; and as to courage, he was by no means inferior to him. In short, he so bewildered himself in this kind of study, that he passed the nights in reading from sunset to sunrise, and the days from sunrise to sunset: and thus, through little sleep and much reading, his brain was dried up in such a manner, that he came at last to lose his wits. His imagination was full of all that he read in his books,

¹ The passage is from Antonio de Torquemada's *Don Quijote de La Mancha* (Barcelona, 1584).

² The degrees granted by such minor universities as those of Sigüenza and Osuna were a favourite subject of ridicule in Spain: see Part II, Chapter xlv.

to wit, enchantments, battles, single combats, challenges, wounds, courtships, amours, tempests, and impossible absurdities. And so firmly was he persuaded that the whole system of chimeras he read of was true, that he thought no history in the world was more to be depended upon. The Cid Roy Diaz, he was wont to say, was a very good knight, but not comparable to the Knight of the Burning Sword, who with a single back-stroke cleft asunder two fierce and monstrous giants. He was better pleased with Bernardo del Carpio for putting Orlando the Enchanted to death in Roncesvalles, by means of the same stratagem which Hercules used, when he suffocated Anteus, son of the Earth, by squeezing him between his arms.¹ He spoke mightily well of the giant Morgante; for, though he was of that monstrous brood who are always proud and insolent, he alone was affable and well-bred: but, above all, he was charmed with Reynaltes de Montalvan, especially when he saw him sallying out of his castle and plundering all he met; and when abroad he seized that image of Mahomet, which was all of massive gold, as his history records. He would have given his housekeeper, and niece to boot, for a fair opportunity of handsomely kicking the traitor Galalon.²

In fine, having quite lost his wits, he fell into one of the strangest conceits that ever entered the head of any madman; which was, that he thought it expedient and necessary, as well for the advancement of his own reputation, as for the public good, that he should commence knight-errant, and wander through the world, with his horse and arms, in

¹ This version of Bernardo del Carpio's scottish exploits occurs in Nicolas de Espinosa's *Segunda Parte de Orlando* (Saragossa, 1555). Cervantes himself dramatized Bernardo's story with indifferent success in *La Casa de los Celos y Selvas de Ardenas*.

² The Spanish form of Ganelon, the worst of the trio of traitors in the Charlemagne cycle. The others are Raimon and Guard de Fratta.

quest of adventures, and to put in practice whatever he had read to have been practised by knights-errant; redressing all kind of grievances, and exposing himself to danger on all occasions, that by accomplishing such enterprises he might acquire eternal fame and renown. The poor gentleman already imagined himself at least crowned Emperor of Trapaonda¹ by the valour of his arm, and thus wrapped up in these agreeable delusions, and hurried on by the strange pleasure he took in them, he hastened to put in execution what he so much desired.

And the first thing he did was, to scour up a suit of armour, which had been his great-great-grand father's, and, being mouldy and rust-eaten, had lain by, many long years, forgotten in a corner. There he cleaned and furnished up the best he could, but he perceived they had one grand defect, which was, that, instead of a helmet, they had only a simple morion, or steel cap; but he dexterously supplied this want by contriving a sort of visor of pasteboard, which, being fixed to the head piece, gave it the appearance of a complete helmet. It is true, indeed, that, to try its strength, and whether it was proof against a cut, he drew his sword, and giving it two strokes, undid in an instant what he had been a week in doing. But not altogether approving of his having broken it to pieces with so much ease, to secure himself from the like danger for the future, he made it over again, fencing it with small bars of iron within, in such a manner, that he rested satisfied of its strength, and without caring to make a fresh experiment on it, he approved and looked upon it as a most excellent helmet.

The next thing he did was to trim his steed; and though his horse stuck out like the corners of a reel, and he had more faults than Gonsalvo's² horse, which *tenem pello a uno fūd.*³ he fancied that member

¹ The Spanish form of Trebizond.

² Gonsalvo was a jester at the court of Florence during the latter half of the fifteenth century.

³ *Plautus, Aulularia, in. 2.*

DON QUIXOTE

Alexander's *Encephalus*, nor [the] *Cat's Balm*, was equal to him. Four days was he considering what name to give him, for (as he said within himself) it was not fit that a horse so good, and appertaining to a knight so famous, should be without some name of eminence, and therefore he stodd to accommodate him with one, which should express what he had been before he belonged to a knight-errant, and what he actually now was, for it seemed highly reasonable, if his master changed his state, he likewise should change his name, and acquire one famous and high sounding, as became the new order, and the new way of life he now professed. And so, after sundry names derived and rejected, liked and disliked again, he concluded at last to call him *Roquante*¹; a name, in his opinion, lofty and sonorous, and at the same time expressive of what he had been when he was but a common steed, and before he had acquired his present superiority over all the steeds in the world.

Having given his horse a name so much to his satisfaction, he resolved to give himself one. This consideration took him up eight days more, and at length he determined to call himself *Don Quixote*², from whence, as is said, the authors of this most true history conclude, that his name was certainly *Quixada*, and not *Quezada*, as others would have it. But recollecting that the valorous *Amadis*, not content with the simple appellation of *Amadis*, added thereto the name of his kingdom and native country in order to render it famous, and styled himself *Amadis de Gaul*; so he, like a good knight did in like manner call himself *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, whereby, his opinion, he set forth in a very lively manner his lineage and country, and did it due honour by taking his surname from thence.

¹ From *rocin* = a drudge-horse, and *ante* = before: best of steeds

² *Quixote* = cumb, the piece of armour which protects the thigh. Smollett borrows the idea in the title of *Launcelot Greaves*.

And now, his armour being furnished up, the morion converted into a perfect helmet, and both his steed and himself new-armed, he persuaded himself that he wanted nothing but to make choice of some lady to be in love with; for a knight errant without a mistress, was a tree without leaves or fruit, and a body without a soul. If, said he, for the punishment of my sins, or through my good fortune, I should chancé to meet some giant, as is usual with knights-errant, and should overthrow him in fight, or cleave him saunder, or in fine vanquish and force him to yield, will it not be proper to have some lady to send him to as a present, that, when he comes before her, he may kneel to her sweet ladyship, and with humble and submissive tone, account her thus: 'Madam, I am the Giant Caraculambo, lord of the island [of] Maludruma, whom the never-enough-to-be-praised Don Quixote de la Mancha has overcome in single combat, and has commanded to present myself before your ladyship, that your grandfather may dispose of me as you think proper.' Oh! how did our good gentleman exult when he had made this harangue, and especially when he had found out a person on whom to confer the title of his mistress; which, it is believed, happened thus. Near the place where he lived, there dwelt a very rustic country lass, with whom he had formerly been in love, though, as it is supposed, she never knew it, nor troubled herself about it. Her name was Aldonza Lorenzo, and her he pitched upon to be the lady of his thoughts; then, casting about for a name, which should have some affinity with her own, and yet incline towards that of a great lady or princess, he resolved to call her Dulcinea 'del Toboso' (for she was born at that place), a name, to his thinking, harmonious, uncommon, and significant, like the rest he had desired for himself, and for all that belonged to him.

¹ Suppressed by Dalkino and Dulcinea, a shepherd and shepherdess who appear in Antonio de Lema's *Fuente de Amor*, lib. vi: see note to Chapter vi, p. 81.

CHAPTER II

Which treats of the first sally the ingenious Don Quixote made from his Village

Now, these dispositions being made, he would no longer defer putting his design in execution, being the more strongly excited thereto by the mischief he thought his delay occasioned by the mischief he and so many were the grievances he proposed to redress, the wrongs he intended to rectify, the exorbitances to correct, the abuses to reform, and the debts to discharge. And therefore, without making any one privy to his design, or being seen by anybody, one morning before day (which was one of the hottest of the month of July) he armed himself cap-a-pie, mounted Rosinante, adjusted his ill composed leather, braced on his target, grasped his lance, and issued forth into the fields at a private door of his back yard, with the greatest satisfaction and joy, to find with how much ease he had given a beginning to his honourable enterprise. But scarcely was he got into the plain, when a terrible thought assaulted him, and such as had well nigh made him abandon his new undertaking, for it came into his remembrance, that he was not dubbed a knight, and that according to the laws of chivalry, he neither could nor ought to enter the lists against any knight: and though he had been dubbed, still he must wear white armour as a new knight, without any device on his shield, until he had acquired one by his prowess. These reflections staggered his resolution; but his prevailing sense over any reason whatever, he purposed to get himself knighted by the first person he should meet, in imitation of many others who had done like, as he had read in the books which had occasioned his madness. As to the white armour, he proposed

to scout his own, the first opportunity, in such sort that it should be whiter than ermine: and betwixt quieting his mind, he went on his way, following no other road than what his horse pleased to take, believing that therein consisted the life and spirit of adventures.

Thus our flaming adventurer pressed on, talking to himself, and saying: 'Who doubts, but that, in future times, when the faithful history of my famous exploits shall come to light, the sage who writes them, when he gives a relation of this my first rally, so early in the morning, will do it in words like these: 'Scarcely had the ruddy Phoebus spread the golden tresses of his beauteous hair over the face of the white and spacious earth, and scarcely had the painted birds, with the sweet and mellifluous harmony of their forked tongues, saluted the approach of rosy Aurora, who, quitting the soft couch of her jealous husband, disclosed herself to mortals through the gate and balconies of the Manchegan horizon; when the renowned Don Quixote de la Mancha, abandoning the lary down, mounted his famous courser Rosinante, and began to travel through the ancient and noted field of Montiel'' (and true it is, that was the very field), and passing along it, he continued saying: 'Happy times, and happy age, in which my famous exploits shall come to light, worthy to be engraved in brass, carved in marble, and drawn in picture, for a monument to all posterity! O thou sage enchanter' whoever thou art, to whose lot it shall fall to be the chronicler of this wonderful history, I beseech thee not to forget my good Rosinante, the inseparable companion of all my travels and excursions. Then on a sudden, as one really enamoured, he went on saying,—O princess Dulcinea! mistress of this captive heart, great injury hast thou done me in discarding and

' 'Noted' in tradition as the spot where Peter the Cruel was defeated in 1369 by his bastard half-brother Henry of Trastámara, and Bertrand du Guesclin.

little distance from it, he checked Rouseante by the bridle, expecting some dwarf to appear on the battlements, and give notice, by sound of trumpet, of the arrival of a knight at the castle. But finding they delayed, and that Rouseante pressed to get to the stable, he drew near to the inn door, and saw there the two strolling wenches, who seemed to him to be two beautiful damsels, or graceful ladies, who were taking their pleasure at the castle-gate.

It happened that a swineherd, getting together his hogs (for, without begging pardon, so they are called) from the stubble field, winding his horn, at which signal they are wont to assemble, and at that instant Don Quixote's imagination represented to him what he wished, namely that some dwarf gave the signal of his arrival, and therefore, with wondrous content, he came up to the inn, and to the ladies, who perceiving a man armed in that manner with lance and buckler, were frightened, and began to run into the house. But Don Quixote, guessing at their fear by their flight, lifted up his pasteboard visor, and discovering his withered and dusty visage, with courteous demeanour and grave voice thus accosted them. Fly not, ladies, nor fear any discourtesy, for the order of knighthood, which I profess, permits me not to offer injury to any one, much less to virgins of such high rank as your presence denotes. The wenches stared at him, and with all the eyes they had, were looking to find his face, which the scurry beaver almost covered. But when they heard themselves styled virgins, a thing so out of the way of their profession, they could not contain their laughter, and that in so violent a manner, that Don Quixote began to grow angry, and said to them: Modesty well becomes the fair, and nothing is so foolish as excessive laughter proceeding from a slight occasion: but I do not say this to disguise you, or to cause you to discover any ill disposition towards me; for mine is no other than to do you service. This language, which they did not understand, and the uncouth mien of our knight,

increased their laughter, and his wrath, and things would have gone much farther, had not the innkeeper come out at that instant (a man, who, by being very bulky, was inclined to be very generous, who, beholding such an odd figure all in armour, the pieces of which were so ill sorted, as were the helms, lance, buckler, and sword, could scarcely forbear keeping the clowns company in the demonstrations of their mirth). It, being in some fear of a payment equipped in so warlike a manner, he resolved to speak him fair, and therefore accented him thus: 'If your worship, Señor Cavalier, is in quest of a lodging, being a bed (for in this inn there is none to be had, everything else will be found here in great abundance. Don Quixote, perceiving the humility of the governor of the fortress (for such to him appeared the innkeeper and the inn) answered, 'Anything will serve me, Señor Castellano, for 'arms are my ornaments, and fighting my repose'. The host thought he called him Castellano because he took him for an honest Castilian', whereas he was an Andalusian, and of the coast of San Lúcar, as arrant a thief as Carus, and as sharp and unlucky as a collegian or a court-page; and therefore he replied: 'If it be so, your worship's beds are hard rocks, and your sleep the being always awake'; and since it is so, you may venture to slight, being sure of finding in this poor but sufficient cause for not sleeping a whole twelvemonth, much more one single night. And so saying, he went and held Don Quixote's stirrup, who alighted with much difficulty and pains; for he had

¹ *Castellano* means Castellan, as well as Castilian.

² Don Quixote leads off with a verse from a ballad.—

Mis arcos son las armas—no descanso el pelear—
and the innkeeper continues the quotation:—

Mi cama las duras peñas—mi dormir siempre velar.
These lines occur towards the end of the ancient and celebrated *Juanesca* ballad; but their tone of courtly gallantry is in itself a proof that they are a late interpolation.

not broke his fast all that day. He presently requested of the host to take especial care of his steed, for he was the best piece of horseflesh that ever ate bread in the world. The innkeeper viewed him, but did not think him so good as Don Quixote represented him to be, no, not by half; and having set him up in the stable, he returned to see what his guest would be pleased to order; whom the damsels were unarming (for they were already reconciled to him), and though they had taken off the back and breast-piece, they could not find out how to unlace his gorget, or take off the counterfeit beaver, which he had fastened in such a manner with green ribbons, that, there being no possibility of untying them, they must of necessity be cut, which he would by no means consent to, and so he remained all that night with his helmet on, and was the strangest and most ridiculous figure imaginable.

Whilst the girls were taking off his armour, unarming them to be persons of the first quality, and ladies of that castle, he said to them with great gaiety: 'Never sure was knight so nobly served by ladies as was Don Quixote after his departure from his village: damsels waited on his person, and princesses on his steed'. 'O Rosinante! for that, dear ladies, is my horse's name, and Don Quixote de la Mancha is my own; for though I was not willing to discover myself, until the exploits done for your service and benefit should discover me, the necessity of accommodating the old romance of Sir Lancelot to our present purpose has been the occasion of your knowing my name before the proper season: but the time will come, when your ladyships may command and I obey; and the valour of my arm shall manifest the desire I have to serve you. The ladies, who were not accustomed to such rhetorical flourishes, answered not a word, but only asked whether

¹ An adaptation of a ballad on Lancelot, the subject of which recalls the episode of *Mélégant* in Chrétien de Troyes' *Chevalier de la Charrette*. It is one of the very few old Spanish ballads in the Breton cycle.

with success. But what gave him the most disturbance was, that he was not yet dubbed a knight: thinking he could not lawfully undertake any adventure until he had first received the order of knighthood.

CHAPTER IV.

In which is related the pleasant method Don Quixote took to be dubbed a knight.

AND now, being disturbed with this thought, he made an abrupt end of his short supper, which done, he called the landlord, and, shutting himself up with him in the stable, he fell upon his knees before him, and said: I will never rise from this place, valorous knight, until your courtesy vouchsafes me a boon I mean to beg of you: which will redound to your own honour, and to the benefit of human kind. The host, seeing his guest at his feet, and hearing such expressions, stood confounded, gazing at him, and not knowing what to do or say: he then strove to raise him from the ground, but in vain, until he had promised to grant him the boon he requested. I expected no less, Sir, from your great magnificence, answered Don Quixote: and therefore know, that the boon I would request, and has been vouchsafed me by your liberality, is, that you shall to-morrow dub me a knight, and this night in the chapel of your castle I will watch my armour: and to-morrow, as I have said, what I so earnestly desire shall be accomplished, that I may be duly qualified to wander through the four quarters of the world, in quest of adventures, for the relief of the distressed, as is the duty of chivalry, and of knights-errant, whose hearts, like mine, are strongly bent on such achievements.

The host who (as we have said) was an arch fellow, and had already entertained some suspicions of the madness of his guest, was now, at hearing such ex-

of it together, laid them upon a cistern that stood close to a well: and bearing on his buckler, and grasping his lance, with a solemn face he began to walk backward and forward before the cistern, beginning his parade just as the day shut in.

The host acquainted all that were on the inn with the fitness of his guest, the watching of his armour, and the knighting he expected. They all wondered at so odd a kind of madness, and went out to observe him at a distance, and they perceived, that with a composed air he sometimes continued his walk: at other times, leaning upon his lance, he looked wistfully at his armour, without taking off his eyes for a long time together. It was now quite night; but the moon shone with such a lustre as might almost vie with him who lent it, so that whatever our new knight did was distinctly seen by all the spectators.

While he was thus employed, one of the carriers, who stood there, had a mind to water his mules, and it was necessary first to remove Don Quixote's armour from off the cistern: who, seeing him approach, called to him with a loud voice: Ho, there, whoever thou art, rash knight, that approachest to touch the arms of the most valorous adventurer that ever guded sword, take heed what thou doest, and touch them not, unless thou wouldst leave thy life a forfeit for thy twenty. The carrier troubled not his head with these speeches (but it had been better for him if he had, for he might have saved his carcass) but, instead of that, taking hold of the straps, he tossed the armour a good distance from him, which Don Quixote perceiving, he lifted up his eyes to heaven, and fixing his thoughts (as it seemed) on his mistress Dulcinea, he said: Assist me, dear lady, in this first affront offered to this breast enthralled to thee: let not thy favour and protection fail me in this first moment of danger. And uttering these and the like ejaculations, he let slip his target, and lifting up his lance with both hands, gave the carrier such a blow on the head, that he laid him flat on the ground in such pitious

plight, that, had he seconded his blow, there would have been no need of a surgeon. Thus done, he gathered up his armour and walked backward and forward with the same gravity as at first.

Soon after, another carrier, not knowing what had happened (for still the first lay stunned) came out with the same intention of watering his mules: and as he was going to clear the cistern by removing the armour, Don Quixote, without speaking a word, or imploring anybody's protection, again let slip his target, and lifting up his lance, broke the second carrier's head in three or four places. All the people of the inn ran together at the noise, and the innkeeper among the rest: which Don Quixote perceiving, he braced on his target, and laying his hand on his sword, he said: O queen of beauty, the strength and vigour of my enfeebled heart, now is the time to turn the eyes of thy creatures toward this thy captured knight, whom so prodigious an adventure at this instant awaits. Hereby in his opinion, he recovered so much courage, that, if all the carriers in the world had attacked him, he would not have retreated an inch. The comrades of those that were wounded (for they perceived them in that condition) began to let fly a shower of stones at Don Quixote: who sheltered himself the best he could under his shield, and durst not stir from the cistern, lest he should seem to abandon his armour. The host cried out to them to let him alone, for he had already told them he was mad, and that he would be acquitted as a madman though he should kill them all. Then Quixote also cried out louder, calling them cowards and traitors, and the lord of the castle a poltroon and a base-born knight, for suffering knights-errant to be treated in that manner; and that, if he had received the order of knighthood, he would make him smart for his treachery: but for you, rascally and base scoundrels (said he) I do not value you a straw: draw near, come on, and do your worst: you shall quickly see the reward you are likely to receive of your folly and insolence. This he uttered with so much

vehemence and resolution, that he struck a terrible dread into the hearts of the assailants; and for this reason, together with the landlord's persuasions, they forbore throwing any more stones; and he permitted the wounded to be carried off, and returned to the watch of his armour with the same tranquillity and sedateness as before.

The host did not relish these pranks of his guest, and therefore determined to put an end to them by giving him the unlucky order of knighthood out of hand before any further mischief should ensue; and so coming up to him, he begged pardon for the rudeness those vulgar people had been guilty of, without his knowing anything of the matter; however, he said, they had been sufficiently chastised for their rashness. He repeated to him, that there was no chapel in that castle, neither was it necessary for what remained to be done; for the whole stress of being dubbed a knight, lay in the blows on the neck and shoulders, as he had learned from the ceremonial of the order; and that it might be effectually performed in the middle of a field; that he had already discharged all that belonged to the watching of the armour, which was sufficiently performed in two hours; and much more, since he had been above four about it. All which Don Quixote believed, and said he was there ready to obey him; and desired him to finish the business with the utmost despatch, because, if he should be assaulted again, and found himself dubbed a knight, he was resolved not to leave a soul alive in the castle, except those he should command him to spare for his sake. The constable, thus warned, and apprehensive of what might be the event of this resolution, presently brought the book, in which he entered the account of the straw and barley he furnished to the carriers; and with the two abovesaid damuels (a boy carrying an end of candle before them) he came where Don Quixote was, whom he commanded to kneel; and reading in his manual (as if he had been saying some devout prayer), in the midst of the reading he

Lifted up his hand, and gave him a good blow on the nape of the neck, and after that with his own sword a handsome thwack on the shoulder, still muttering between his teeth as if he was praying. This done, he ordered one of the ladies to gird on his sword, which she did with the most obliging freedom, and discretion too, of which not a little was needful to keep them from bursting with laughter at every period of the ceremonies: but indeed the exploits they had already seen our new knight perform, kept their mirth within bounds. At girding on the sword, the good lady said: God make you a fortunate knight, and give you success in battle. Don Quixote asked her name that he might know from thenceforward to whom he was indebted for the favour received: for he intended her a share of the honour he should acquire by the valour of his arm. She replied with much humility, that she was called La Tolosa, and was a cobbler's daughter of Toledo, who lived at the little shops of *Sanchobienaysa*¹; and wherever she was, she would serve and honour him as her lord. Don Quixote then desired her, for his sake, thenceforward to add to her name the Don, and to call herself Doña Tolosa; which she promised to do. The other buckled on his spurs; with whom he held almost the same kind of dialogue as he had done with her companion: he asked her name also, and she said she was called La Molinera, and was the daughter of an honest miller of Antequera. Don Quixote entreated her also to add the Don, and call herself Doña Molinera, making her fresh offers of service and thanks.

Thus the never-till-then-seen ceremonies being hastily dispatched, Don Quixote, who was impatient to see himself on horseback, and sailing out in quest of adventures, immediately saddled Rosinante, and embracing his host, mounted; and at parting said such strange things to him, acknowledging the favour

¹ A square, lined with shops mostly kept by *Neracos*, near the hospital at Toledo.

of dubbing him a knight, that it is impossible to express them. The host, to get him sooner out of the inn, returned his compliments with no less flourish, though in fewer words, and, without demanding anything for his lodging, wished him a good journey.

CHAPTER IV

Of what befall our knight after he had sallied out from the inn.

It was about break of day, when Don Quixote issued forth from the inn, so satisfied, so gay, so blithe, to see himself knighted, that the joy thereof almost burst his horse's girths. But recollecting the advice of his host concerning the necessary provisions for his undertaking, especially the articles of money and clean shirts, he resolved to return home, and furnish himself accordingly, and also provide himself with a squire; purposing to take into his service a certain country-fellow of the neighbourhood, who was poor, and had children, yet was very fit for the squirely office of chivalry. With this thought, he turned Rosinante towards his village; who, as it were, knowing what his master would be at, began to put on with so much alacrity, that he hardly seemed to set his feet on the ground. He had not gone far, when, on his right hand, from a thicket hard by, he fancied he heard a weak voice, as of a person complaining. And scarcely had he heard it, when he said: I thank heaven for the favour it does me, in laying before me so early an opportunity of complying with the duty of my profession, and of reaping the fruit of my honourable desires. These are doubtless the cries of some distressed person, who stands in need of my protection and assistance. And turning thence, he put Rosinante forward toward the place

from whence he thought the voice proceeded. And he had entered but a few paces into the wood, when he saw a mare tied to an oak, and a lad to another, naked from the waist upwards, about fifteen years of age, who was that person that cried out; and not without cause, for a lusty country-fellow was laying him on very severely with a belt, and accompanied every lash with a reprimand and a word of advice; for, said he, The tongue slow, and the eyes quick. The boy answered, I will do so no more, dear Sir; by the passion of God, I will never do so again; and I promise for the future to take more care of the flock.

Now Don Quixote, seeing what passed, said in an angry tone: Discourteous knight, it ill becomes thee to meddle with one who is not able to defend himself; get upon thy horse, and take thy lance (for he had also a lance leaning against the oak to which the mare was fastened), for I'll make thee to know that it is cowardly to do what thou art doing. The countryman, seeing such a figure coming towards him, armed from head to foot, and brandishing his lance at his face, gave himself up for a dead man, and with good words answered: Señor Cavalier, this lad whom I am chastising, is a servant of mine; I employ him to tend a flock of sheep which I have hereabouts, and he is so careless, that I lose one every day; and because I correct him for his negligence, or roguery, he says I do it out of covetousness, and for an excuse not to pay him his wages; but, before God, and on my conscience he lies. Lies in my presence! pitiful rascal, said Don Quixote; by the sun that shines upon us, I have a good mind to run thee through and through with this lance: pay him immediately without further reply; if not, by that God that rules us, I will dispatch and annihilate thee in a moment; untie him presently. The countryman hung down his head, and, without replying a word, untied the boy. Don Quixote asked the lad, how much his master owed him; who answered, nine months' wages, at seven

find out the valorous Don Quixote de la Mancha, and tell him all that had passed, and that he should pay for it sevenfold. Notwithstanding all this, away he went weeping, and his master stayed behind laughing.

In this manner the valorous Don Quixote redressed this wrong: and overjoyed at his success, as thinking he had given a most fortunate and glorious beginning to his knight-errantry, he went on toward his village, entirely satisfied with himself, and saying in a low voice: Well mayest thou deem thyself happy above all women living on the earth, O Dulcinea del Toboso, beautiful above the most beautiful, since it has been thy lot to have subject and obedient to thy whole will and pleasure so valiant and renowned a knight as is, and ever shall be, Don Quixote de la Mancha; who (as all the world knows) received but yesterday the order of knighthood, and to-day has redressed the greatest injury and grievance that injustice could invent and cruelty commit: to-day hath he wrested the scourge out of the hand of that pitiless enemy, who so undeservedly lashed that tender stripling.

Just as he had done speaking, he came to the centre of four roads, and presently it came into his imagination, that the knights-errant, when they came to these cross-ways, set themselves to consider which of the roads they should take: and, to imitate them, he stood still awhile, and at last, after mature consideration, he let go the reins, submitting his own will to be guided by that of his horse, who following his first motion, took the direct road toward his stable. And having gone about two miles, Don Quixote discovered a company of people, who, as it afterwards appeared, were certain merchants of Toledo, going to buy silks to Murcia. There were six of them, and they came with their umbrellas, and four servants on horseback, and three muleteers on foot. Scarcely had Don Quixote espied them, when he imagined it must be some new adventure; and, to imitate, as near as possibly he

could, the passages¹ he had read (of) in his books, he fancied this to be cut out on purpose for him to achieve. And so, with a graceful deportment and intrepidity, he settled himself firm on his stirrups, grasped his lance, covered his breast with his target, and posting himself in the midst of the highway, stood waiting the coming up of those knights-errant; for such he already judged them to be: and when they were come so near as to be seen and heard, Don Quixote raised his voice, and with an arrogant air, cried out: Let the whole world stand, if the whole world does not confess, that there is not in the whole world a damsel more beautiful than the empress of la Mancha, the peerless Dulcinea del Toboso. The merchants stopped at the sound of these words, and to behold the strange figure of him who pronounced them, and by one and the other they soon perceived the madness of the speaker: but they had a mind to stay and see what that confession meant, which he required of them: and one of them, who was somewhat of a wag, but withal very discreet, said to him: Señor Cavalier, we do not know who this good lady you mention may be: let us but see her, and, if she is of so great beauty as you intimate, we will, with all our hearts, and without any constraint, confess that truth you demand from us. Should I show her to you, replied Don Quixote, where would be the merit in confessing a truth so notorious; the business is, that, without seeing her, you believe, confess, affirm, swear, and maintain it; and if not, I challenge you all to battle, proud and monstrous as you are: and whether you come on one by one (as the laws of chivalry require) or altogether, as is the custom and wicked practice of those of your stamp, here I wait for you, confiding in the justice

¹ 'Passages' here means passages of arms such as that recorded by Pedro Rodriguez de Lena in *El Paso Anchoa* of Siero de Quintero, who, with nine other knights, held the bridge of St. Mark at Orbigo against all comers from July 10 to August 9 in the year 1434. I have accordingly supplied the word 'of' in the text.

on his ribs ; and, coming to him, he took the lance, and, after he had broken it to pieces, with one of the splinters he so belaboured Don Quixote, that in spite of his armour, he threshed him to chaff. His masters cried out, not to beat him so much, and to leave him ; but the muleteer was provoked, and would not quit the game until he had quite spent the remainder of his choler ; and running for the other pieces of the lance, he finished the breaking of them upon the poor fallen knight, who, notwithstanding the tempest of blows that rained upon him, never shut his mouth, threatening heaven and earth, and those assassins, for such they seemed to him. At length the fellow was tired, and the merchants went on their way, sufficiently furnished with matter of discourse concerning the poor belaboured knight ; who, when he found himself alone, tried again to raise himself ; but if he could not do it when whole and well, how should he when bruised and almost battered to pieces ? yet still he thought himself a happy man, looking upon this as a misfortune peculiar to knights-errant, and imputing the whole to his horse's fault ; nor was it possible for him to raise himself up, his whole body was so horrible bruised.

CHAPTER V

Whereto is continued the narration of our knight's misfortune.

BUT finding that he was really not able to stir, he bethought himself of having recourse to his usual remedy, which was to recollect some passage of his books ; and his frenzy instantly presented to his remembrance that of *Valdovinos*¹ and the Marquess

¹ The Spanish form of Baldwin or Baudoin, brother of Roland, in Jehan Bodel's *Chanson des Saisnes*. But Cervantes refers to Ogier's natural son Baudouinet, who, in *Ogier le Danois* and the Italian *Libro del danese*, is killed by Charlemagne's son Charlot.

of Mantua¹, when *Lascelles* left him wounded on the mountain, a story known to children, not unknown to youth, commemorated and credited by old men, and for all that no truer than the miracles of Mahomet. Now this example seemed to him as if it had been cut in a mould to fit the distress he was in: and so, with signs of great bodily pain, he began to roll himself on the ground, and said with a lute tone, what was said by the wounded knight of the sword:

Where art thou, mistress of my heart,
 I'nnamorous of thy lover's smart?
 Ah me! thou know'st not my distress,
 For thou art false and falsest person.

And in this manner he went on with the romance until he came to those verses where it is said: 'O noble Marquess of Mantua, my uncle and lord by blood.'² And it so happened that, just as he came to that verse, there passed by a countryman of his own village, and his near neighbour, who had been carrying a load of wheat to the mill, who seeing a man lying stretched on the earth, came up and asked him who he was, and what ailed him, that he made such a doleful lamentation? Don Quixote believed he must certainly be the Marquess of Mantua his uncle, and so returned him no answer, but went on with his romance, giving an account of his misfortune, and of the amour of the emperor's son with his spouse, just in the same manner as it is there recounted. The peasant stood confounded at bearing such extravagances; and taking off his vizor which was beaten all to pieces, he wiped his face which was covered

¹ The Marquess (Urgel) is a Spanish re-cast of the character of Ogier le Danois, Mantua being substituted for La Marche.

² Quoted from a ballad beginning:—

De Mantua salió el marques—James Urgel el leal.
 The preceding quatrain comes from a later composition based on the ballad just quoted: the latter derives from Ogier le Danois.

with dust; and the moment he had done wiping it he knew him, and said, Ah! Señor Quixada (for so he was called before he had lost his senses, and was transformed from a sober gentleman to a knight-errant) how came your worship in this condition? but he answered out of his romance to whatever question he asked him.

The good man seeing this, made a shift to take off his back and breast-piece, to see if he had received any wound; but he saw no blood, nor sign of any hurt. Then he endeavoured to raise him from the ground, and with much ado set him upon his ass, as being the best of easiest carriage. He gathered together all the arms, not excepting the broken pieces of the lance, and tied them upon Rocinante; and so taking him by the bridle, and his ass by the halter, he went on toward his village, full of reflection at hearing the extravagances which Don Quixote uttered, and no less thoughtful was the knight who, through the mere force of bruises and bangs, could scarcely keep himself upon the ass, and ever and anon sent forth such groans as seemed to pierce the skies; inasmuch that the peasant was again forced to ask him what ailed him. And sure nothing but the devil himself could furnish his memory with stories so suited to what had befallen him; for at that instant, forgetting Valdivinos, he bethought himself of the Moor Abindarraez, at the time when the governor of Antequera, Rodrigo de Narvaez, had taken him prisoner, and conveyed him to his castle. So that when the peasant asked him again how he did, he answered him in the very same words and expressions in which the prisoner Abindarraez¹ answered Rodrigo de Narvaez, according

¹ The *Historia de Abindarraez y Xanfa* is inserted in posthumous editions of Montemayor's *Don Quixote*, and in the *Tercer tomo* (Matina del Campo, 1563) of Antonio de Villegas. It was in existence before 1551, when Villegas obtained his licence to print: Villegas probably plagiarised it from an anonymous writer. The ballad on the subject derives from the prose story.

was saying to them aloud: What is your opinion, Señor Licentiate Pero Perez (for that was the priest's name) of my master's misfortune? for neither he, nor his horse, nor the target, nor the lance, nor the armour have been seen these six days past. Woe is me! I am verily persuaded, and it is as certainly true as I was born to die, that these cursed books of knight-errantry which he keeps, and is so often reading, have turned his brain; and now I think of it, I have often heard him say, talking to himself, that he would turn knight-errant, and go about the world in quest of adventures. The devil and Barabbas take all such books, that have thus spoiled the finest understanding in all La Mancha. The niece joined with her, and said moreover: Know, master Nicholas (for that was the barber's name), that it has often happened, that my honoured uncle has continued poring on these confounded books of disadvantages two whole days and nights; and then throwing the book out of his hand, he would draw his sword, and fence back-stroke and fore-stroke, with the walls, and when he was heartily tired, would say, he had killed four giants as tall as so many steeples, and that the sweat, which ran from him, when weary, was the blood of the wounds he had received in the fight; and then he would presently drink off a large jug of cold water, and be as quiet and as well as ever, telling us that water was a most precious liquor brought him by the sage Esquife¹, a great enchanter, and his friend. But I take the blame of all this to myself, that I did not advertise you, gentlemen, of my dear uncle's extravagance, before they were come to the height they now are, that you might have prevented them by burning all those cursed books, of which he has so great a store, and which as justly deserve to be committed to the flames, as if they were heretical.

¹ *Esquife* = a skirt: Don Quixote's niece confuses this word with *Alquif*, the name of the wizard in *Amadis de Gaula*.

I say the same, quoth the priest, and in faith to-morrow shall not pass without holding a public inquisition against them, and condemning them to the fire, that they may no more minister occasion to those who read them, to do what I fear my good friend has done.

All this the peasant and Don Quixote overheard, and it confirmed the countryman in the belief of his neighbour's infirmity; and so he began to cry aloud: Open the doors, gentlemen, to Señor Valdivinos and the Marquess of Mantua, who comes dangerously wounded, and to Señor Abindarraza the Moor, whom the valorous Rodrigo de Narvaes, governor of Antequerra, brings as his prisoner. At hearing this they all came out; and as some knew their friend, and others their master and uncle, they all ran to embrace him, who was not yet slighted from the ass, for indeed he could not. Forbear all of you, he cried, for I am sorely wounded through my horse's fault: carry me to my bed, and if it be possible, send for the sage Ciriganda, to search and heal my wounds. Look ye, in the devil's name, said the housekeeper immediately, if my heart did not tell me right, on which leg my master halted. Get up stairs, in God's name; for, without the help of that same Ciriganda¹, we shall find a way to cure you ourselves. Cursed, say I again, and a hundred times cursed, be those looks of knight-errantry that have brought your worship to this pass. They carried him presently to his chamber, and searching for his wounds, they found none at all; and he told them he was only bruised by a great fall he got with his horse Rocinante, as he was fighting with ten of the most prodigious and audacious giants that were to be found on the earth. Ho, ho, says the priest, what! there are

¹ The housekeeper means Ciriganda, wife of Alquife, and not less potent than her husband in the art of magic. A recent Spanish commentator suggests that the mistake is wifit, and is intended to recall *burgomasters*, a person of loose morals.

giants too in the dance: by my faith, I shall set fire to them all before to-morrow night. They asked Don Quixote a thousand questions, and he would answer nothing, but only desired something to eat, and that they would let him sleep, which was what he stood most in need of. They did so, and the priest inquired particularly of the countryman in what condition he had found Don Quixote; who gave him an account of the whole, with the extravagances he had uttered, both at the time of finding him and all the way home; which increased the Licentiate's desire to do what he did the next day, which was to call on his friend, master Nicholas the barber, with whom he came to Don Quixote's house.

CHAPTER VI

Of the pleasant and grand scrutiny made by the priest and the barber in our ingenious gentleman's library.

WHILST Don Quixote still slept on, the priest asked the niece for the keys of the chamber where the books were, those authors of the mischief; and she delivered them with a very good will. They all went in, and the housekeeper with them. They found above a hundred volumes in folio, very well bound, besides a great many small ones. And no sooner did the housekeeper see them, than she ran out of the room in great haste, and immediately returned with a pot of holy water and a bunch of hyssop, and said: Señor Licentiate, take this and sprinkle the room, lest some enchanter, of the many these books abound with, should enchant us in revenge for what we intend to do, in banishing them out of the world. The priest smiled at the housekeeper's simplicity, and ordered the barber to reach him the books one by one, that they might see what they treated of; for, perhaps, they might find some that might not deserve to be chastised by fire. No, said the niece, there is no reason why any

of them should be spared; for they have all been mischief-makers: it will be best to fling them out of the window into the court-yard, and make a pile of them, and set fire to it, or else carry them into the back-yard, and there make a bonfire of them, and the smoke will offend nobody. The housekeeper said the same; so eagerly did they both thirst for the death of those innocents. But the priest would not agree to that, without first reading the titles at least.

The first that master Nicholas put into his hands, was *Amadis de Gaul*, in four parts¹, and the priest said: There seems to be some mystery in this: for, as I have heard say, this was the first book of chivalry printed in Spain, and all the rest have had their foundation and rise from it; and therefore I think, as head of so pernicious a sect, we ought to condemn him to the fire without mercy. Not so, Sir, said the barber; for I have heard also, that it is the best of all books of this kind; and therefore, as being singular in his art, he ought to be spared. It is true, said the priest, and for that reason his life is granted him for the present. Let us see that other that stands next him. It is, said the barber, the *Adventures of Esplandian*², the legitimate son of Amadis de Gaul. Verily, said

¹ A unique copy of the earliest known edition (Saragossa, 1508), is in the British Museum, but the romance was probably printed before this date. It is uncertain whether the first three books of *Amadis de Gaul* derive from a lost French original, or whether they were adapted from various French prose romances by a Portuguese or a Spaniard. The author of these three books, the language in which they were first written, and the date of their composition are unknown; the books were current in Spain (either in Portuguese or Spanish) about the middle of the fourteenth century. They owe their present form in Spanish to Garci Rodriguez de Montalvo, who added the fourth book. If any earlier Portuguese text ever existed, it has disappeared.

² *Las Sergas de Esplandian* (Seville, 1510), by Rodriguez de Montalvo, whose name is also given as Ordoñez de Montalvo and Gutierrez de Montalvo.

the priest, the goodness of the father shall avail the son nothing; take him, mistress housekeeper, open your casement, and throw him into the yard, and let him give a beginning to the pile for the intended bonfire. The housekeeper did so with much satisfaction, and honest Esplandian was sent flying into the yard, there to wait with patience for the fire with which he was threatened. Proceed, said the priest. The next, said the barber, is *Amedis of Greece*¹, ven, and all these on this side, I believe, are of the lineage of Amedis. Then into the yard with them all, quoth the priest; for rather than not burn queen Pinti-guinestra², and the shepherd Farnel³ with his eclogues, and the devilish intricate discourse of its author, I would burn the father who begot me, did I meet him in the garb of a knight-errant. Of the same opinion am I, said the barber; and I too, added the niece. Since it is so, said the housekeeper, away with them all into the yard. They handed them to her; and, there being great numbers of them, to save herself the trouble of the stairs, she threw them all, the shortest way, out of the window.

What fun of an author is that? said the priest. That is, answered the barber, *Don Quixote de La Mancha*. The author of that book, said the priest, was the same who composed *The Garden of Flowers*⁴; and in good truth I know not which of the two books is the truest, or rather the least lying; I can only say that this goes to the yard for its arrogance and absurdity. This that follows is *Flowermote of Hyrcania*⁵, said

¹ This book is said to have appeared anonymously in 1550; in later editions it is ascribed to Feliciano de Silva.

² Queen of Fobradusa.

³ A shepherd and wrestler of Alexandria, in love with Priamos Onokris's daughter, Silvia.

⁴ See the note to Chapter I, p. 11.

⁵ Antonio de Torquemada's *Jardín de flores raras* appeared at Salamanca in 1570.

⁶ By Melchor Ortega of Córdoba, as I published at Valladolid in 1554.

upon my head. I have him in Italian, said the barber, but I do not understand him. Neither is it any great matter whether you understand him or not, answered the priest; and we would willingly have excused the good captain¹ from bringing him into Spain, and making him a Castilian; for he has deprived him of a great deal of his native value: and this is the misfortune of all those who undertake to translate books of verse into other languages; for, with all their care and skill, they can never raise them to the pitch they were at in their first production. I pronounce, in short, that this, and all other books that shall be found treating of French matters, be thrown aside, and deposited in some dry vault, until we can determine with more deliberation what is to be done with them, excepting *Bernardo del Carpio*², and another called *Roncivallés*³, who, if they fall into my hands, shall pass into the housekeeper's, and thence into the fire, without any remission. The barber confirmed the sentence, and held it for good, and a matter well determined, knowing that the priest was so good a Christian, and so much a friend to truth, that he would not utter a falsehood for all the world.

And so opening another book, he saw it was *Palmerin de Oliva*⁴, and next it another called *Palmerin of*

¹ Captain Jeronimo Jimenez de Urrea, whose poor translation of Ariosto appeared at Antwerp in 1540, was also the author of *Don Claribel de las Flores y de Anstrera*, a romance of chivalry, which remained unpublished till 1878, when the first twenty-five chapters were issued at Seville by the Sociedad de Bibliófilos Andaluces.

² By Agustín Alonso of Salamanca, and published in 1583.

³ By Francisco Carrido de Villena of Valencia, and published in 1583.

⁴ Printed anonymously at Salamanca in 1511, and said to be the work of a woman residing at Augustobriga (which is variously identified as Burgos, Ciudad Rodrigo, Aldea el Moro, and Villar de Pedroso). The question is complicated by a statement made in the Introduction to

England¹, which the licentiate copying, said: Let this *Oliva* be torn to pieces and burnt, that not so much as the ashes remain; but let *Palmerin of England* be preserved, and kept, as a singular piece; and let such another case be made for it, as that which Alexander found among the spoils of Darius, and appropriated to preserve the works of the poet Homer. This book, gossip, is considerable upon two accounts; the one, that it is very good in itself; and the other, because there is a tradition that it was written by an ingenious king of Portugal. All the adventures of the Castle of Miraguarda are most excellent, and artificial; the dialogue courtly and clear; and the decorum preserved in all the characters with great judgement and propriety. Therefore, master Nicholas, saving your better judgement, let this and *Amodis de Gaul* be exempted from the fire, and let all the rest perish without any further inquiry. Not so, gossip, replied the barber; for this that I have here is the renowned *Don Belianus*². The priest replied: This, with the second, third, and fourth parts, wants a little rhubarb to purge away its excessive choler; besides, we must remove all that relates to the Castle of Fame, and other impertinences of greater consequence; wherefore let them have the benefit of transportation, and as they show signs of amendment, they shall be treated with mercy or justice; in the meantime, neighbour, give them room in your house; but let nobody read them. With all my heart, quoth the barber, and without tiring himself any further in turning over books of chivalry, he bid the housekeeper take all the great ones, and throw them into the yard. This was not spoken to one stupid or deaf, but to one who

Book II of *Primaleon* (Venice, 1531), by Francesco DeSado, who alleges that Augustorica was the writer's name, and that she was the daughter of a carpenter.

¹ Written in Portuguese, about 1544, by Francisco de Moraes Cabral, and translated into Spanish in 1547-1548.

² *Don Belianus de Orreia*, by Jerónimo Fernandez, first appeared at Burgos in 1547.

had a greater mind to be burning them than weaving the finest and largest web. And therefore, laying hold of seven or eight at once, she tossed them out at the window.

By her taking so much together, there fell one at the barber's feet, who had a mind to see what it was, and found it to be *The History of the renowned knight Tirante the White*¹. God save me! quoth the priest, with a loud voice, is *Tirante the White* there? Give me him here, neighbour, for I make account I have found in him a treasure of delight, and a mine of entertainment. Here we have Don Kyriacison of Montalvan, a valorous knight, and his brother Thomas of Montalvan, and the knight Fonteca, and the combat which the valiant *Tirante*² fought with [the] *Alano*³, and the smart conceits of the damsel Placerdemayda, with the amours and artifices of the widow Repocada; and madam the empress in love with her squire Hypolito. Verily, gossip, in its way, it is the best book in the world: here the knights eat and sleep, and die in their beds, and make their wills

¹ The *Llibre del valeros e strenu cavaller Tirant lo Blanch* (Valencia, 1490), was begun on January 2, 1460, by Johannot Martorell, who is believed to have written it in Portuguese, and to have translated it later into Catalan. Martorell died after finishing the third part; the translation of the fourth was executed by Marià Johan de Galba. A Spanish version of this famous Catalan book appeared at Valladolid in 1511.

Martorell professes to have translated from an English original, of which no trace has been found. He is thought, however, to have visited England in 1453, and perhaps then became acquainted with Guy of Warwick, mentioned in *Tirant lo Blanch* as 'Guillem de Varrochi'.

² The name was wrongly given as 'Delrante' in all editions of *Don Quixote* previous to John Bowle's (1781), and the misprint was reproduced by the translators. I have made the necessary correction in the text.

³ *Alano* is not, as the translator apparently thought, the name of a knight; it is the Spanish word for a mastiff.

The Salamancaian, answered the priest, may accompany and increase the number of the condemned, to the yard with him; but let that of *Gil Polo* be preserved, as if it were written by Apollo himself. Proceed, gossip, and let us dispatch, for it grows late.

Thus, said the barber, opening another, is the *Ten Books of the Fortune of Love*¹, composed by Antonio de Lohasso, a Sardinian poet. By the holy orders I have received, said the priest, since Apollo was Apollo, the muses muses, and the poets poets, so humorous and so whimsical a book as this was never written, it is the best and most singular of the kind that ever appeared in the world; and he who has not read it, may reckon that he never read anything of taste. Give it me here, gossip, for I value the finding it more than if I had been presented with a carcock of Florence satin. He laid it aside with exceeding pleasure, and the barber proceeded, saying: These that follow are *The Shepherd of Iberia*², *The Nymphs of Ilmaris*³, and *The Cures of Jealousy*⁴. There is no more to be done, said the priest, but to deliver them up to the secular arm of the housekeeper; and ask me not why, for then we should never have done. This that comes next is *The Shepherd of Fidia*⁵. He is no shepherd, said the priest, but an ingenious courtier; let him be preserved and laid up as a precious jewel. This bulky volume here, said the barber, is entitled *The Treasure*

¹ A nonsensical pastoral published at Barcelona in 1573; but it suggested the name of *Dokura*, and was reprinted at London in 1740 by Pedro de Pineda, who took Cervantes's Portuguese translation erroneously.

² By Fernando de la Vega, and published at Seville in 1591.

³ By Fernando Gonzalez de Echebilla, and published at Alcala de Henares in 1547.

⁴ By Bartolomé Lopez de Ercilla, and published at Madrid in 1544.

⁵ By Lou Calvez de Montalvo, with whom Cervantes seems to have been on very friendly terms: the book appeared at Madrid in 1582.

DON QUIXOTE

Divers Poems. Had they been fewer, replied the priest, they would have been more esteemed; it is necessary this book should be weeded and cleared of all the low things interspersed amongst its subtimities; let it be preserved, both as the author is my friend, and out of regard to other more heroic and exalted pieces of his writing. This, pursued the barber, is a *Book of Songs** by Lopez Maldonado. The author of this book, also, replied the priest, is a great friend of mine; his verses, sung by himself, raise admiration in the hearers; and such is the sweetness of his voice in singing them that they perfectly enchant. He is a little too prolix in his eclogues, but there can never be too much of what is really good. let it be kept with the select.

But what book is that next to it? The Citation of Michael de Cervantes, said the barber. That Cervantes has been a great friend of mine these many years, and I know that he is better acquainted with misfortunes than with poetry. His book has somewhat of great invention in it; he proposes something, but concludes nothing; we must wait for the second part, which he promises, perhaps, on his amendment, he may obtain that entire pardon which is now denied him. in the meantime, grasp, keep him a recluse in your chamber. With all my heart, answered the barber, and here came three together, *The Arcausa*† of Don Alonso de Ercilla, *The Austrada*‡ of John

- * By Pedro de Padilla, and published at Madrid in 1540.
- † Maldonado's *Canzonero* (Madrid, 1546) contains a lettering annex by Cervantes.
- ‡ The promised continuation of the *Citation* (Akala de Henares, 1543) never appeared.
- An eye piece published at Madrid in 1569, 1574, 1579. The author wrote the first part on scraps of old letters and bits of leather, while serving in the Chilian campaign against the Araucan.
- The sequel of *La Austrada* (Madrid, 1564, is separated from Diego Hurtado de Mendoza's *Guerras de Granada*, which was not published till 1627, more than

Rufo, a magistrate of Cordova; and *El Monerrate*¹ of Christoval de Vivera, a poet of Valencia. These three books, said the priest, are the best that are written in heroic verse in the Castilian tongue, and may stand in competition with the most famous of Italy; let them be preserved as the best performances in poetry Spain can boast of. The priest grew tired of looking over so many books, and so, made and contents unknown, he would have all the rest burnt. But the barber had already opened one called the *Tears of Anglica*.² I should have shed tears myself (said the priest, hearing the name), had I ordered that book to be burnt: for its author was one of the most famous poets, not of Spain only, but of the whole world, and translated some fables of Ovid with great success.

CHAPTER VII

Of the second sally of our good knight Don Quixote de la Mancha.

WHILE they were thus employed, Don Quixote began to call out aloud, saying: Here, here, valorous knights, here ye must exert the force of your valiant arms; for the courtiers begin to get the better of the

half a century after the author's death. It follows that Rufo must have read it in manuscript. Cervantes contributed a complimentary sonnet to *La Austrada*.

¹ The theme of *El Monerrate* (Madrid, 1583) was used long afterwards by Matthew Gregory Lewis in *The Monk* (1793).

² Luis Barahona de Soto published a continuation of Ariosto under the title of *Primera Parte de la Anglica* (Granada, 1588); *Las lágrimas de Anglica*, the alternative title given by Cervantes, occurs in the colophon. It was long thought that Barahona de Soto did not even begin the second part of his poem; but Sr. D. Francisco Rodriguez Marin has discovered some fragments of it embedded in the *Dialogos de la Monteria*.

tournament. This noise and outcry, to which they all ran, put a stop to all further scrutiny of the books that remained; and therefore it is believed, that to the fire, without being seen or heard, went *The Cordes*¹, and *Lion of Spain*², with *The Acts of the Emperor*, composed by Don Louis de Avila³, which, without doubt, must have been among those that were left; and perhaps had the priest seen them, they had not undergone so rigorous a sentence. When they came to Don Quixote, he was already got out of bed, and continued his outcries and ravings with his drawn sword, laying furiously about him, back-stroke, and fore-stroke, being as broad awake as if he had never been asleep. They closed in with him, and laid him upon his bed by main force; and after he was a little composed, turning himself to talk to the priest, he said: Certainly, my lord archbishop Turpin, it is a great disgrace to us, who call ourselves the twelve peers, to let the knights-courtiers carry off the victory without more opposition, after we, the adventurers, had gained the prize in the three preceding days. Say no more, good gossip, said the priest; it may be God's will to change our fortune, and what is lost to-day may be won to-morrow; mind your health for the present; for I think you must needs be extremely fatigued, if not sorely wounded. Wounded! no, said Don Quixote; but bruised and battered I am for certain; for that bastard, Don Roldan, has pounded me to mash with the trunk of

¹ A worthless poem by Hieronymo Sempere, published at Valencia in 1560.

² *El Leon de España* (Salamanca, 1586), a tedious poem in twenty-nine cantos by Pedro de la Vecilla Castellana.

³ A slip of the pen for Luis Zapata's *Carlos famoso* (Valencia, 1568), consisting of fifty interminable cantos. Luis de Avila y Zuñiga describes the campaign against the Lutherans in his prose *Comentarios de la Guerra de Alemania* (1548). Charles V is here represented in so favourable a light that he remarked after reading it:—
'My exploits cannot compare with Alexander's, but his historiographer cannot compare with mine'.

as oak, and all out of mere envy, because he sees that I am the sole rival of his prowess. But let me never more be called Reynaldo de Montalvan, if, as soon as I am able to rise from this bed, I do not make him pay dear for it, in spite of all his enchantments; but at present bring me some breakfast, for I know nothing will do me so much good, and let me alone to revenge myself. They did so; they gave him some victuals, and he fell fast asleep again, and left them in fresh admiration at his madness.

That night the housekeeper set fire to, and burnt, all the books that were in the yard, and in the house too; and some must have perished, that deserved to be treasured up in perpetual archives, but their fate, and the largeness of the scrutineer, would not permit it; and in them was fulfilled the saying, that 'the just sometimes suffer for the unjust'. One of the remedies which the priest and barber prescribed at that time for their friend's malady, was to alter his apartment, and wall up the room where the books had been, that when he got up he might not find them; in hopes that the cause being removed, the effect might cease, and that they should pretend that an enchanter had carried them away, room and all, which was presently done accordingly. Within two days after Don Quixote got up, and the first thing he did was to visit his books; and, not finding the room where he left it, he went up and down looking for it; he came to the place where the door used to be, and he felt with his hands, and stared about every way without speaking a word, but after some time he asked the housekeeper whereabouts the room stood where his books were. She, who was already well tutored what to answer, said to him: What room or what nothing, does your worship look for? there is neither room nor books in this house; for the devil himself has carried all away. It was not the devil, said the priest, but an enchanter, who came one night upon a cloud, after the day of your departure hence, and alighting from a serpent on which

DON QUIXOTE

he rode, entered into the room: and I know not what he did there, but after some little time, out he came, flying through the roof, and left the house full of smoke, and when we went to see what he had been doing, we saw neither books nor room: only we very well remember, both I and mistress housekeeper here, that when the old thief went away, he said, with a loud voice, that, for a secret enmity he bore to the owner of those books and of the room, he had done a mischief in this house, which should soon be manifest: he told us also, that he was called the sage Maston. Fris-ton¹, he meant to say, quoth Don Quixote. I know not, answered the housekeeper, whether his name be Fris-ton, or Friton: all I know is, that it ended in ton. It doth so, replied Don Quixote: he is a wise enchanter, a great enemy of mine, and bears me a grudge, because by his skill and learning he knows that, in process of time, I shall engage in single combat with a knight whom he favours, and shall vanquish him, without his being able to prevent it: and for this cause he endeavours to do me all the unkindness he can: but let him know from me, it will be difficult for him to withstand or avoid what is decreed by heaven. Who doubts of that? said the piece: but, dear uncle, who puts you upon these squabbles? Would it not be better to stay quietly at home, and not ramble about the world, seeking for better bread than wheat, and not considering that many go for wood, and return shorn themselves. Oh! dear niece, answered Don Quixote, how little do you know of the matter! before they shall shorn me I will pluck and tear off the beards of all those who dare think of touching the tip of a single hair of mine. Neither of them would make any further reply, for they saw his chin begin to take fire. He stayed after the fifteen days at home, very quiet, without discovering any symptoms of an inclination to repeat his late injuries, in which time there passed very pleasant discourses.

¹ Don Balanzo de Cuenca purports to be written by the

between him and his two godsons, the priest and the barber; he affirming that the world stood in need of nothing so much as knights-errant and the revival of chivalry. The priest sometimes contradicted him, and at other times acquiesced; for had he not made use of this artifice, there would have been no means left to bring him to reason.

In the meantime Don Quixote tampered with a labourer, a neighbour of his, and an honest man (if such an epithet may be given to one that is poor), but very shallow-brained. In short, he said so much, used so many arguments, and promised him such great matters, that the poor fellow resolved to ally out with him, and serve him as his squire. Among other things, Don Quixote told him he should dispose himself to go with him willingly; for some time or other such an adventure might present, that an island might be won in the turn of a hand, and he be left governor thereof. With these and the like promises, Sancho Panza (for that was the labourer's name) left his wife and children, and hired himself for a squire to his neighbour. Don Quixote presently cast about how to raise money, and by selling one thing, and purring another, and losing by all, he scraped together a tolerable sum. He fitted himself likewise with a buckler, which he borrowed of a friend, and patching up his broken helmet the best he could, he acquainted his squire Sancho of the day and hour he intended to set out, that he might provide himself with what he should find to be most needful. Above all, he charged him not to forget a wallet; and Sancho said he would be sure to carry one, and that he intended also to take with him an ass as he had, being a very good one, because he was not used to travel much on foot. As to the ass, Don Quixote paused a while, endeavouring to recollect whether any knight-errant had ever carried a squire mounted ~~on~~ ^{on} an ass; but no instance of the kind occurred to his memory. However, he consented that he should take his ass with him, purposing to accommodate him more honour-

ably, the first opportunity, by dismounting the first discourteous knight he should meet. He provided himself also with shirts, and what other things he could, conformably to the advice given him by the innkeeper.

All which being done and accomplished, Don Quixote and Sancho Panza, without taking leave, the one of his wife and children, and the other of his housekeeper and niece, one night sailed out of the village, unperceived by any one; and they travelled so hard, that by break of day, they believed themselves secure of not being found, though search were made after them. Sancho Panza went riding upon his ass like any patriarch, with his wallet and leathern bottle, and with a vehement desire to find himself governor of the island which his master had promised him. Don Quixote happened to take the same route he had done in his first expedition, through the plain of Montiel, which he passed over with less uneasiness than the time before; for it was early in the morning, and the rays of the sun darting on them aslant gave them no disturbance. Now Sancho Panza said to his master: I beseech your worship, good Sir knight-errant, that you forget not your promise concerning that same island; for I shall know how to govern it, be it never so big. To which Don Quixote answered: You must know, friend Sancho Panza, that it was a custom much in use among the knights-errant of old, to make their squires governors of the islands or kingdoms they conquered: and I am determined that so laudable a custom shall not be lost for me: on the contrary, I resolve to outdo them in it; for they sometimes, and perhaps most times, stayed till their squires were grown old; and when they were worn out in their service, and had undergone many bad days and worse nights, they gave them some title, as that of Count, or at least Marquis, of some valley or province, be it greater or less: but if you live and I live, before six days are ended, I may probably win such a kingdom, as may have others depending on

it, as fit as if they were cast in a mould, for thee to be crowned king of one of them. And do not think this any extraordinary matter; for things fall out to such knights by such unforeseen and unexpected ways, that I may easily give thee more than I promise. So then, answered Sancho Panza, if I were a king by some of those miracles you are pleased to mention, Mari Gutierrez, my crooked rib, would at least come to be a queen, and my children infants. Who doubts it? answered Don Quixote. I doubt it, replied Sancho Panza; for I am verily persuaded, that if God were to rain down kingdoms upon the earth, none of them would sit well upon the head of Mari Gutierrez; for you must know, Sir, she is not worth two farthings for a queen. The title of countess would sit better upon her, and that too with the help of God, and good friends. Recommend her to God, Sancho, answered Don Quixote, and he will do what is best for her: but do thou have a care not to debase thy mind so low, as to content thyself with being less than a lord-lieutenant. Sir, I will not, answered Sancho, especially having so great a man for my master as your worship, who will know how to give me whatever is most fitting for me, and what you find me best able to bear.

CHAPTER VIII

Of the good success which the valorous Don Quixote had in the dreadful and never before-imagined adventure of the windmills, with other events worthy to be recorded.

As they were thus discoursing, they perceived some thirty or forty windmills that are in that plain; and as soon as Don Quixote espied them, he said to his squire: Fortune disposes our affairs better than we ourselves could have desired; look yonder, friend Sancho Panza, where you may discover somewhat

more than thirty monstrous giants, with whom I intend to fight, and take away all their lives : with whose spoils we will begin to enrich ourselves ; for it is lawful war, and doing God good service to take away so wicked a generation from off the face of the earth. What giants ? said Sancho Panza. Those you see yonder, answered his master, with those long arms ; for some of them are wont to have them almost of the length of two leagues. Consider, Sir, answered Sancho, that those which appear yonder, are not giants, but windmills : and what seem to be arms are the sails, which, whirled about by the wind, make the millstone go. One may easily see, answered Don Quixote, that you are not versed in the business of adventures : they are giants ; and, if you are afraid, get aside and pray, whilst I engage with them in a fierce and unequal combat. And so saying, he clapped spurs to Rocinante, without minding the cries his squire sent after him, assuring him that those he went to assault were without all doubt, windmills, and not giants. But he was so fully possessed that they were giants, that he neither heard the outcries of his squire Sancho, nor yet discerned what they were, though he was very near them, but went on, crying out aloud : Fly not, ye cowards and vile castifs ; for it is a single knight who assaults you. Now the wind rose a little, and the great sails began to move : which Don Quixote perceiving, he said : Well, though you should move more arms than the giant Briareus, you shall pay for it.

And so saying, and recommending himself devoutly to his lady Dulcinea, beseeching her to succour him in the present danger, being well covered with his buckler, and setting his lance in the rest, he rushed on as fast as Rocinante could gallop, and attacked the first mill before him ; and running his lance into the sail, the wind whirled it about with so much violence that it broke the lance to shivers, dragging horse and rider after it, and tumbling them over and over on the plain, in very evil plight. Sancho Panza hastened to his assistance, as fast as his ass could carry him ; and

when he came up to him, he found him not able to stir; so violent was the blow he and Rosinante had received in falling. God save me, quoth Sancho, did not I warn you to have a care of what you did, for that they were nothing but windmills, and nobody could mistake them, but one that had the like in his head. Peace, friend Sancho, answered Don Quixote, for matters of war are, of all others, most subject to continual mutations. Now I verily believe, and it is most certainly so, that the sage Friscion who stole away my chamber and books, has metamorphosed these giants into windmills, on purpose to deprive me of the glory of vanquishing them. so great is the enmity he bears me; but when he has done his worst, his wicked arts will avail but little against the goodness of my sword. God grant it, as he can, answered Sancho Panza; and, helping him to rise, he mounted him again upon Rosinante, who was half shoulder-slipped.

And discovering of the late adventure, they followed the road that led to the pass of Lapice. for there, Don Quixote said, they could not fail to meet with many and various adventures, it being a great thoroughfare, and yet he went on very melancholy for want of business; and, speaking of it to his squire, he said I remember to have read that a certain Spanish knight, called Diego Perez de Vargas, having broken his sword in fight, tore off a huge branch or limb from an oak, and performed such wonders with it that day, and dashed out the brains of so many Moors, that he was surnamed *Macabru*¹; and from that day forward, he and his descendants bore the name of Vargas and Macabru. I tell you this because from the first oak or crabtree we meet, I mean to tear such another limb, at least as good as that, and I purpose and resolve to do such feats with it, that you shall deem yourself most fortunate in meeting to behold there, and to be an eye-witness of things which can scarcely be believed. God's will be done, quoth Sancho. I believe all just as you say, Sir: but, pray, ere your

¹ *Macabru* = to pound!

self upright in your saddle ; for you seem to me to ride adeling, occasioned, doubtless, by your being so sorely bruised by the fall. It is certainly so, answered Don Quixote ; and if I do not complain of pain, it is because knights-errant are not allowed to complain of any wound whatever, though their entrails came out at it. If it be so, I have nothing to reply, answered Sancho, but God knows I should be glad to bear your worship complain, when anything ails you. As for myself, I must complain of the least pain I feel, unless this business of not complaining be understood to extend to the squires of knights-errant. Don Quixote could not forbear smiling at the simplicity of his squire, and told him he might complain whenever, and as much as he pleased, with or without cause, having never yet read anything to the contrary in the laws of chivalry.

Sancho put him in mind that it was time to dine. His master answered, that at present he had no need ; but that he might eat whenever he thought fit. With this licence, Sancho adjusted himself the best he could upon his beast ; and taking out what he carried in his wallet, he jogged on eating, behind his master, very leisurely, and now and then lifted the bottle to his mouth with so much relish, that the best-fed victualler of Malaga might have envied him. And whilst he went on in this manner, repeating his draughts, he thought no more of the promises his master had made him ; nor did he think it any toil, but rather a recreation to go in quest of adventures, though never so perilous. In fine, they passed that night among some trees, and from one of them Don Quixote tore a withered branch, that might serve him in some sort for a lance, and fixed it to the iron head or spear of that which was broken. All that night Don Quixote slept not a wink, ruminating on his lady Dulcinea, in conformity to what he had read in his books where the knights are wont to pass many nights together, without closing their eyes, in forests and deserts, entertaining themselves with the remembrance of their mistresses.

Not so did Sancho pass the night; whose stomach being full (and not of dandelion-water) he made but one sleep of it: and if his master had not roused him, neither the beams of the sun that darted full in his face, nor the melody of the birds, which in great numbers most cheerfully saluted the approach of the new day, could have awaked him. At this uprising he took a swig at his bottle, and found it much lighter than the evening before; which grieved his very heart, for he did not think they were in the way to remedy that defect very soon. Don Quixote would not break his fast; for, as it is said, he resolved to subsist upon savoury remembrances.

They returned to the way they had entered upon the day before, toward [Puerto] Lápice, which they discovered about three in the afternoon. Here (said Don Quixote, copying it) brother Sancho Panza, we may thrust our hands up to the elbows in what they call adventures. But take this caution with you, that, though you should see me in the greatest peril in the world, you must not lay your hand to your sword to defend me, unless you see that they who assault me are a vile mob and mean scoundrels; in that case you may assist me; but if they should be knights, it is in nowise lawful nor allowed by the laws of chivalry, that you should intermeddle, until you are dubbed a knight. I assure you, *ex*, answered Sancho, your worship shall be obeyed most punctually herein, and the rather, because I am naturally very peaceable, and an enemy to thrusting myself into brawls and squabbles: but for all that, as to what regards the defence of my own person, I shall make no great account of those same laws, since both divine and human allow every one to defend himself against whoever would annoy him. I say no less, answered Don Quixote; but in the business of assisting me against knights, you must restrain and keep in your natural impetuosity. I say I will do so, answered Sancho; and I will observe this precept as religiously as the Lord's day.

As they were thus discoursing, there appeared in

DON QUIXOTE

the road two monks of the order of St. Benedict, mounted upon two dromedaries; for the mules whereon they rode were not much less. They were travelling masks, and carried umbrellas. Behind them came a coach, and four or five men on horseback, who accompanied it, with two muliters on foot. There was in the coach, as it was afterwards known, a certain Spanish lady, going to Seville to her husband, who was there ready to embark for the Indies in a very honourable post. The monks came not in her company, though they were travelling the same road. But scarcely had Don Quixote espied them, when he said to his squire: Either I am deceived, or this is like to prove the most famous adventure that ever was seen; for those black bulks that appear yonder must be, and without doubt are enchanters, who are carrying away some princess, whom they have stolen, in that coach; and I am obliged to redress this wrong to the utmost of my power. Thus may prove a worse job than the windmills, said Sancho: pray, Sir, take notice that those are Benedictine monks, and the coach must belong to some traveller. Pray, hearken to my advice, and have a care what you do, and let not the devil deceive you. I have already told you, Sancho, answered Don Quixote, that you know little of the business of adventures; what I say is true, as you will see it presently. And so saying, he advanced forward and planted himself in the midst of the highway, by which the monks were to pass; and when they were so near, that he supposed they could hear what he said, he cried out with a loud voice: I diabolical and monstrous race, either instantly release that coach against their will, or prepare for my death, as the just chastisement of your wicked doings. The monks stopped their mules, and stood silent as well at the figure of Don Quixote, as at his expressions; to which they answered: Señor caballero, we are neither diabolical nor monstrous, but a few monks of the Benedictine order, who are travel-

our own business, and are entirely ignorant whether any processes are carried away by force in that coach, or not. Bold words do nothing with me; for I know ye, treacherous scoundrels, said Don Quixote: and without staying for any other reply, he clapped spurs to Rosinante, and with his lance couched, ran at the foremost monk with such fury and resolution, that, if he had not slid down from his mule, he would have brought him to the ground, in spite of his teeth, and wounded to boot, if not killed outright.

The second monk seeing his comrade treated in this manner, clapped spurs to his mule's sides, and began to scour along the plain, lighter than the wind itself. Sancho Panza, seeing the monk on the ground, leaped nimbly from his ass, and running to him, began to take off his habit. In the meanwhile the monk's two lackeys coming up, asked him why he was stripping their master of his clothes. Sancho answered, that they were his lawful perquisites, as being the spoils of the battle which his lord Don Quixote had just won. The lackeys, who did not understand railery, nor what was meant by spoils or battles, seeing Don Quixote at a distance, talking with those in the coach, fell upon Sancho, and threw him down, and, leaving him not a hair in his beard, gave him a hearty kicking and left him stretched on the ground, breathless and senseless. And without losing a minute, the monk got upon his mule again, trembling, and terribly frightened, and as pale as death; and no sooner was he mounted, but he spurred after his companion, who stood waiting at a good distance, to see what would be the issue of that strange encounter; but being unwilling to wait the event, they went on their way, crossing themselves oftener than if the devil had been close at their heels. Don Quixote, as was said, stood talking to the lady in the coach, saying: Your beauty, dear lady, may dispose of your person as pleaseth you best, for your haughty revilers lie prostrate on the ground, overthrown by my invincible arm; and that you may not be at any pains to learn the name of

your deliverer, know that I am called Don Quixote de la Mancha, knight-errant and adventurer, and captive to the peerless and beautiful Dulcinea del Toboso; and in requital of the benefit you have received at my hands, all I desire is, that you would return to Toboso, and in my name, present yourselves before that lady, and tell her what I have done to obtain your liberty.

All that Don Quixote said was overheard by a certain squire who accompanied the coach. A Biscainer, who finding he would not let the coach go forward, but insisted upon its immediately returning to Toboso, flew at Don Quixote, and taking hold of his lance, addressed him in bad Castilian, and worse Biscaine, after this manner: Begone, cavalier, and the devil go with thee: I swear by that God that made me, if thou dost not quit the coach, thou forfeitest thy life, as I am a Biscainer. Don Quixote understood him very well, and with great calmness answered: Wert thou a gentleman, as thou art not, I would before now have chastised thy folly and presumption, thou pitiful slave. To which the Biscainer replied: I no gentleman! I swear by the great God thou liest, as I am a Christian; if thou wilt throw away thy lance, and draw thy sword, thou shalt see I will make no more of thee than a cat does of a mouse: Biscainer by land, gentleman by sea, gentleman for the devil, and thou liest; look then if thou hast anything else to say. Thou shalt see that presently, as said Agreus¹, answered Don Quixote; and throwing down his lance, he drew his sword, and grasping his buckler, set upon the Biscainer, with a resolution to kill him. The Biscainer, seeing him come on in that manner, though he would fain have alighted from his mule, which, being of the worst kind of hackneys, was not to be depended upon, had yet only time to draw his sword; but it happened well for him that he was close to the coach-

¹ Agreus was nephew of Queen Elreca, and therefore cousin of Amada.

side, out of which he snatched a cushion, which served him for a shield; and immediately to it they went, as if they had been mortal enemies. The rest of the company would have made peace between them, but they could not; for the Biscainer swore in his gibberish, that, if they would not let him finish the combat, he would kill his mistress, and everybody that offered to hinder him. The lady of the coach, amazed and affrighted at what she saw, bid the coachmen put a little out of the way, and so sat at a distance, beholding the rigorous conflict; in the progress of which, the Biscainer gave Don Quixote such a huge stroke on one of his shoulders, and above his buckler, that, had it not been for his coat of mail, he had cleft him down to the girdle. Don Quixote feeling the weight of that unmeasurable blow, cried out aloud, saying: O lady of my soul, Dulcinea, flower of all beauty, succour this thy knight, who, to satisfy thy great goodness, exposes himself to this rigorous extremity. The saying this, the drawing his sword, the covering himself well with his buckler, and falling furiously on the Biscainer, was all done in one moment, he resolving to venture all on the fortune of one single blow. The Biscainer who saw him coming thus upon him, and perceived his bravery by his resolution, resolved to do the same thing that Don Quixote had done, and so he waited for him, covering himself well with his cushion, but was not able to turn his mule about to the right, or the left, she being already so jaded, and so little used to such sport, that she would not stir a step.

Now Don Quixote, as has been said, advanced against the wary Biscainer, with his lifted sword, fully determined to cleave him asunder; and the Biscainer expected him, with his sword also lifted up, and guarded by his cushion. All the bystanders were trembling, and in suspense what might be the event of those prodigious blows with which they threatened each other; and the lady of the coach, and her waiting-women, were making a thousand vows and promises

tain, and from valley to valley : (unless some miscreant or some lewd clown, with hatchet and steel cap, or some prodigious giant, ravished them) damsels there were, in days of yore, who, at the expiration of four-score years, and never sleeping all that time under a roof, went as spotless virgins to the grave, as the mothers that bore them. Now, I say, upon these and many other accounts, our gallant Don Quixote is worthy of immortal memory and praise ; nor ought some share to be denied even to me, for the labour and pains I have taken to discover the end of this delectable history : though I am very sensible, that, if heaven and fortune had not befriended me, the world would have still been without that pastime and pleasure, which an attentive reader of it may enjoy for near two hours. Now the manner of finding it was this.

As I was walking one day on the exchange of Toledo, a boy came to sell some bundles of old papers to a mercer ; and, as I am fond of reading, though it be torn papers thrown about the streets, carried by this my natural inclination, I took a parcel of those the boy was selling, and perceived therein characters which I knew to be Arabic. And whereas, though I knew the letters, I could not read them, I looked about for some Moorish rabbi¹, to read them for me ; and it was not very difficult to find such an interpreter ; for had I sought one for some better and more ancient language, I should have found him there. In fine, my good fortune presented one to me ; and acquainting him with my desire, and putting the book into his hands, he opened it towards the middle, and reading a little in it, began to laugh. I asked him what he smiled at ? and he answered me, at something

¹ *Algun morisco aljamiado*, the phrase in the original means 'some Spanish-speaking Moor', and, especially, a Moor capable of reading and writing Spanish in Arabic characters.

The Alcañal at Toledo, the scene of this meeting, was mainly occupied by Jewish traders : the 'more ancient language' is, of course, Hebrew.

which he found written in the margin, by way of annotation. I desired him to tell me what it was; and he, laughing on, said; there is written on the margin, as follows: 'This Dulcinea del Toboso, so often mentioned in this history, had, they say, the best hand at salting pork of any woman in all La Mancha'. When I heard the name of Dulcinea del Toboso, I stood amazed and confounded; for I presently fancied to myself that those bundles of paper contained the history of Don Quixote.

With this thought I pressed him to read the beginning; which he did, and rendering extempore the Arabic into Castilian, said that it began thus: 'The history of Don Quixote de la Mancha, written by Cid Ruyter Ben Engula, Arabian historiographer'. Much discretion was necessary to dissemble the joy I felt at hearing the title of the book, and snatching it out of the mercer's hands, I bought the whole bundle of papers from the boy for half a real; who, if he had been cunning, and had perceived how eager I was to have them, might very well have promised himself, and have really had, more than six for the bargain. I went off immediately with the Morisco, through the cloister of the great church, and desired him to translate for me those papers (all those that treated of Don Quixote) into the Castilian tongue, without taking away or adding anything to them, offering to pay him whatever he should demand. He was satisfied with fifty pounds of raisins, and two bushels of wheat; and promised to translate them faithfully and expeditiously. But I, to make the business more sure, and not let so valuable a prize slip through my fingers, took him home to my own house, where in a little more than six weeks he translated the whole in the manner you have it here related.

In the first sheet was drawn in a most lively manner, Don Quixote's combat with the Bucconer, in the same attitude in which the history sets it forth; the swords lifted up; the one covered with his buckler, the other with his cushion; and the Biscacher's male

so to the life that you might discover it to be a hackney-fade a bow-shot off. The Biscainer had a label at his feet, on which was written, 'Don Sancho de Arpetua'; which, without doubt, must have been his name: and at the feet of Rosinante was another, on which was written, 'Don Quixote'. Rosinante was wonderfully well delineated; so long and lank, so lean and feeble, with so sharp a back-bone, and so like one in a galloping consumption, that you might see plainly with what exactness and propriety the name of Rosinante had been given him. Close by him stood Sancho Panza, holding his ass by the halter; at whose feet was another scroll, whereon was written 'Sancho Zancas': and not without reason, if he was, as the painting expressed, paunch-bellied, short of stature, and spindle shanked: which doubtless gave him the names of Panza and Zancas; for the history sometimes calls him by the one, and sometimes by the other of these surnames. There were some other minuter particulars observable; but they are all of little importance, and contribute nothing to the faithful narration of the history; though none are to be despised, if true. But if any objection lies against the truth of this history, it can only be, that the author was an Arab, those of that nation being not a little addicted to lying: though they being so much our enemies, one should rather think he fell short of, than exceeded, the bounds of truth. And so in fact, he seems to have done: for when he might, and ought to have launched out, in celebrating the praises of so excellent a knight, it looks as if he industriously passed them over in silence: a thing ill done and worse designed; for historians ought to be precise, faithful, and unprejudiced; and neither interest nor fear, hatred nor affection, should make them swerve from the way of truth, whose mother is history, the rival of time, the depository of great actions, the witness of what is past, the example and instruction to the present, and monitor to the future. In this you will certainly find whatever you can desire in the most agreeable; and if any periec-

tion be wanting to it, it must, without all question, be the fault of the *insidel*¹ its author, and not owing to any defect in the subject. In short, its second part, according to the translation, began in this manner.

The trenchant blades of the two valorous and enraged combatants being brandished aloft, seemed to stand threatening heaven and earth, and the deep abyss; such was the courage and gallantry of their deportment. And the first who discharged his blow was the choleric Discamer, which fell with such force and fury, that, if the edge of the sword had not turned salant by the way, that single blow had been enough to put an end to this cruel contest, and to all the adventures of our knight: but good fortune, that preserved him for greater things, so twisted his adversary's sword, that though it alighted on the left shoulder, it did him no other hurt than to disarm that side, carrying off by the way a great part of his helmet, with half an ear; all which with ludicrous rum fell to the ground, leaving him in a pitious plight.

Good God! who is he that can worthily recount the rage that entered into the breast of our Manchegian, at seeing himself so roughly handled? Let it suffice that it was such, that he raised himself alreeth in his stirrups, and, grasping his sword faster in both hands, discharged it with such fury upon the Discamer, taking him full upon the cushion, and upon the head (which he could not defend), that, as if a mountain had fallen upon him, the blood began to gush out at his nostrils, his mouth, and his ears; and he seemed as if he was just falling down from his male, which doubtless he must have done, if he had not laid fast hold of her neck: but, notwithstanding that, he let his stirrups, and let go his hold; and the male, frightened by the terrible stroke, began to run about the field, and at two or three plunges laid her master flat upon the ground. Don Quixote stood looking on with great

¹ The translator states that he has preferred to give '*insidel*' instead of '*boord*', the literal equivalent of *gripe* in the original.

ready to mount again upon Rocinante, he came and held his stirrup; and before he got up, he fell upon his knees before him, and, taking hold of his hand, kissed it, and said to him: Be pleased, my lord Don Quixote, to bestow upon me the government of that island, which you have won in this rigorous combat; for, be it never so big, I find in myself ability sufficient to govern it, as well as the best that ever governed an island in the world. To which Don Quixote answered: Consider, brother Sancho, that this adventure, and others of this nature, are not adventures of islands, but of cross-ways, in which nothing is to be gotten but a broken head, or the loss of an ear. Have patience; for adventures will offer, whereby I may not only make thee a governor, but something better. Sancho returned him abundance of thanks, and kissing his hand again, and the skirt of his coat of mail, he helped him to get upon Rocinante, and himself mounting his ass, began to follow his master: who going off at a round rate, without taking his leave, or speaking to those of the coach, retired into a wood that was hard by.

Sancho followed him as fast as his beast could trot; but Rocinante made such way, that, seeing himself like to be left behind, he was forced to call aloud to his master to stay for him. Don Quixote did so, checking Rocinante by the bridle, until his weary squire overtook him; who, as soon as he came near, said to him: Methinks, sir, it would not be amiss to retire to some church; for considering in what condition you have left your adversary, it is not improbable they may give notice of the fact to the Holy Brotherhood,¹ and they may apprehend us: and in such, if they do, before we get out of their clutches, we may chance to sweat for it. Peace, quoth Don

¹ Brotherhoods exercising police functions existed in Spain as early as 1242; but the Holy Brotherhood was not formed till after the decisive victory at Toro (February 19, 1476), when it was organized by Ferdinand of Aragon's natural brother, the Duke of Villahermosa.

as think of dying by any wound. And therefore, when I shall have made it, and given it you, all you will have to do is, when you see me in some battle cleft asunder (as it frequently happens), to take up fair and softly that part of my body which shall fall to the ground, and with the greatest nicety, before the blood is congealed, place it upon the other half that shall remain in the saddle, taking especial care to make them tally exactly. Then must you immediately give me to drink only two draughts of the balm aforesaid, and then you will see me become sounder than any apple. If this be so, said Sancho, I renounce from henceforward the government of the promised island, and desire no other thing, in payment, of my many and good services, but only that your worship will give me the receipt of this extraordinary liquor; for I dare say it will anywhere fetch more than two reals an ounce, and I want no more to pass this life creditably and comfortably. But I should be glad to know whether it would cost much the making? For less than three reals one may make nine pinta, answered Don Quixote. Sinner that I am, replied Sancho, why then does your worship delay to make it, and to teach it me? I'll see, friend, answered Don Quixote, for I intend to teach thee greater secrets, and to do thee greater kindnesses; and for the present, let us set about the cure: for my ear pains me more than I could wish.

Sancho took some lint and ointment out of his wallet; but when Don Quixote perceived that his helmet was broken, he was ready to run stark mad; and laying his hand on his sword, and lifting up his eyes to heaven, he said: I swear by the Creator of all things, and by all that is contained in the four holy evangelists, to lead the life that the great Marquis of Mantua led, when he vowed to revenge the death of his nephew Valtorres (which was, not to eat bread on a Saturday, nor solace himself with his wife, and other things which, though I do not now remember, I allow here for expressed), until I am fully revenged

it so, quoth Sancho, and God grant us good success, and that we may speedily win this island, which costs me so dear; and then no matter how soon I die. I have already told you, Sancho, to be in no pain upon that account; for, if an island cannot be had, there is the kingdom of Denmark, or that of Sobradua, which will fit you like a ring to your finger, and, moreover, being upon *terra firma*,¹ you should rejoice the more. But let us leave this to its own time, and see if you have anything for us to eat in your wallet, and we will go presently in quest of some castle, where we may lodge this night, and make the balsam that I told you of; for I row to God my ear pains me very much. I have here an onion, and a piece of cheese, and I know not how many crusts of bread, said Sancho, but they are not suitable fit for so valiant a knight as your worship. How all you understand this matter! answered Don Quixote. You must know, Sancho, that it is an honour to knights-errant not to eat once in a month; and if they do eat, it must be of what comes next to hand; and if you had read as many histories as I have done you would have known this; for though I have perused a great many, I never yet found any account given in them, that ever knights-errant did eat, unless it were by chance, and at certain sumptuous banquets made on purpose for them, and the rest of their days they lived, as it were, upon their stockings. And though it is to be presumed, they could not subsist without eating, and without satis-

Orlando Innamorato, and there is an allusion to it in *Paradise Regained* in 334-341 —

When Agriœan, with all his northern powers,
Besieged Althœra, as romance tells,
The city of Gallaphrone, from thence to win
The island of her sex, Agriœan.

¹ Presumably a punning allusion to the '*Insula Firme*' in *Amadis de Gaulle*; it has been identified as the Orreaga peninsula, but the geography of *Amadis* is too vague and inconsistent to enable us to give the precise positions of either Sobradua or the Island.

lying all other natural wants, it must likewise be supposed that, as they passed most part of their lives in wandering through forests and deserts, and without a cook, their most usual diet must consist of rustic viands, such as those you now offer me. So that, friend Sancho, let not that trouble you, which gives me pleasure; nor endeavour to make a new world, or to throw knight-errantry off its hinges. Pardon me, Sir, said Sancho; for, as I can neither read nor write, as I told you before, I am entirely unacquainted with the rules of the knightly profession; and from henceforward I will furnish my wallet with all sorts of dried fruits for your worship, who are a knight; and for myself, who am none, I will supply it with poultry, and other things of more substance. I do not say, Sancho, replied Don Quixote, that knights-errant are obliged to eat nothing but dried fruit, as you say; but that their most usual sustenance was of that kind, and of certain herbs they found up and down in the fields, which they very well knew; and so do I. It is a happiness to know these same herbs, answered Sancho; for I am inclined to think we shall one day have occasion to make use of that knowledge.

And so saying, he took out what he had provided, and they ate together in a very peaceable and friendly manner. But, being desirous to seek out some place to lodge in that night, they soon finished their poor and dry repast. They presently mounted, and made what haste they could to get to some inhabited place before night; but both the sun, and their hopes failed them near the huts of certain goatherds; and so they determined to take up their lodging there; but, if Sancho was grieved that they could not reach some habitation, his master was so much rejoiced to lie in the open air, making account that every time this befell him, he was doing an act possessive, or such an act as gave a fresh evidence of his title to chivalry.

CHAPTER XI

Of what befall Don Quixote with certain goatherds.

He was kindly received by the goatherds; and Sancho, having accommodated Rosinante and his ass the best he could, followed the scent of certain pieces of goat's flesh, that were boiling in a kettle on the fire; and though he would willingly, at that instant, have tried whether they were fit to be translated from the kettle to the stomach, he forbore doing it; for the goatherds themselves took them off the fire, and, spreading some sheep-skins on the ground, very speedily served up their rural meal, and invited them both, with show of much good will, to take share of what they had. Six of them, that belonged to the fold, sat down round about the skins, having first with rustic compliments, desired Don Quixote that he would seat himself upon a trough, with the bottom upwards, placed on purpose for him. Don Quixote sat down, and Sancho remained standing to serve the cup, which was made of horn. His master, seeing him standing, said to him: That you may see, Sancho, the intrinsic worth of knight-errantry, and how fair a prospect its transient retainers have of speedily gaining the respect and esteem of the world, I will, that you sit here by my side, and in company with these good folks, and that you be one and the same thing with me, who am your master and natural lord; that you eat from off my plate, and drink of the same cup in which I drink: for the same may be said of knight-errantry which is said of love, that it makes all things equal. I give you a great many thanks, Sir, said Sancho, but let me tell your worship, that, provided I have victuals enough, I can eat as well, or better standing, and alone by myself, than if I were seated close by an emperor. And further, to tell you the truth, what I eat in my career, without compliments or ceremonies, though it were nothing but bread and an onion, relishes better

than turkey at other folks' tables, where I am forced to chew leisurely, drink little, wipe my mouth often, neither sneeze nor cough when I have a mind, nor do other things, which follow the being alone and at liberty. So that, good Sir, as to these honours your worship is pleased to confer upon me, as a menial servant, and hanger-on of knight-errantry (being squire to your worship) be pleased to convert them into something of more use and profit to me: for though I place them to account as received in full, I renounce them from this time forward to the end of the world. Notwithstanding all this, said Don Quixote, you shall sit down: for whosoever humbleth himself God doth exalt; and, pulling him by the arm, he forced him to sit down next him. The goatherds did not understand this jargon of squire and knight-errant and did nothing but eat and listen, and stare at their guests who, with much cheerfulness and appetite, swallowed down pieces as big as one's fist. The service of flesh being finished, they spread upon the skins a great quantity of acorns, together with half a cheese, harder than if it had been made of plaster of Paris. The horn stood not idle all this while; for it went round so often, now full, now empty, like the bucket of a well, that they presently emptied one of the two wine-bags that hung in view. After Don Quixote had satisfied his hunger, he took up a handful of acorns, and looking on them attentively, gave utterance to expressions like these:—

Happy times, and happy ages! those, to which the ancients gave the name of golden, not because gold (which in this our iron age, is so much esteemed) was to be had in that fortunate period without toil and labour; but because they who then lived were ignorant of these two words, *mean* and *farm*. In that age of innocence all things were in common: no one needed to take any other pains for his ordinary sustenance, than to lift up his hand and take it from the sturdy oaks, which stood inviting him liberally to taste of their sweet and relishing fruit. The lupid foun-

lains, and running streams, offered them in magnificent abundance their delicious and transparent waters. In the clefts of rocks, and in the hollow of trees, did the industrious and provident bees form their commonwealths, offering to every hand, without envy, the fertile produce of their most delicious toil. The stout cork-trees, without any other inducement than that of their own courtesy, diverted themselves of their light and expanded bark, with which men began to cover their houses, supported by rough poles, only for a defence against the inclemency of the seasons. All then was peace, all amity, all concord. As yet the heavy coulters of the crooked plough had not dared to force open, and search into the tender bowels of our first mother who, unrestrained, offered from every part of her fertile and spacious bosom whatever might feed, sustain, and delight those her children, who then had her in possession. Then did the simple and beauteous young shepherders trip it from dale to dale, and from hill to hill, their tresses sometimes plaited, sometimes loosely flowing, with no more clothing than was necessary modestly to cover what modesty has always required to be concealed: nor were their ornaments like those nowadays in fashion, to which the Tyrian purple and the so-many-ways martyred silk give a value; but composed of green dock-leaves and ivy interwoven, with which, perhaps, they were as splendidly and elegantly decked, as our court-ladies do now, with all those rare and foreign inventions which his country hath taught them. Then were the amorous expressions of the soul clothed in simple and sincere expressions, in the same way and manner they were conveyed without seeking artificial phrases to set them off. Nor as yet were fraud, deceit, and guile, intermixed with truth and plain-dealing. Justice kept within her proper bounds; favour and interest, which now so much depress, confound, and pervert her, not daring then to disturb or offend her. As yet the judge did not make his own will the measure of justice; for then there was neither cause nor person

soon be here : he is a very intelligent lad, and deeply enamoured ; and above all, can read and write, and plays upon the rebeck to heart's content. The goat-herd had scarcely said this, when the sound of the rebeck reached their ears, and presently after, came he that played on it, who was a youth of about two and twenty, and of a very good men. His comrades asked him if he had supped, and he answering, *yes*,—he who had made the offer, said : Then, Antonio, you may afford us the pleasure of hearing you sing a little, that this gentleman, our guest, may see we have here among the mountains and woods some that understand music. We have told him your good qualities, and would have you show them, and make good what we have said, and therefore I entreat you to sit down and sing the ditty of your love, which your uncle the prebendary composed for you, and which was so well liked in our village. With all my heart, replied the youth ; and without further entreaty he sat down upon the trunk of an old oak, and tuning his rebeck, after a while, with a singular good grace, he began to sing as follows.

ANTONIO

Yes, lovely nymph, thou art my prize ;
 I boast the conquest of thy heart,
 Though not thy tongue, nor speaking eyes,
 Have yet reveal'd the latent smart.
 Thy wit and sense accuse my fate,
 In them my love's success I see,
 Nor can he be unfortunate,
 Who dares avow his flame for thee.
 Yet sometimes hast thou frown'd, alas !
 And given my hopes a cruel shock ;
 Thru' dal thy soul seem form'd of truth,
 Thy snowy bosom of the rock.
 Not in the midst of thy diadem,
 Thy sharp reproaches, cold delays,
 Hope from behind, to ease my pain,
 The border of her robe displays.

Ah! lovely maid! in equal scale
 Weigh well thy shepherd's truth and love,
 Which ne'er, but with his breath, can fail,
 Which neither frowns nor smiles can move.
 If love, as shepherds wont to say,
 Be gentleness and courtesy,
 So courteous is Olala,
 My passion will rewarded be:
 And if obsequious duty paid
 The grateful heart can ever move,
 Mine sure, my fair, may well persuade
 A due return, and claim thy love.
 For, to seem pleasing in thy sight,
 I dress myself with studious care,
 And, in my best apparel dight,
 My Sunday clothes on Monday wear.
 And shepherds say, I'm not to blame;
 For cleanly dress and spruce attire
 Preserve alive love's wanton flame,
 And gently fan the dying fire.
 To please my fair, in mazy ring
 I join the dancer, and sportive play,
 And oft beneath thy window sing,
 When first the cock proclaims the day.
 With rapture on each charm I dwell,
 And daily spread thy beauty's fame;
 And still my tongue thy praise shall tell,
 Though envy swell, or malice blame.
 Teresa of the Berrocal,
 When once I praised you, said in spite;
 Your mistress you an angel call,
 But a mere ape is your delight:
 Thanks to the bugle's artful glare,
 And all the graces counterfeit;
 Thanks to the false and curled hair,
 Which wary love himself might cheat.
 I swore, 'twas false; and said, she lied;
 At that, her anger fiercely rose:
 I box'd the clown that took her side,
 And how I box'd my fairer knows.

I rest thee not, O Spain,
 To gratify a lower desire;
 Thy love is chaste, without alloy
 Of vaunting wish, or lustful fire.
 The church hath sworn unto thee that the
 Unmoving heart is constant heart;
 If then, my last, its yoke will be,
 Thy crown its ready captive shall.
 If not, by all the oaths I swear,
 On those black mountains still to dwell,
 Till ere quit my tedious care,
 But for the choler and the cell.

Here ended the goatherd's song, and though Don Quixote drowsed him to some astonishing degree, Sancho Panza was of another mind, being more disposed to sleep than to hear ballads; and therefore he said to his master. Sir, you had better consider where you are to lie to night; for the pains these honest men take all day will not suffer them to pass the night in singing. I understand you, Sancho, answered Don Quixote; for I saw plainly, that the stile to the wine bag requires to be paid rather with sleep than music. It related well with us all, heard he said, answered Sancho. I do not deny it, replied Don Quixote; but lay yourself down where you will, for it better becomes those of my profession to watch than to sleep. However, it would not be amiss, Sancho, if you would draw this ear again; for it pains me more than it should. Sancho did what he was commanded; and one of the goatherds, seeing the hurt, bid him not be sorry; for he would apply such a remedy as should quickly heal it. And taking some rosemary leaves, of which there was plenty thereabouts, he chewed them, and mixed them with a little salt, and laying them to the ear, bound them on very fast, assuring him he would want no other salve, as it proved in effect.

CHAPTER XII

What a curious gathering related to those who were with Don Quixote.

When this passed, there came another of those young men, who brought them their provisions from the village, and said—Comrades, do you know what passes in the village? How should we know? answered one of them. Know then, continued the youth, that there is no dog but that famous shepherd and scholar, Chrysostom, and it is whispered that he died for love of that dartsch untoward lass Marcela, daughter of William the Rich, who, who ramble about these woods and fields in the dress of a shepherdess. For Marcela say you? quoth one. For her, I say, answered the gathering—and the best of it is, he has ordered in his will that they should bury him in the brake as if he had been a Jew, and that it should be at the foot of the oak by the oak tree fountain; for, according to report said what they say he himself declared, that was the very place he himself saw her. He ordered also other things so extravagant that the church say they must not be performed, but as it is not allowed, but they mean to be heathenish. First what that great friend of his, Asterius the scholar who discovered him because in the dress of a shepherd, declared that his words must be fulfilled without waiting for laws, as Chrysostom explained, and said that the church is all an imposture; but, by what I was told, they will at last do what Asterius and all the scholars of the brake say, and to execute they mean to draw him in his great calamity, on the point I have already told you of. And I am of opinion it will be very soon made away, at least I so it will be to the church. I know I should not return to execute his last request. And so I do, for the executioners are gone to the brake and will not wait until they behead him.

not after all our goats. You say well, Pedro, quoth another: but it will be needless to make use of this expedient, for I will stay for you all; and do not attribute this to virtue or want of curiosity in me, but to the thorn which stuck into my foot the other day, and hindered me from walking. We are obliged to you, however, answered Pedro.

Don Quixote desired Pedro to tell him who the deceased was, and who that shepherdess. To which Pedro answered, that all he knew was, that the deceased was a wealthy gentleman of a neighbouring village among the hills thereabout, who had studied many years in Salamanca; at the end of which time he returned home, with the character of a very knowing and well-read person; particularly, it is said, he understood the science of the stars, and what the sun and moon are doing in the sky: for he told us punctually the eclipses of the sun and moon. Friend, quoth Don Quixote, the obscuration of those two greater luminaries is called an eclipse, and not a clipse. But Pedro, not regarding corrections, went on with his story, saying he also foretold when the year would be plentiful, or sterile. Sterile, you would say, friend, quoth Don Quixote. Sterile or sterile, answered Pedro, comes all to the same thing. And as I was saying, his father and friends who gave credit to his words, became very rich thereby; for they followed his advice in everything. This year, he would say, sow barley, and not wheat; in this you sow ritches, and not barley may: the next year there will be plenty of oil: the three following there will not be a drop. This science they call astrology, said Don Quixote. I know not how it is called, replied Pedro; but I know that he knew all this, and more too. In short, not many months after he came from Salamanca, on a certain day he appeared dressed like a shepherd, with his crook and sheepskin jacket, having thrown aside his scholar's gown; and with him another, a great friend of his, called Ambrosio, who had been his fellow student, and now put himself into the same dress of a shepherd. I forgot

It is true, said Don Quixote, and proceed; for the story is excellent, and, honest Pedro, you tell it with a good grace. May the grace of the Lord never fail me, which is most to the purpose! and further know, quoth Pedro, that, though the uncle proposed to his niece, and acquainted her with the qualities of every one in particular, of the many who sought her in marriage, advising her to marry, and choose to her liking, she never returned any other answer, but that she was not disposed to marry at present, and that, being so young, she did not find herself able to bear the burden of matrimony. Her uncle, satisfied with these seemingly just excuses, ceased to importune her, and waited till she was grown a little older, and knew how to choose a companion to her taste. For, said he, and he said very well, parents ought not to settle their children against their will. But, behold! when we least imagined it, on a certain day the roy Marcela appears a shepherdess, and without the consent of her uncle, and against the persuasions of all the neighbours, would needs go into the fields with the other country lasses, and tend her own flock. And now that she appeared in public, and her beauty was exposed to all beholders, it is impossible to tell you how many wealthy youths, gentlemen, and farmers, have taken Chrysothem's dream, and go up and down these plains, making their suit to her; one of whom, as is said already, was the deceased, of whom it is said that he rather adored, than loved her. But think not, that because Marcela has given herself up to this free and unconfin'd way of life, and that with an little, or rather no reserve, she has given any the least colour of suspicion to the prejudice of her modesty and discretion; no, rather so great and strict is the watch she keeps over her honour, that of all those who serve and solicit her, no one has boasted, or can boast with truth, that she has given him the least hope of obtaining his desire. For though she does not fly now from the company and conversation of the shepherds, but treats them with courtesy, and in a friendly manner; yet upon any

one's beginning to discover his intention, though it be as just and holy as that of marriage, she casts him from her as out of a stonebow. And by this sort of behaviour, she does more mischief in the country, than if she carried the plague about with her; for her affability and leasely attract the hearts of those who converse with her, to serve and love her; but her disdain and frank dealing drive them to terms of despair: and so they know not what to say to her, and can only exclaim against her, calling her cruel and ungrateful, with such other words as plainly doote her character. And were you to abide here, sir, awhile, you would hear three mountains and valleys resound with the complaints of those underrived wretches that yet follow her. There is a place not far from hence, where there are about two dozen of tall birchen, and not one of these but has the name of *Marcela* written and engraved on its smooth bark; and over some of them is a crown carved in the same tree, as if the lover would more clearly express, that *Marcela* bears away the crown, and deserves it above all human beauty. Here sighs one shepherd; there complains another: here are heard amorous sonnets, there despairing ditties. You shall have one pass all the hours of the night, seated at the foot of some oak or rock; and there, without closing his weeping eyes, wrapped up and transported in his thoughts, the sun finds him in the morning. You shall have another, without cessation or truce to his sighs, in the midst of the most irksome noonday heat of the summer, extended on the burning sand, and ending up his complaints to all pitying heaven. In the meantime, the beautiful *Marcela*, free and unconcerned, triumphs over them all. We who know her, wait with impatience to see what her haughtiness will come to, and who is to be the happy man that shall subdue so intractable a disposition, and enjoy so incomparable a beauty. All that I have recounted being so assured a truth, I the more readily believe what our companion told us concerning the cause of *Chrysothom's* death. And there-

fore I advise you, sir, that you do not fail to-morrow to be at his funeral, which will be very well worth seeing: for Chrysostom has a great many friends; and it is not half a league from this place to that where he ordered himself to be buried.

I will certainly be there, said Don Quixote, and I thank you for the pleasure you have given me by the recital of so entertaining a story. Oh! replied the goatherd, I do not yet know half the adventures that have happened to Marcela's lovers; but to-morrow, perhaps, we shall meet by the way with some shepherd, who may tell us more: at present it will not be amiss, that you get you to sleep under some roof; for the cold dew of the night may do your wound harm, though the salve I have put to it is such, that you need not fear any cross accident. Sancho Panza, who, for his part, gave this long-winded tale of the goatherd's to the devil, pressed his master to lay himself down to sleep in Pedro's hut. He did so, and passed the rest of the night in remembrances of his lady Dulcinea, in imitation of Marcela's lovers. Sancho Panza took up his lodging between Rosinante and his ass, and slept it out, not like a discarded lover, but like a person well rib-roasted.

CHAPTER XIII

The conclusion of the story of the shepherdess Marcela, with other incidents.

BET scarcely had the day began to discover itself through the balconies of the east, when five of the six goatherds got up, and went to awake Don Quixote, and asked him, whether he continued in his resolution of going to see the famous funeral of Chrysostom, for they would bear him company. Don Quixote, who desired nothing more, got up, and had Sancho saddle and pannel immediately; which he did with great ex-

petition: and with the same despatch they all presently set out on their way.

They had not gone a quarter of a league, when, upon crossing a pathway, they saw six shepherds making towards them, clad in black sheepskin jerkins, and their heads crowned with garlands of cypress and bitter rosemary. Each of them had a thick billy-club in his hand. There came also with them two cavaliers on horseback in very handsome riding habits, attended by three lackeys on foot. When they had joined companies, they saluted each other courteously; and asking one another whither they were going, they found they were all going to the place of burial; and so they began to travel in company.

One of those on horseback, speaking to his companion, said: I fancy, Señor Vivaldo, we shall not think the time mispent in staying to see this famous funeral; for it cannot but be extraordinary, considering the strange things these shepherds have recounted, as well of the deceased shepherd, as of the murdering shepherdess. I think so too, answered Vivaldo; and I do not only not think much of spending one day, but I would even stay four to see it. Don Quixote asked them, what it was they had heard of Marcela and Chrysothom? The traveller said they had met those shepherds early that morning, and that, seeing them in that mournful dress, they had asked the occasion of their going clad in that manner; and that one of them had related the story, telling them of the beauty, and unaccountable humour, of a certain shepherdess called Marcela, and the love of many that wooed her; with the death of Chrysothom, to whose burial they were going. In fine, he related all that Pedro had told to Don Quixote.

This discourse ceased, and another began: he who was called Vivaldo, asking Don Quixote what might be the reason that induced him to go armed in that manner through a country so peaceable? To which Don Quixote answered: The profession I follow will not allow or suffer me to go in any other manner.

The dance, the banquet, and the bed of down, were invented for soft and effeminate courtiers; but toil, disquietude, and arms, were designed for those whom the world calls knights-errant, of which number I, though unworthy, am the least. Scarcely had they heard this, when they all concluded he was a madman. And for the more certainty, and to try what kind of madness his was, Vivaldo asked him, what he meant by knights-errant? Have you not read, Sir, answered Don Quixote, the annals and histories of England, wherein are recorded the famous exploits of King Arthur, whom, in our Castilian tongue, we perpetually call King Artus; of whom there goes an old tradition, and a common one all over that kingdom of Great Britain, that this king did not die, but that by magic art, he was turned into a raven; and that, in process of time, he shall reign again, and recover his kingdom and sceptre; for which reason it cannot be proved that, from that time to this, any Englishman hath killed a raven. Now, in this good king's time was instituted that famous order of the Knights of the Round Table; and the amours therein related, of Sir Lancelot of the Lake with the queen Guinevere¹, passed exactly as they are recorded; that honourable doctress Quintanona being their go-between and confidante; which gave birth to that well known ballad, so cried up here in Spain, of 'Never was knight by ladies so well served, as was Sir Lancelot when he came from Britain'²; with the rest of that sweet and charming recital of his amours and exploits. Now, from that time, the order of chivalry has been extending and spreading itself through many and divers parts of the world; and in this profession many have been distinguished and renowned for their heroic deeds; as the valiant Amadis de Gaul, with all his sons and nephews to the fifth generation³; the valorous Felixmarie of

¹ The Spanish form of Guinevere.

² Already parodied in chapter II, p. 21

³ The succession is as follows: (1) Amadis de Gaul,

Hyrcania; and the never-enough-to-be-praised Thracian White; and we, in our days, have in a manner seen, heard, and conversed with the invincible and valorous knight Don Belians of Greece. This gentleman, it is to be a knight-errant, and what I have told you of is the order of chivalry: of which, as I said before, I, though a sinner, have made profession; and the very same thing that the aforesaid knight professed, I profess; and so I travel through these solitudes and deserts, seeking adventures, with a determined resolution to oppose my arm and my person to the most perilous that fortune shall present, in aid of the weak and the needy.

By these discourses the travellers were fully convinced that Don Quixote was out of his wits, and what kind of madness it was that influenced him, which struck them with the same admiration that it did all others at the first hearing. And Vivaldo, who was a very discerning person, and withal of a mirthful disposition, that they might pass without inconvenience the little of the way that remained before they came to the funeral mountain, resolved to give him an opportunity of going on in his extravagances. And therefore he said to him: Methinks, Sir Knight-errant, you have taken upon you one of the strictest professions upon earth: and I verily believe, that of the Carthusian monks themselves is not so rigid. It may be as strict for aught I know, answered our Don Quixote; but that it is so necessary to the world I am within two fingers' breadth of doubting; for to speak the truth, the soldier, who executes his captain's orders, does no less than the captain himself, who gives him the orders. I would say, that the religious with all peace and quietness, implore heaven for the good of the world; but we soldiers and knights really execute what they pray for, defending it with the strength of our arms and the edge of our swords; and that, not

(2) Esplandian, (3) Linares de Grema, (4) Floriel de Niquea, and (5) Ragel de Grema.

under covert, but in open field, exposed to the wondrous beams of summer's sun and winter's horrid ice. So that we are God's ministers upon earth, and the arms by which he executes his justice in it. And considering that matters of war, and those relating thereto cannot be put in execution without sweat, toil, and labour, it follows that they who profess it do unquestionably take more pains than they who, in perfect peace and repose, are employed in praying to heaven to assist those who can do but little for themselves. I mean not to say, nor do I so much as imagine, that the state of the knight-errant is as good as that of the recluse religious: I would only infer from what I suffer, that it is doubtless more laborious, more hasted, more hungry and thirsty, more wretched, more ragged, and more lousy. For there is no doubt but that the knights-errant of old underwent many misfortunes in the course of their lives; and if some of them rose to be emperors by the valour of their arm, in good truth they paid dearly for it in blood and sweat; and if those who arrived to such honour, had wanted enchanters and sages to assist them, they would have been mightily deceived in their hopes, and much disappointed in their expectations.

I am of the same opinion, replied the traveller; but there is one thing in particular, among many others, which I dislike in knights-errant, and it is this: when they are prepared to engage in some great and perilous adventure, in which they are in manifest danger of losing their lives, in the very instant of the encounter, they never once remember to commend themselves to God, as every Christian is bound to do in the like perils; but rather commend themselves to their mistresses, and that with as much fervour and devotion as if they were their God, a thing which to me savours strongly of paganism. Señor, answered Don Quixote, this can by no means be otherwise; and the knight-errant who should act in any other manner, would digress much from his duty; for it is a received maxim and custom in chivalry, that the knight-errant, who

being about to attempt some great feat of arms, has his lady before him, must turn his eyes fondly and amorously towards her, as if by them he implored her favour and protection in the doubtful moment of distress he is just entering upon. And though nobody hears him, he is obliged to mutter some words between his teeth, by which he commends himself to her with his whole heart; and of this we have innumerable examples in the histories. And you must not suppose by this that they are to neglect commending themselves to God; for there is time and leisure enough to do it in the progress of the work. But, for all that, repud the traveller, I have one scruple still remaining; which is, that I have often read, that words arising between two knights-errant, and choler beginning to kindle in them both, they turn their horses round, and fetching a large compass about the field, immediately, without more ado, encounter at full speed; and in the midst of their career, they commend themselves to their mistresses; and what commonly happens in the encounter is, that one of them tumbles back over his horse's crupper, pierced through and through by his adversary's lance; and, if the other had not laid hold of his horse's mane, he could not have avoided coming to the ground. Now I cannot imagine what leisure the deceased had to commend himself to God in the course of you so hasty a work. Better it had been, if the words he spent in commending himself to his lady in the midst of the career had been employed about that, to which, as a Christian, he was obliged. And besides, it is certain all knights-errant have not ladies to commend themselves to, because they are not all in love. That cannot be, answered Don Quixote; I say there cannot be a knight-errant without a mistress; for it is as proper and as natural to them to be in love, as to the sky to be full of stars. And I affirm, you cannot show me a history in which a knight-errant is to be found without an amour; and for the very reason of his being without one, he would not be reckoned a legitimate knight, but a bastard

her eyes suns, her cheeks roses, her lips coral, her teeth pearls, her neck alabaster, her bosom marble, her hands ivory, her whiteness snow; and the parts which modesty veils from human sight, such as (to my thinking) the most exalted imagination can only conceive, but not find a comparison for. We would know, replied Virakdo, her lineage, race, and family. To which Don Quixote answered: She is not of the ancient Roman Curi, Cui, and Scipio, nor of the modern Columas and Ominia; nor of the Monradas and Requesenes of Catalonia; neither is she of the Rebellas and Villanovas of Valencia; the Palafosca, Nucas, Rocabertas, Corellas, Lunas, Alegones, Urrues, Foças, and Gurreas of Aragon; the Cerdas, Manriques, Mendocas, and Gurmans of Castile; the Alencastroa, Fallas, and Menores of Portugal; but she is of those of Toboso de la Mancha; a lineage, though modern, yet such as may give a noble beginning to the most illustrious families of the ages to come: and to this let no one contradict me, unless it be on the conditions that Zerblao fixed under Orlando's arms, where it was said: 'Let no one remove these, who cannot stand a trial with Orlando'.¹ Although mine be of the Cachopires of Laredo, replied the traveller, I dare not compare it with that of Toboso de la Mancha, though, to say the truth, no such appellation hath ever reached my ears until now. Is it possible you should never have heard of it? replied Don Quixote.

All the rest went on listening with great attention to the dialogue between these two: and even the goatherds and shepherds perceived the notorious distraction of our Don Quixote. Sancho Panza alone believed all that his master said to be true, knowing who he was, and having been acquainted with him from his birth. But what he somewhat doubted of was, what concerned the fair Dulcinea del Toboso;

¹ Ariosto, *Orlando Furioso*, l. xiv. 57

Come volran dir: Nessun la muova.

Who durst move her with Orlando a prova.

for no such a name or princess had ever come to his hearing, though he lived so near Toboso.

In these discourses they went on, when they discovered through an opening made by two high mountains, about twenty shepherds coming down, all in jerkins of black wool, and crowned with garlands, which (as appeared afterwards) were some of yew, and some of cypress. Six of them carried a bier, covered with a great variety of flowers and boughs: which one of the goatherds spying, he said: They who come yonder, are those who bring the corpse of Chrysostom: and the foot of yonder mountain is the place where he ordered them to bury him. They made haste, therefore, to arrive; which they did just as the bier was set down on the ground: and four of them, with sharp pickaxes, were making the grave by the side of a hard rock. They saluted one another courteously: and presently Don Quixote and his company went to take a view of the bier: upon which they saw a dead body, strewed with flowers in the dress of a shepherd, seemingly about thirty years of age; and, though dead, you might perceive that he had been, when alive, of a beautiful countenance, and hale constitution. Several books, and a great number of papers, some open and others folded up, lay round about him on the bier. All that were present, as well those who looked on, as those who were opening the grave, kept a marvellous silence: until one of those, who brought the deceased, said to another: Observe carefully, Ambrosio, whether this be the place which Chrysostom mentioned, since you are so punctual in performing what he commanded in his will. This is it, answered Ambrosio; for in this very place, he often recounted to me the story of his misfortune. Here it was, he told me, that he first saw that mortal enemy of the human race: here it was that he declared to her his no less honourable than ardent passion: here it was that Marcela finally undeceived, and treated him with such disdain, that she put an end to the tragedy of his miserable life;

and here, in memory of so many misfortunes, be desired to be deposited in the bowels of eternal oblivion.

Then turning himself to Don Quixote and the travellers, he went on, saying: This body, sirs, which you are beholding with compassionate eyes, was the receptacle of a soul in which heaven had placed a great part of its treasure: this is the body of Chryseotom, who was singular for wit, matchless in courtesy, perfect in politeness, a phoenix in friendship, magnificent without ostentation, grave without arrogance, cheerful without meanness; in fine, the first in everything that was good, and second to none in everything that was unfortunate. He loved, he was abhorred; he adored, he was scorned; he courted a savage; he solicited marble, he pursued the wind, he called aloud to solitude; he served ingratitude; and the recompense he obtained was, to become a prey to death, in the midst of the career of his life, to which an end was put by a certain shepherdess, whom he endeavoured to render immortal in the memories of men, as these papers you are looking at would sufficiently demonstrate, had he not ordered me to commit them to the flames, at the same time that his body was deposited in the earth. You would then be more rigorous and cruel to them, said Viraldo, than their master himself; for it is neither just nor right to fulfil the will of him, who commands something utterly unreasonable. Augustus Cæsar would not consent to the execution of what the divine Mantua had commanded in his will. So that, Señor Ambrosio, though you commit your friend's body to the earth, do not, therefore, commit his writings to oblivion; and if he ordered it as a person injured, do not you fulfil it as one undaunted; rather act so, that, by giving life to these papers, the cruelty of Marcela may never be forgotten, but may serve for an example to those, who shall live in times to come, that they may avoid falling down the like precipices; for I and all here present, already know the story of the

your enamoured and despairing friend; we know also your friendship, and the occasion of his death, and what he suffered on his deathbed, from which lamentable history may be gathered, how great has been the cruelty of Marcela, the love of Chrysothom, and the sincerity of your friendship; as also the evil of those, who run headlong in the path that unconsiderate and ungoverned love sets before them. Last night we heard of Chrysothom's death, and that he was to be interred in this place: and so out of curiosity and compassion, we turned out of our way, and agreed to come, and behold with our eyes, what had moved us so much in the recital: and in return for our pity, and our desire to remedy it, if we could, we beseech you, O discreet Ambrosio, at least I request it on my own behalf, that you will not burn the papers, but let me carry away some of them. And, without staying for the shepherd's reply, he stretched out his hand, and took some of those that were nearest. Which Ambrosio perceiving, he said: Out of civility, Señor, I will consent to your keeping those you have taken; but to imagine that I shall forbear burning those that remain, is a vain thought. Vivaldo, who desired to see what the papers contained, presently opened one of them, which had for its title *The Song of Despair*. Ambrosio, hearing it, said: This is the last paper this unhappy man wrote: and that you may see, Señor, to what state he was reduced by his misfortune, read it so as to be heard: for you will have leisure enough, while they are digging the grave. That I will with all my heart, said Vivaldo; and as all the bystanders had the same desire, they drew round about him, and he read, in an audible voice, as follows:

CHAPTER XIV

Wherein are rehearsed the despairing verses of the deceased shepherd, with other unexpected events.

CHRYSOSTOM'S SONG

I

SINCE, cruel maid, you force me to proclaim
From clime to clime the triumphs of your scorn,
Let hell itself inspire my tortur'd breast
With mournful numbers, and untune my voice,
Whilst the sad pieces of my broken heart
Mix with the doleful accents of my tongue,
At once to tell my griefs and thy exploits.
Hear then, and listen with attentive ear,
Not to harmonious sounds, but echoing groans,
Fetch'd from the bottom of my lab'ring breast,
To ease, in spite of thee, my raging smart.

II

The Lion's roar, the howl of midnight wolves,
The scaly serpent's hiss, the raven's croak,
The burst of fighting winds that vex the main,
The widow'd owl and turtle's plaintive moan,
With all the din of hell's infernal crew,
From my griev'd soul forth issue in one sound,
Leaving my senses all confus'd and lost.
For ah! no common language can express
The cruel pains that torture my sad heart.

III

Yet let not echo beat the mournful sounds
To where old Tagus rolls his yellow sands,
Or Betis crown'd with olives, pours his flood.
But here midst rocks and precipices deep,
Or to obscure and silent vales remov'd,
On shores by human footsteps never trod,
Where the gay sun ne'er lifts his radiant orb,
Or with th' envenom'd race of savage beasts

That range the howling wilderness for food,
 Will I proclaim the story of my woes;
 Poor privilege of grief! whilst echoes hoarse
 Catch the sad tale, and spread it round the world

IV

Disdain gives death; suspicions, true or false,
 O'erturn th' impatient mind; with surer stroke
 Fell jealousy destroys; the pangs of absence
 No lover can support; nor firmest hope
 Can dissipate the dread of cold neglect:
 Yet I, strange fate! though jealous, though disdain'd,
 Absent and sure of cold neglect, still live.
 And midst the various torments I endure,
 No ray of hope e'er darted on my soul;
 Nor would I hope; rather in deep despair
 Will I sit down, and brooding o'er my griefs,
 Vow everlasting absence from her sight.

V

Can hope and fear at once the soul possess,
 Or hope whilst with surer cause of fear?
 Shall I, to shut out frightful jealousy,
 Close my sad eyes, when ev'ry pang I feel
 Presents the hideous phantom to my view?
 What wretch so credulous, but must embrace
 Distrust with open arms, when he beholds
 Disdain avow'd, suspicions realis'd,
 And truth itself converted to a lie?
 O cruel tyrant to the realm of love,
 Fierce jealousy, arm with a sword this hand,
 Or thou, disdain, a twisted cord bestow.

VI

Let me not blame my fate, but dying think
 The man most blest who loves, the soul most free
 That love has most enthralled: still to my thoughts
 Let fancy paint the tyrant of my heart
 Beautiful in mind as face, and in myself
 Still let me find the source of her disdain;
 Content to suffer, since imperial love
 By lover's woes maintains his sovereign state.

With this persuasion and the fatal noose,
I hasten to the doom her scorn demands,
And dying offer up my breathless corse,
Uncrown'd with garlands, to the whistling winds.

VII

O thou, whose unrelenting rigour's force
First drove me to despair, and now to death,
When the sad tale of my untimely fall
Shall reach thy ear, though it deserve a sigh,
Vail not the heav'n of those bright eyes in grief,
Nor drop one pitying tear, to tell the world,
At length my death has triumph'd o'er thy scorn,
But dress thy face in smiles, and celebrate
With laughter and each circumstance of joy,
The festival of thy disastrous end.
Ah! need I bid thee smile? too well I know
My death's thy utmost glory and thy pride.

VIII

Come, all ye phantoms of the dark abyss;
Bring, Tantalus, thy unextinguish'd thirst,
And, Sisyphus, thy still-returning stone;
Come, Tityus, with the vulture at thy heart,
And thou, Ixion, bring thy giddy wheel;
Nor let the toiling sisters stay behind.
Pour your united griefs into this breast,
And in low murmurs sing sad obseques
(If a despairing wretch such rights may claim)
O'er my cold limbs, denied a winding-sheet.
And let the triple porter of the shades
The sister furies, and ebignæas dire,
With notes of woe the mournful chorus join.
Such funeral pomp alone befits the wretch
By Beauty sent untimely to the grave.

IX

And thou, my song, sad child of my despair,
Complain no more; but since my wretched fate
Improves her happier lot, who gave thee birth,
Be all thy sorrows buried in my tomb.

Chrysothorn's song was very much approved by those who heard it: but he who read it said it did not seem to agree with the accounts he had heard of the reserve and goodness of Marcela; for Chrysothorn complains in it of jealousy, suspicion, and absence, all as prejudicial to the credit and good name of Marcela. To which Ambrosio answered, as one well acquainted with the most hidden thoughts of his friend: To satisfy you, Squire, as to this doubt, you must know, that when this unhappy person wrote this song he was absent from Marcela, from whom he had voluntarily banished himself, to try whether absence would have its ordinary effect upon him. And as an absent lover is disturbed by everything, and seized by every fear, so was Chrysothorn perplexed with imaginary jealousies and suspicious apprehensions, as much as if they had been real. And thus the truth, which fame proclaims of Marcela's goodness, remains unimpeached: and, excepting that she is cruel, somewhat arrogant, and disdainful, every itself neither ought nor can lay any defect to her charge. It is true, answered Virahio, and going to read another paper of those he had saved from the fire, he was interrupted by a wonderful vision, for such it seemed to be, which on a sudden presented itself to their sight: for on the top of a rock, under which they were digging the grave, appeared the shepherdess Marcela, so handsome that her beauty surpassed the very fame of it. Those who had never seen her until that time, beheld her with silence and admiration, and they who had been used to the sight of her were no less surprised than those who had never seen this fair shepherdess before. But Ambrosio had scarcely espied her, when, with signs of indignation, he said to her, Comest thou, O fierce basilisk of these mountains, to discover whether the wounds of this wretch, whom thy cruelty has deprived of life, will bleed afresh at thy appearance? or comest thou to triumph in the cruel exploits of thy inhuman disposition? or to behold from that eminence, like another pitiless Nero, the flames of

burning Rome? or insolently to trample on this unhappy corpse, as did the impious daughter on that of her father Tarquon? tell us quickly, what you come for, or what it is you would have: for since I know that Chrysoctom, while living, never disobeyed you, so much as in thought, I will take care that all those who called themselves his friends, shall obey you, though he be dead.

I come not, O Ambrosio, for any of those purposes you have mentioned, answered Marcella; but to vindicate myself, and to let the world know, how unreasonable those are who blame me for their own sufferings, or for the death of Chrysoctom: and therefore I beg of all here present, that they would hear me with attention; for I need not spend much time, nor use many words to convince persons of sense of the truth. Heaven, as you say, made me handsome, and to such a degree that my beauty influences you to love me, whether you will or no. And in return for the love you bear me, you pretend and insist that I am bound to love you. I know by the natural sense God has given me, that whatever is beautiful is amiable; but I do not comprehend, that merely for being loved, the person that is loved for being handsome is obliged to return love for love. Besides, it may chance that the lover of the beautiful person may be ugly; and what is ugly deserving to be loathed, it would sound oddly to say, I love you for being handsome; you must love me, though I am ugly. But, supposing the beauty on both sides to be equal, it doth not therefore follow that the inclinations should be so too; for all beauty doth not inspire love; and there is a kind of it, which only pleases the sight, but does not captivate the affections. If all beauties were to enamour and captivate, the wits of men would be eternally confounded and perplexed, without knowing where to fix: for the beautiful objects being

* Ambrosio follows a Spanish ballad in which Tullia figures as the daughter of Tarquon - she was wife of Tarquon, and daughter of Servius Tullius.

indolence, the desires must be infinite too. And as I
 have heard say, true love cannot be divided, and must
 be voluntary and unforced. — thus being so, as I believe
 it is, why would you have me subject my will to love,
 being not otherwise oblig'd thereto, than only because
 you say you love me? Now, pray tell me, if, as love
 has made me handsome, it had made me ugly, would
 it have been just that I should have complain'd of
 you because you did not love me? Besides, you
 must consider that my beauty is not my own choice;
 but such as it is, heaven bestow'd it on me freely
 without my asking or desiring it. And, as the viper
 does not deserve blame for her sting, though she kills
 with it, because it is given her by nature, as little do
 I deserve reprehension for being handsome. Beauty
 in a modest woman is like fire at a distance, or like
 a sharp sword. Neither doth the one burn, nor the
 other wound those that come not too near them.
 Honour and virtue are ornaments of the soul, without
 which the body, though it be really beautiful, ought
 not to be thought so. Now if modesty be one of the
 virtues which most adorns and beautifies both body
 and mind, why should she, who is lov'd for being
 beautiful, part with it to gratify the desires of him
 who, merely for his own pleasure, wou'd his utmost
 endeavours to destroy it? I was born free, and that
 I might live free, I choose the solitude of these fields:
 the trees on these mountains are my companions; the
 transparent waters of these brooks my looking-glass:
 to the trees and the waters I communicate my thoughts
 and my beauty. I am a fire at a distance, and a sword
 afar off. Those whom the sight of me has enamour'd,
 my words have undeceived. And if desires are kept
 alive by hopes, as I gave none to Chrysothom, nor to
 any one else, all hope being at an end, sure it may
 well be said, that his own obstinacy, rather than my
 cruelty, killed him. If it be object'd to me, that his
 intentions were honourable, and that therefore I ought
 to have complied with them; I answer, that, when
 very place, where they are now digging his

grave, he discovered to me the goodness of his intention, I told him that mine was to live in perpetual solitude, and that the earth alone should enjoy the fruit of my reservedness and the spoils of my beauty : and if he, notwithstanding all this plain-dealing, would obstinately persevere against hope, and sail against the wind, what wonder if he drowned himself in the midst of the gulf of his own indiscretion ? If I had held him in suspense, I had been false : if I had complied with him, I acted contrary to my better intention and resolution. He perished, though undecieved ; he despaired, without being hated. Consider now, whether it be reasonable to lay the blame of his sufferings upon me. Let him who is deceived, complain ; let him to whom I have broken my promise, despair ; let him whom I shall encourage, presume ; and let him pride himself, whom I shall admit : but let not him call me cruel or murderous, whom I neither promise, deceive, encourage, nor admit. Heaven has not yet ordained that I should love by destiny ; and from loving by choice, I desire to be excused. Let every one of those who solicit me, make their own particular use of the declaration ; and be it understood from henceforward, that if any one dies for me, he does not die through jealousy or disdain ; for she, who loves nobody, should make nobody jealous ; and plain-dealing ought not to pass for disdain. Let him who calls me a savage and a basilisk, shun me as a mischievous and evil thing ; let him who calls me ungrateful, not serve me ; him, who thinks me shy, not know me ; who cruel, not follow me, for the savage, the basilisk, the ungrateful, this cruel, this shy thing, will in no wise either seek, serve, know, or follow them. If Chrysostom's impatience and precipitate desire killed him, why should he blame my modest procedure and reserve ? If I preserve my purity unspotted among these trees, why should he desire me to lose it among men ? You all know that I have riches enough of my own, and do not covet other people's. My condition is free, and

I have no mind to subject myself; I neither love nor hate anybody; I neither deceive this man, nor let myself be deceived for that. I neither try with one, nor direct myself with another. The modest conversation of the shepherdesses of these villages, and the care of my goats, are my entertainment. My desires are bounded within three mountains, and if they venture out hence, it is to contemplate the beauty of heaven, those steps by which the soul advances to its original dwelling.—And in saying this, without staying for an answer, she turned her back, and entered into the most inaccessible part of the neighbouring mountain, leaving all those present in admiration as well of her sense as of her beauty.

Some of those who had been wounded by the powerful darts of her bright eyes, discovered an inclination to follow her, without profiting by so express a declaration as they had heard her make. Which Don Quixote perceiving, and thinking this a proper occasion to employ his chivalry in the relief of distressed damsels, he laid his hand on the hilt of his sword, and with a loud and intelligible voice, said, Let no person, of what state or condition soever he be, presume to follow the beautiful Marcela, on pain of incurring my furious indignation. She has demonstrated by clear and sufficient reasons, the little or no fault she ought to be charged with on account of Chrysothom's death, and how far she is from countenancing the desires of any of her lovers; for which reason, instead of being followed and persecuted, she ought to be honoured and esteemed by all good men in the world, for being the only woman in it whose intentions are so virtuous. Now, whether it were through Don Quixote's menaces, or because Ambrosio desired them to finish that last office to his friend, none of the shepherds stirred from thence, until the grave being made, and Chrysothom's papers burnt, they laid his body in it, not without many tears of the bystanders. They closed the sepulchre with a large fragment of a rock, until a tombstone could be finished, which, Ambrosio said,

he intended to have made, with an epitaph after this manner :

Here lies a gentle shepherd swain,
Through cold neglect untimely slain.
By rigour's cruel hand he died,
A victim to the scorn and pride
Of a coy, beautiful lograte,
Whose eyes enlarge love's tyrant state.

Then they strewed abundance of flowers and bouquets on the grave, and condoling with his friend Ambrosio, took leave and departed. Virakdo and his companions did the same ; and Don Quixote bade adieu to his hosts and the travellers, who entreated him to accompany them to Seville, that being a place the most likely to furnish him with adventures, since, in every street, and at every turning, more were to be met with there, than in any other place whatever. Don Quixote thanked them for the notice they gave him, and the disposition they showed to do him a courtesy, and said, that for the present he could not, and ought not to go to Seville, until he had cleared all those mountains of robbers and assassins of which, it was reported, they were full. The travellers seeing his good intention, would not importune him farther ; but taking leave again, left him, and pursued their journey : in which they wanted not a subject for discourse, as well of the story of Marcela and Chrysotom, as of the madness of Don Quixote, who resolved to go in quest of the shepherdess Marcela, and offer her all that was in his power for her service. But it fell not out as he intended, as is related in the progress of this true history, the second part ending here.¹

¹ See the note to Chapter ix, p. 68.

himself with the filices and, having them in the wind, broke out of his natural and accustomed pace, and without asking his master's leave, betook himself to a smart trot, and went to communicate his need to them. But they, as it seemed, having more inclination to feed than anything else, received him with their heels and their teeth, in such a manner, that in a little time his girths broke, and he lost his saddle. But what most have more sensibly affected him, was that the carriers, seeing the violence offered to their mares, ran to him with their pack-staves, and so belaboured him, that they laid him along on the ground in wretched plight.

By this time Don Quixote and Sancho, who had seen the drubbing of Rosinante, came up out of breath; and Don Quixote said to Sancho: by what I see, friend Sancho, these are no knights, but rascally people, of a scoundrel race. I tell you this, because you may very well help me to take ample revenge for the outrage they have done to Rosinante before our eyes. What the devil of revenge can we take, answered Sancho, they being above twenty, and we no more than two, and perhaps but one and a half? I am as good as a hundred, replied Don Quixote: and without saying more, he laid his hand on his sword, and flew at the Yagüerces, and Sancho did the same, incited and moved thereto by the example of his master. At the first blow, Don Quixote gave one of them a terrible wound, through a leathern doublet which he wore, on the shoulder. The Yagüerces, seeing themselves assaulted in this manner by two men only, they being so many, betook themselves to their clubs, and hemming them in, began to belabour them with great vehemence and animosity. It is true, that at the second pale they brought Sancho to the ground; and the same befell Don Quixote, neither his dexterity nor courage standing him in any stead; and as fate would have it, he fell just at Rosinante's feet, who had not yet got up; whence we may learn how unmercifully pack-staves will bruise, when put into rustic and wrathful hands.

The Yangüeses, perceiving the mischief they had done, loaded their beasts with all speed, and pursued their journey, leaving the two adventurers in evil plight.

The first who came to himself was Sancho Panza: who finding himself close to his master, with a feeble and plaintive voice, cried: Señor Don Quixote! ah! Señor Don Quixote! What would you have, brother Sancho! answered Don Quixote, in the same feeble and lamentable tone. I could wish, if it were possible, answered Sancho Panza, your worship would give me two draughts of that drink of *Feo Blas*¹, if you have it here at hand; perhaps it may do as well for broken bones, as it does for wounds. Unhappy I, that we have it not! answered Don Quixote. But I swear to you, Sancho Panza, on the faith of a knight-errant, that before two days pass (if fortune does not offer it otherwise) I will have it in my power, or my hand shall be very much out. But in how many days do you think, Sir, we shall recover the use of our feet? replied Sancho Panza. For my part, said the battered knight Don Quixote, I cannot limit the number; but it is all my own fault; for I ought not to have laid hand on my sword against men, who were not dubbed knights like myself. And therefore, I believe the God of battles has permitted this chastisement to fall upon me as a punishment for having transgressed the laws of chivalry. Wherefore, brother Sancho, it is requisite you be forewarned of what I shall now tell you; for it highly concerns the good of us both: and it is this; that when you see we are insulted by such rascally rabble, do not stay till I lay hand on my sword against them, for I will in nowise do it; but do you draw your sword, and chastise them to your own heart's content: but if any knights shall come up to their assistance, I shall then know how to defend you, and offend them with all my might: for you have already seen by a thousand tokens and experiments, how far the valour of the strong arm of mine extends: so arrogant

¹ *Feo Blas* = ugly Blas, Sancho's attempt at 'Flour bruis': see note to Chapter x, p. 76.

was the poor gentleman become by the victory over the valiant Escamier.

But Sancho Panza did not so thoroughly like his master's instructions, as to forbear answering, and saying: Sir, I am a peaceable, tame, quiet man, and can endure any injury whatsoever, for I have a wife and children to maintain and bring up: so that give me leave, Sir, to tell you, by way of hint, since it is not my part to command, that I will upon no account draw my sword, neither against peasant nor against knight; and that, from this time forward, in the presence of God, I forgive all injuries any one has done or shall do me, or that any person is now doing or may hereafter do me, whether he be high or low, rich or poor, gentle or simple, without excepting any state or condition whatever. Which his master hearing, he answered: I wish I had breath to talk a little at my ease, and that the pain I feel in this rib would cease ever so short a while, that I might convince you, Panza, of the error you are in. Hardly, sir, should the gale of fortune, hitherto so contrary, come about in our favour, filling the sails of our desire, so that we may safely and without any hindrance, make the port of some one of those islands I have promised you, what would become of you, if, when I had gained it, and made you lord thereof, you should render all ineffectual by not being a knight, nor desiring to be one, and by having neither valour nor intention to revenge the injuries done you, or to defend your dominions? For you must know, that in kingdoms and provinces newly conquered, the minds of the natives are never so quiet, nor so much in the interest of their new master, but there is still ground to fear that they will endeavour to bring about a change of things, and once more, as they call it, try their fortune: and therefore the new possessor ought to have understanding to know how to conduct himself, and courage to act offensively and defensively, whatever shall happen. In this that hath now befallen us, answered Sancho, I wish I had been furnished with that understanding and

new himself in the power of his mortal enemy, Archelous the enchanter, of whom it is positively affirmed, that when he had him prisoner, he gave him above two hundred lashes with his horse's bridle, after he had tied him to a pillar in his court-yard.¹ And moreover there is a private author, of no small credit, who tells us that the Knight of the Sun, being caught by a trap-door, which sunk under his feet, in a certain castle, found himself at the bottom in a deep dungeon underground, bound hand and foot; where they administered to him one of those things they call a clyster, of snow-water and sand, that almost did his business; and if he had not been succoured in that great distress by a certain sage, his special friend, it had gone very hard with the poor knight. So that I may very well suffer among so many worthy persons, who underwent much greater affronts than those we now undergo: for I would have you know, Sancho, that wounds, which are given with instruments that are accidentally in one's hand, are no affront. And thus it is expressly written in the law of combat, that if a shoemaker strikes a person with the last he has in his hand, though it be really of wood, it will not therefore be said, that the person thus beaten with it was cudgelled. I say this, that you may not think, though we are mauled in this scuffle, we are disgraced; for the arms those men carried, wherewith they pounded us, were no other than their pack-staves; and none of them as I remember, had either buck, sword, or dagger. They gave me no leisure, answered Sancho, to observe so narrowly; for scarcely had I laid hand on my whist-yard², when they crossed my shoulders with their saplings, in such a manner, that they deprived my eyes of sight, and my feet of strength, laying me where I now lie, and where I am not so much concerned to

¹ This incident does not, however, occur in *Amadís de Gaula*.

² *Tuono* in the original = brand. *Tuono* (or rather *Tiron*) and *Colada* were the names of the Old's two favourite swords.

think whether the business of the threshing be an affront or no, as I am troubled at the pain of the blow, which will leave as deep an impression on my memory, as on my shoulders. All this, notwithstanding, I tell you, brother Panza, replied Don Quixote, there is no remembrance which time does not obliterate, nor pain which death does not put an end to. What greater misfortune can there be, replied Panza, than that which remains till time effaces it, and till death puts an end to it? If this mischance of ours were of that sort, which people cure with a couple of plasters, it would not be altogether so bad: but for aught I see, all the plasters of an hospital will not be sufficient to set us to rights again.

Have done with this, and gather strength out of weakness, Sancho, answered Don Quixote; for so I purpose to do: and let us see how Rosinante does; for, by what I perceive, not the least part of this misfortune has fallen to the poor beast's share. That is not at all strange, answered Sancho, since he also appertains to a knight-errant. But what I wonder at is, that my ass should come off scot-free, where we have paid so dear. Fortune always leaves some door open in disasters, whereby to come at a remedy, said Don Quixote. I say this, because this poor beast may now supply the want of Rosinante, by carrying me hence to some castle, where I may be cured of my wounds. Nor do I take the being mounted in this fashion to be dishonourable; for I remember to have read that the good Silenus, governor and tutor of the merry god of laughter, when he made his entry into the city of the hundred gates¹, went riding, much to his satisfaction, on a most beautiful ass. It is like he rode as your worship says, answered Sancho: but there is a main difference between riding and lying athwart, like a sack of rubbish. To which Don Quixote answered: The wounds received in battle rather give honour than take it away; so that, friend

¹ The Thebes of the hundred gates was not in Borelia, but in Egypt.

Panza, answer me no more, but as I have already said to you, raise me up as well as you can, and place me in whatever manner you please, upon your ass, that we may get hence, before night comes on, and overtakes us in this uninhabited place. Yet I have heard your worship say, quoth Panza, that it is usual for knights-errant, to sleep on heaths and deserts most part of the year, and that they look upon it to be very fortunate. That is, said Don Quixote, when they cannot help it, or are in love: and this is so true, that there have been knights, who, unknown to their mistresses, have exposed themselves, for two years together, upon rocks, to the sun and the shade, and to the inclemencies of heaven. One of these was Amadís, when calling himself Beltracchio, he took up his lodging on the poor rock, whether for eight years or eight months I know not, for I am not perfect in his history. It is sufficient that there he was, doing penance for I know not what mistake shown to him by the lady Oriana. But let us have done with this, Sancho, and dispatch, before such another misfortune happens to the ass as hath befallen Rosinante.

That would be the devil, indeed, quoth Sancho, and sending forth thirty alas's, and sixty sighs, and a hundred and twenty curses on whosoever had brought him thither, he raised himself up, but stayed bent by the way, like a Turkish bow, entirely unable to stand upright: and with all this fatigue he made a shift to saddle his ass, who had also taken advantage of that day's excessive liberty, to go a little astray. He then heaved up Rosinante, who, had he had a tongue to complain with, most certainly would not have been outdone either by Sancho or his master. In fine, Sancho settled Don Quixote upon the ass, and tying Rosinante by the head to his tail, led them both by the halter, proceeding now faster, now slower, towards the place where he thought the road might lie. And he had scarce gone a short league, when fortune (which was conducting his affairs from good to better) discovered to him the road, in which

trappings of his mules, it had much the advantage of Don Quixote's, which consisted of four not very smooth boards, upon two not very equal trenails, and a flock bed no thicker than a quilt, and full of knobs, which if one had not seen through the breaches that they were wool, by the hardness might have been taken for pebble-stones; with two sheets like the leather of an old target, and a rug, the threads of which, if you had a mind, you might number without losing a single one of the account.

In this wretched bed was Don Quixote laid; and immediately the hostess and her daughter plastered him from head to foot, Mantornes (for so the Asturian was called) holding the light. And as the hostess laid on the plaster, perceiving Don Quixote to be so full of bruises in all parts, she said, that they seemed to be rather marks of blows than of a fall. They were not blows, said Sancho: but the rock had many sharp points and knobs, and every one has left its mark: he said also; pray, forsooth, order it so, that some tow may be left; somebody else may have occasion for it, for my sides also ache a little. So then, said the hostess, you have had a fall too. No fall, said Sancho Panza; but the fright I took at seeing my master fall has made my body so sore, that methinks I have received a thousand drubs. That may very well be, said the girl; for I have often dreamed that I was falling down from some high tower, and could never come to the ground; and when I have awakened, I have found myself as bruised and battered, as if I had really fallen. But here is the point, mistress, answered Sancho Panza, that I, without dreaming at all, and more awake than I am now, find myself with almost as many bruises as my master Don Quixote. How is this cavalier called? quoth the Asturian Mantornes. Don Quixote de la Mancha, answered Sancho Panza: he is a knight-errant, and one of the best and most valiant that has been seen this long time in the world. What is a knight-errant? replied the wench. Are you such a novice, that you do not know?

answered Sancho Panza. Then learn, sister of mine, that a knight-errant is a thing, that, in two words is seen cudgelled and an emperor; to-day is the most unfortunate creature in the world, and the most necessitous, and to-morrow will have two or three crowns of kingdoms to give to his squire. How comes it then to pass, that you, being squire to this so worthy a gentleman, and the hostess, have not yet, as it seems, got so much as an earldom? It is early days yet, answered Sancho; for it is but a month since we set out in quest of adventures, and hitherto we have met with none that deserve the name. And sometimes one looks for one thing, and finds another. True it is, if my master, Don Quixote, recovers of this wound or fall, and I am not disabled thereby, I would not truck my hopes for the best title in Spain.

All this discourse Don Quixote listened to very attentively; and, setting himself up in his bed as well as he could, and taking the hostess by the hand, he said to her: Believe me, beautiful lady, you may reckon yourself happy in having lodged my person in this your castle, and such a person, that, if I do not praise myself, it is because, as is commonly said, self-praise depreciates: but my squire will inform you who I am. I only say, that I shall retain the service you have done me, eternally engraved in my memory, and be grateful to you whilst my life shall remain. And had it pleased the high heavens that love had not held me so enthralled, and subjected to his laws, and to the eyes of that beautiful ingrate, whose name I mutter between my teeth, the eyes of this lovely virgin had been mistresses of my liberty.

The hostess, her daughter, and the good Maritornes stood confounded at hearing our knight-errant's discourse, which they understood just as much as if he had spoken Greek; though they guessed that it all tended to compliments and offers of service. And not being accustomed to such kind of language, they stared at him with admiration, and thought him another sort of man than those now in fashion; and

so, thanking him with innuendo phrase for his offers, they left him. The Asturian Mantecornes doctored Sancho, who stood in no less need of it than his master. The carrier and she had agreed to solace themselves together that night; and she had given him her word, that, when the guests were a-bed, and her master and mistress asleep, she would repair to him, and satisfy his desire as much as he pleased. And it is said of the honest wench, that she never made the like promise, but she performed it, though she had made it on the mountain, without any witness: for she stood much upon her gentility, and yet thought it no disgrace to be employed in that calling of serving in an inn, often saying, that misfortunes and unhappy accidents had brought her to that state.

Don Quixote's hard, scanty, beggarly, feeble bed, stood first in the middle of that illustrious 'cock-loft'; and close by it stood Sancho's, which consisted only of a flag-mat, and a rug that seemed to be rather of beaten hemp than of wool. Next these two, stood the carrier's, made up, as has been said, of pannels, and the whole furniture of two of the best mules he had; which were twelve in number, fat and stately: for he was one of the richest carriers of Arévalo, as the author of the history relates, who makes particular mention of this carrier, whom he knew very well; say, some go so far as to say, he was somewhat of kin to him. Besides, Cid Hamet Ben Engeli was a very curious and very punctual historian in all things: and this appears plainly from the circumstances already related; which, however seemingly minute and trivial, he would not pass over in silence. Which may serve as an example to the grave historians, who relate facts so very briefly and succinctly, that we have scarcely a taste of them, leaving behind, either through neglect, malice, or ignorance, the most substantial part of the work. The blessing of God a thousand times on the author of *Tablante of Ricamonte*, and on him who wrote the exploits of the Count de

¹ *Estrellado* in the original = starry.

as he was groping about, he cried out incessantly: I charge you to aid and assist me: but, finding that the person he had laid hold of neither stirred nor moved, he concluded that he must be dead, and that the people within the room were his murderers: and with this suspicion he raised his voice still louder, crying: Shut the inn door, see that nobody gets out: for they have killed a man here. This voice astonished them all, and each of them left the conflict the very moment the voice reached them. The landlord withdrew to his chamber, the carrier to his pannels, and the wench to her straw: only the unfortunate Don Quixote and Sancho could not stir from the place they were in. Now the officer let go Don Quixote's beard, and went out to get a light, to search after and apprehend the delinquents: but he found none; for the innkeeper had purposely extinguished the lamp, when he retired to his chamber; and the officer was forced to have recourse to the chimney, where, after much pains and time, he lighted another lamp.

CHAPTER XVII

Wherein are continued the numberless hardships which the brave Don Quixote and his good squire Sancho Panza underwent in the inn, which he unhappily took for a castle.

By this time Don Quixote was come to himself, and with the very same tone of voice with which, the day before, he had called to his squire, when he lay stretched along 'in the Valley of Pack-staves',¹ he began to call to him, saying: Sancho, friend, sleepest thou? sleepest thou, friend Sancho? How should I sleep woe is me! answered Sancho, full of trouble and vexa-

¹ The opening of an early sixteenth-century ballad on the Cid:—

Por el Val de las Estacas — pasó el Cid á mediodía

Ugh ; I cannot but think all the devils in hell have been in my company to-night. You may very well believe so, answered Don Quixote ; and either I know little, or this castle is enchanted. For you must know—but what I am now going to tell you, you must swear to keep secret until after my death. Yes, I swear, answered Sancho. I say it, replied Don Quixote, because I am an enemy to the taking away anybody's reputation. I do swear, said Sancho again, I will keep it secret until after your decease, and God grant I may discover it to-morrow. Have I done you so many ill turns, Sancho, answered Don Quixote, that you would willingly see me dead so very soon ? It is not for that, answered Sancho ; but I am an enemy to keeping things long, and I would not have them rot with keeping. Be it for what it will, said Don Quixote ; I trust for greater matters than that to your love and kindness, and therefore you must know, that this night there has befallen on me one of the strangest adventures imaginable ; and to tell it you in few words, know, that a little while ago, there came to me the daughter of the lord of this castle, who is the most accomplished and beautiful damsel that is to be found in a great part of the inhabitable earth. What could I not tell you of the gratefulness of her person ? what of the sprightliness of her wit ? what of other hidden charms which in reserve she holds ? I owe to my lady Dulcinea del Toboso, I will pass over untouched and in silence ? Only I must tell you, that heaven, vying so great happiness as fortune had put into my hands, or perhaps (which is more probable) this castle, as I said before, being enchanted, at the time that she and I were engaged in the sweetest and most amorous conversation, without my seeing it, or knowing where it came, comes a band, fastened to the arm of some malignant giant, and gave me such a blow on the cheek, that they were all bathed in blood ; and it afterwards provided me in such sort, that I am in a worse case than yesterday, when the carriers, for Rosinante's sake, did as the machicol you know.

lully, answered Don Quixote, were I in your place. Is it the fashion of this country to talk in this manner to knights-errant, blockhead? The officer, seeing himself so ill-treated by one of so scurvy an appearance, could not bear it, and lifting up the brass lamp with all its oil, gave it Don Quixote over the pate, in such sort that he broke his head; and all being in the dark, he ran instantly out of the room. Doubtless, Sir, quoth Sancho Panza, this is the enchanted Moor; and he reserves the treasure for others, and for us only blows and lamp-knocks. It is even so, answered Don Quixote: and it is to no purpose to regard the business of enchantments, or to be out of humour or angry with them: for as they are invisible and fantastical only, we shall find nothing to be revenged on, though we endeavour it never so much. Get you up, Sancho, if you can, and call the governor of this fortress, and take care to get me some oil, wine, salt, and rosemary, to make the healing balsam: for in truth, I believe I want it very much at this time, for the wounds this phantom has given me bleed very fast.

Sancho got up, with pain enough of his bones, and went in the dark towards the landlord's chamber, and meeting with the officer who was listening to discover what his enemy would be at, said to him: Sir, whoever you are, do us the favour and kindness to help us to a little rosemary, oil, salt, and wine; for they are wanted to cure one of the best knights-errant in the world, who lies in yon bed, sorely wounded by the hands of the enchanted Moor that is in this inn. The officer, hearing him talk at this rate, took him for one out of his senses. And the day beginning to dawn, he opened the inn door, and calling the host, told him what that duncion man wanted. The inn-keeper furnished him with what he desired, and Sancho carried them to Don Quixote, who lay with his hands on his head, complaining of the pain of the lamp-knock, which had done him no other hurt than the raising a couple of bumps pretty much swelled: and what he took for blood was nothing but sweat, occasioned

by the anguish of the past storm. In fine, he took his simples, and made a compound of them, mixing them together, and boiling them a good while, until he thought they were enough. Then he asked for a phial to put it in: and there being no such thing in the inn, he resolved to put it in a cruse, or oil-flask of tin, which the host made him a present of. And immediately he said over the cruse above four-score Paternosters, and as many Ave-Marias, Salves and Credos, and every word was accompanied with a cross, by way of benediction: at all which were present Sancho, the inn-keeper, and the officer: as for the carrier, he was gone soberly about the business of tending his mules.

This done, he resolved immediately to make trial of the virtue of that precious balsam, as he imagined it to be: and so he drank about a pint and a half of what the cruse could not contain, and which remained in the pot it was infused and boiled in: and scarcely had he done drinking, when he began to vomit so violently, that nothing was left in his stomach; and, through the convulsive reachings and agitation of the vomit, he fell into a most copious sweat: wherefore he ordered them to cover him up warm, and to leave him alone. They did so, and he continued fast asleep above three hours, when he awoke and found himself greatly relieved in his body, and so much recovered of his bruising, that he thought himself as good as cured. And he was thoroughly persuaded that he had hit on the true balsam of Fierabraz; and that with this remedy, he might thereforeward encounter without fear any dangers, battles, and conflicts whatever, though never so perilous.

Sancho Panza, who likewise took his master's amendment for a miracle, desired he would give him what remained in the pipkin, which was no small quantity. Don Quixote granting his request, he took it in both hands, and with a good faith and better will, tossed it down into his stomach, swallowing very little less than his master had done. Now the case was, that poor Sancho's stomach was not so nice and

squammish as his master's: and therefore, before he could throw it up, it gave him such pangs and loathings, with such cold sweats and faintings, that he verily thought his last hour was come: and finding himself so afflicted and tormented, he cursed the balsam, and the thief that had given it him. Don Quixote seeing him in that condition, said to him: I believe, Sancho, that all this mischief has befallen you because you are not dubbed a knight; for I am of opinion, this liquor can do no good to those who are not. If your worship knew that, replied Sancho (and betide me and all my generation?), why did you suffer me to drink it? By this time the doctor operated effectually, and the poor squire began to discharge at both ends with so much precipitation, that the flag-mat upon which he lay, and the blanket in which he wrapped himself were never after fit for use. He sweated and sweated again, with such faintings and fits, that not only himself, but everybody else thought he was expiring. This hurricane and evacuation lasted him near two hours: at the end of which he did not remain as his master did, but so shattered and broken that he was not able to stand. But Don Quixote, who, as is said, found himself at ease and whole, would needs depart immediately in quest of adventures, believing that all the time he loitered away there was depriving the world, and the distressed in it, of his aid and protection: and the rather through the security and confidence he placed in the balsam; and thus hurried away by this strong desire, he saddled Rocinante with his own hands, and persuaded his squire's beast, whom he also helped to dress, and to mount him upon the ass. He presently got on horseback, and coming to a corner of the inn, he laid hold of a pike that stood there, to serve him for a lance. All the folks in the inn stood gazing at him, being somewhat about twenty persons: among the rest the host's daughter stared at him, and he on his part removed not his eyes from her, and ever and anon sent forth a sigh, which he seemed to tear up

from the bottom of his bowels; all imagining it to proceed from the pain he felt in his ribs, at least those who the night before had seen how he was plastered.

They being now both mounted, and standing at the door of the inn, he called to the host, and, with a very solemn and grave voice, said to him: Many and great are the favours, Señor governor, which in this your castle I have received, and I remain under infinite obligations to acknowledge them all the days of my life. If I could make you a return by revenging you on any insolent who has done you outrage, know that the duty of my profession is no other than to strengthen the weak, to revenge the injured, and to chastise the perfidious. Run over your memory, and if you find anything of this nature to recommend to me, you need only declare it; for I promise you, by the order of knighthood I have received, to procure you satisfaction and amends to your heart's desire. The host answered with the same gravity: Sir knight, I have no need of your worship's avenging any wrong for me; I know how to take the proper revenge when any injury is done me; I only desire your worship to pay me for what you have had in the inn, as well for the straw and barley for your two beasts, as for your supper and lodging. What, then, is this an inn? replied Don Quixote. And a very creditable one, answered the host. Hitherto, then, I have been in an error, answered Don Quixote; for, in truth, I took it for a castle, and no bad one either: but since it is so, that it is no castle, but an inn, all that can now be done is, that you excuse the payment; for I cannot act contrary to the law of knights-errant, of whom I certainly know (having hitherto read nothing to the contrary) that they never paid for lodging, or anything else, in any inn where they have lain; and that because of right and good reason, all possible good accommodation is due to them, in recompense of the insufferable hardships they endure in quest of adventures, by night and by day, in winter and in summer, on foot and on horseback, with thirst and with hunger.

with heat and with cold, subject to all the inclemencies of heaven, and to all the inconveniences upon earth I am little to my purpose in all this, answered the host: pay me what is my due, and let us have none of your stories and knight-errancies, for I make no account of anything, but how to come by my own. Thou art a blockhead, and a pitiful unkeeper, answered Don Quixote: so clapping spurs to Rocinante, and brandishing his lance, he sallied out of the inn, without anybody's opposing him, and without looking to see whether his squire followed him or not, got a good way off.

The host seeing him go off without paying him, ran to seize on Sancho Panza, who said that since his master would not pay, he would not pay either, for being squire to a knight-errant, as he was, the same rule and reason held as good for him as for his master, not to pay anything in public-houses and inns. The unkeeper grew very testy at this, and threatened him, if he did not pay him, he would get it in a way he should be sorry for. Sancho swore by the order of chivalry, which his master had received, that he would not pay a single farthing, though it should cost him his life: for the laudable and ancient usage of knight-errant should not be lost for him, nor should the squares of future knights have reason to complain of, or reproach him for the breach of so just a right.

Four Sancho's ill luck would have it, that among those who were in the inn, there were four cloth-workers of Segovia, three needle-makers of the home mountain of Cordova¹, and two butchers of Seville, all arch, merry, unlucky, and frolicsome fellows, who, as it were, incited and moved by the evil-nature spirit, came up to Sancho, and harrying him from the inn, one of them went in for the landlord's bed-

¹ The *puerto* of Cordova, mentioned in chapter I. as a resort of jacobinos, was a square in which stood the statue of a roth encircled by fountains.

leap over the pales, nor to alight from your horse, the fault lay in something else, and not in enchantment. And what I gather clearly from all this is, that these adventures we are in quest of, will at the long run bring us into so many misadventures, that we shall not know which is our right foot. So that, in my poor opinion, the better and surer way would be to return to our village, now that it is reaping-time, and look after our business, and not run rambling from Ceca to Mecca¹, leaping out of the frying pan into the fire.

How little do you know, Sancho, answered Don Quixote, what belongs to chivalry! peace, and have patience; the day will come when you will see with your eyes how honourable a thing it is to follow this profession: for tell me, what greater satisfaction can there be in the world, or what pleasure can be compared with that of winning a battle, and triumphing over one's enemy? none without doubt. It may be so, answered Sancho, though I do not know it. I only know that since we have been knights-errant, or you have been, Sir (for there is no reason I should reckon myself in that honourable number), we have never won any battle, except that of the Bucinier; and even there you came off with the loss of half an ear, and half a helmet; and from that day to this we have had nothing but drubbings upon drubbings, cuffs upon cuffs, bonds my blanket-tossing into the bargain, and that by persons enchanted, on whom I cannot revenge myself, so know how far the pleasure reaches of overcoming an enemy, as your worship is pleased to say. That is what troubles me, and ought to trouble you, Sancho, answered Don Quixote: but henceforward I will endeavour to have ready at hand a sword made by such art, that no kind of enchantment can touch him that wears it. And perhaps

¹ 'Ceca' was the name of the sanctuary in the mosque at Córdoba, the expression corresponds roughly to 'from John o' Groat's House to Land's End', or to Johnson's 'from China to Peru.'

fortune may procure me that of Amadis¹, when he called himself 'Knight of the Burning Sword', which was one of the best weapons that ever knight had in the world. For beside the virtue aforesaid, it cut like a razor, and no armour, though never so strong, or ever so much enchanted, could stand against it. I am so fortunate, quoth Sancho, that, though this were so, and you should have such a sword, it would be of service and use only to those who are dubbed knights, like the balsam: as for the poor squire, they may sing sorrow. Fear not that, Sancho, said Don Quixote; heaven will deal more kindly by thee.

Don Quixote and his squire went on thus conferring together, when Don Quixote perceived on the road they were in, a great and thick cloud of dust coming towards them: and seeing it, he turned to Sancho, and said: This is the day, O Sancho, wherein will be seen the good that fortune has in store for me. This is the day, I say, wherein will appear, as much as in any, the strength of my arm; and in which I shall perform such exploits as shall remain written in the book of fame to all succeeding ages. Seest thou yon cloud of dust, Sancho? it is raised by a prodigious army of divers and innumerable nations, who are on the march this way. By this account there must be two armies, said Sancho; for on this opposite side there rises such another cloud of dust. Don Quixote turned to view it, and seeing it was so, rejoiced exceedingly, taking it for granted they were two armies coming to engage in the midst of that spacious plain: for at all hours and moments his imagination was full of the battles, enchantments, adventures, extravagances, amours, and challenges, which he found in the books of chivalry: and whatever he said, thought, or did, had a tendency that way. Now, the cloud of dust he saw was raised by two great flocks of sheep, going the same road from different parts, and the dust hindered them from being seen until they came near. But Don Quixote affirmed with so much positiveness,

¹ Not Amadis of Gaul, but Amadis of Greece.

that they were armies, that Sancho began to believe it, and said: Sir, what then must we do? What, replied Don Quixote, but favour and assist the weaker side? Now you must know, Sancho, that the army which marches towards us in front, is led and commanded by the great emperor Alifanaron, lord of the great island of Trapobana: the other, which marches behind us, is that of his enemy, the king of the Garamantes, Pentapohn of the Naked Arm, for he always enters into battle with his right arm bare¹. But why do these two princes hate one another so, demanded Sancho? They hate one another, answered Don Quixote, because this Alifanaron is a furious pagan, and is in love with the daughter of Pentapohn, who is a most beautiful and superlatively graceful lady, and a Christian; and her father will not give her in marriage to the pagan king, unless he will first renounce the religion of his false prophet Mahomet, and turn Christian. By my beard, said Sancho, Pentapohn is in the right, and I am resolved to assist him to the utmost of my power. In so doing, you will do your duty, Sancho, said Don Quixote; for, in order to engage in such fights, it is not necessary to be dubbed a knight. I easily comprehend that, answered Sancho; but where shall we dispose of this ass, that we may be sure to find him when the fray is over? for I believe it was never yet the fashion to go to battle upon such a kind of beast. You are in the right, said Don Quixote; and what you may do with him is, to let him take his chance, whether he be lost or not, for we shall have such choice of horses after the victory, that Rocinante himself will run a risk of being trucked for another. But listen with attention, whilst I give you an account of the principal knights of both the armies. And, that you may see and observe them the better, let us retire to you rising ground, from whence both the armies may be distinctly seen. They did so, and got upon a hillock, from whence the two

¹ Like Brandeburg, King of Egiptus, and like Suero de Quixote mentioned in note to Chapter iv, p. 23.

hills which Don Quixote took for two armies, might easily have been discerned, had not the clouds of dust they raised obstructed and blinded the sight: but for all that, owing to his imagination what he saw or did, nor could see, he began with a loud voice to say

The knight you see yonder with the gilded armour, who bears on his shield a lion crowned, couchant at a damsel's feet, is the valiant Laurelco, Lord of the Silver Bridge: the other with the armour flowered with gold, who bears three crowns argent in a field azure, is the formidable Micocolemba, Grand Duke of Quiricia: the third, with gigantic limbs, who marches on his right, is the undaunted Bracadabbaros of Boliche, Lord of the three Arabas; he is armed with a serpent's skin, and bears, instead of a shield, a gate which came from one of those belonging to the temple which Sampson pulled down, when with his death he avenged himself upon his enemies. But turn your eyes to this other side, and you will see in the front of this other army, the ever-victorious and never-vanquished Timonel de Carcajona, Prince of the New Ducay, who comes armed with armour quartered azure, vert, argent, and or, bearing on his shield a cat, or, on a field gules, with a scroll inscribed *Mia*, being the beginning of his mistress's name, who, it is reported, is the peerless Miaulina, daughter to Alfediquen, Duke of Algarve. That other, who burdens and oppresses the back of you sprightly steed, whose armour is as white as snow, and his shield white, without any device, is a new knight, by birth a Frenchman, called Peter Papan, Lord of the baronies of Utrique. The other whom you see, with his armed heels, pricking the flanks of that pired fleet courser, and his armour of pure azure, is the powerful Duke of Nerbia, Espartilardo of the Wood, whose device is an asparagus-bed with this motto in Castilian—*Rastroa mi suerte*—'Thus drags my fortune'.

In this manner he went on, naming sundry knights of each squadron, as his fancy dictated, and giving to

each their arms, colours, devices, and mottoes, extempore, carried on by the strength of his imagination and unaccountable madness: and so, without hesitation, he went on thus:—That body fronting us is formed and composed of people of different nations: here stand those who drink the sweet waters of the famous Xanthus; the mountaineers, who tread the Numidian fields; those who melt the pure and fine gold-dust of Arabia Felix; those who dwell along the famous and refreshing banks of the clear Thermodon; those who drain, by sundry and diverse ways, the golden veins of Pactolus; the Numidians, unfaithful in their promises; the Persians, famous for bows and arrows; the Parthians and Medes, who fight flying; the Arabians, perpetually shifting their habitations; the Scythians, as cruel as fair; the broad-browed Ethiopians; and an infinity of other nations, whose countenances I see and know, though I cannot recollect their names. In that other squadron come those who drink the crystal streams of olive-bearing Betus¹, those who brighten and polish their faces with the liquor of the ever rich and golden Tagus; those who enjoy the profitable waters of the divine Geni; those who tread the Tartarian fields, abounding in pasture; those who recreate themselves in the Elyman meads of Xeres, the rich Manchegana, crowned with yellow ears of corn; those clad in iron, the antique remains of the Gothic race; those who bathe themselves in the Pænerge, famous for the gentleness of its current; those who feed their flocks on the spacious pastures of the winding Guadiana, celebrated for its hidden source; those who shiver on the cold brow of shady Pyreneus, and the snowy tops of lofty Apenninus; in a word, all that Europe contains and includes.

Good God! how many provinces did he name! how many nations did he enumerate! giving to each with wonderful readiness, its peculiar attributes, wholly absorbed and wrapped up in what he had read in his yong books. Sancho Panza stood confounded at his

¹ Martial's *Bæticæ strigones* (xii. 83) is the Guadabquivir.

chivalry. Mount, friend Sancho, and lead on; for I will follow thee what pace thou wilt. Sancho did so, and went toward the place where he thought to find a lodging, without going out of the high road, which was therabouts very much frequented. As they thus went on, fair and softly (for the pain of Don Quixote's jaws gave him no ease, nor inclination to make haste), Sancho had a mind to amuse and divert him by talking to him, and said, among other things, what you will find written in the following chapter.

CHAPTER XIX

Of the sage discourse that passed between Sancho and his master, and the succeeding adventure of the dead body, with other famous occurrences.

It is my opinion, master of mine, that all the adventures which have befallen us of late, are doubtless in punishment of the sin committed by your worship against your own order of knighthood, in not performing the oath you took, not to eat bread on a table cloth, nor solace yourself with the queen, with all the rest that you swore to accomplish, until your taking away that helmet of Malandrino¹, or how do you call the Moor? for I do not well remember. Sancho, you are in the right, said Don Quixote, but, to tell you the truth, it had quite slipped out of my memory, and you may depend upon it, the affair of the blanket happened to you for your fault in not putting me in mind of it in time: but I will make amends, for, in the order of chivalry, there are ways of compounding for everything. Why, did I swear anything? answered Sancho. It matters not that you have not sworn, said Don Quixote, it is enough that I know

¹ Malandrino = bandit, a sly travesty of Mandrigo's name.



not suffer them to touch a thread of your garment : for, if they sported with you last time, it was because I could not get over the pales : but we are now upon even ground, where I can brandish my sword at pleasure. But, if they should enchant and bewitch you, as they did the other time, quoth Sancho, what matters it whether we are in the open field, or no ? For all that, replied Don Quixote, I beseech you, Sancho, be of good courage ; for experience will show you how much of it I am master of. I will, sa't please God, answered Sancho, and, leaving the highway a little on one side, they looked again attentively to discover what those walking lights might be ; and soon after they perceived a great many persons in white¹ ; which dreadful apparition entirely took Sancho Panza's courage, whose teeth began to chatter, as if he were in a quartan ague, and his trembling and chattering increased, when he saw distinctly what it was : for now they discovered about twenty persons in white robes, all on horseback, with lighted torches in their hands ; behind whom came a litter, covered with black ; which was followed by six persons in deep mourning ; and the mules they rode on were covered likewise with black down to their heels ; and it was easily seen they were not horses by the slowness of their pace. Those in white were muttering to themselves in a low and plaintive tone.

This strange vision, at such an hour, and in a place so uninhabited, might very well strike terror into Sancho's heart, and even into that of his master, and so it would have done had he been any other than Don Quixote. As for Sancho, his whole stock of courage was already exhausted. But it was quite otherwise with his master, whose lively imagination at that instant represented to him, that this must be one of the adventures of his book. He figured to

¹ *Escudardo* is usually applied to masters wearing white tunics or shirts over their clothes. It seems likely from the context that the processionists were cottars.

night. The mourners likewise were so wrapped up and muffled in their long robes, that they could not stir: so that Don Quixote, with entire safety to himself, demolished them all, and obliged them to quit the field sorely against their wills: for they thought him no man, but the devil from hell broke loose upon them, to carry away the dead body they bore in the litter.

All this Sancho beheld, with admiration at his master's intrepidity, and said to himself: without doubt this master of mine is as valiant and magnanimous as he pretends to be. There lay a burning torch on the ground, just by the first whom the mule had overthrown; by the light of which Don Quixote espied him, and coming to him set the point of his spear to his throat, commanding him to surrender, or he would kill him. To which the falling man answered; I am more than enough surrendered already; for I cannot stir, having one of my legs broken. I beseech you, Sir, if you are a Christian gentleman, do not kill me; you would commit a great sacrilege; for I am a licentiate, and have taken the lesser orders. Who the devil then, said Don Quixote, brought you hither, being an ecclesiastic? Who, Sir? replied he that was overthrown: my misfortune. A greater yet threatens you, said Don Quixote, if you do not satisfy me in all I first asked of you. Your worship shall soon be satisfied, answered the licentiate; and therefore you must know, Sir, that though I told you before I was a licentiate, I am indeed only a bachelor of arts, and my name is Alonso Lopez. I am a native of Alcorrendas: I come from the city of Barça, with eleven more ecclesiastics, the same who fled with the torches; we are accompanying a corpse in that litter to the city of Segovia: it is that of a gentleman, who died in Barça, where he was deputed; and now, as I say, we are carrying his bones to his burying place in Segovia, where he was born. And who killed him? demanded Don Quixote. God, replied the bachelor, by means of a providential

from this day forward: and that this name may fit me the better, I determine, when there is an opportunity, to have a most sorrowful figure painted on my shield. You need not spend time and money in getting this figure made, said Sancho; your worship need only show your own, and present yourself to be looked at: and, without other image or shield, they will immediately call you 'Him of the Sorrowful Figure'; and be assured I tell you the truth; for I promise you, Sir (and let this be said in jest), that hunger, and the loss of your quarters, make you look so ruefully, that, as I have said, the sorrowful picture may very well be spared.

Don Quixote smiled at Sancho's conceit, yet resolved to call himself by that name, and to paint his shield or buckler as he had imagined; and he said: I conceive, Sancho, that I am liable to excommunication, for having laid violent hands on holy things. *Justis illud, inquit evadente diabolo, &c.*; though I know I did not lay my hands, but my spear, upon them: besides, I did not think I had to do with priests, or things belonging to the church, which I respect and reverence like a good Catholic and faithful Christian as I am, but with ghosts and goblins of the other world. And though it were so, I perfectly remember what befell the Cid Ruy Diaz, when he broke the chair of that king's ambassador in the presence of his Holiness the Pope, for which he was excommunicated¹; yet honest Rodrigo de Vivar passed that day for an honourable and courageous knight.

The bachelor being gone off, as has been said, without replying a word, Don Quixote had a mind to see whether the corpse in the hearse were only bones or not; but Sancho would not consent, saying, Sir, your worship has finished this perilous adventure at the least expense of any I have seen; and though these folks are conquered and defeated, they may chance to reflect, that they were beaten by one

¹ This unhistorical incident is taken from a sixteenth-century ballad.

man, and being confounded and ashamed thereof, may recover themselves, and return in quest of us, and then we may have enough to do. The ass is properly furnished; the mountain is near; hunger presses; and we have no more to do but decently to march off; and, as the saying is, 'To the grave with the dead, and the living to the bread', and driving on his ass before him, he desired his master to follow; who, thinking Sancho in the right, followed without replying. They had not gone far between two little hills, when they found themselves in a spacious and retired valley, where they alighted. Sancho disburdened the ass; and lying along on the green grass, with hunger for sauce, they dispatched their breakfast, dinner, afternoon's luncheon, and supper all at once, regaling their palates with more than one cold mess, which the ecclesiastics, that attended the deceased (such gentlemen seldom failing to make much of themselves), had brought with them on the sumpter-mule. But another mishap befell them, which Sancho took for the worst of all; which was, that they had no wine, nor so much as water to drink; and they being very thirsty, Sancho, who perceived the meadow they were in covered with green and fine grass, said what will be related in the following chapter.

CHAPTER XX

Of the adventure (the like never before seen or heard of) achieved by the renowned Don Quixote de la Mancha, with less hazard, than ever any was achieved by the most famous knight in the world.

It is impossible, Sir, but there must be some fountain or brook hereabouts, to water these herds; and therefore we should go a little farther on; for we shall meet with something to quench this terrible thirst that affects us, and is doubtless more painful than hunger itself. Don Quixote approved the ad-

two, and he taking Rosinante by the bridle, and Sancho he saw by the halter, after he had placed upon him the tripe of the supper, they began to march forward through the meadow, feeling their way for the night was so dark they could see nothing. But they had not gone two hundred paces, when a great noise of water reached their ears, like that of some mighty cascade pouring down from a vast and steep rock. The sound repelled them exceedingly, and stopping to listen from whence it came, they heard on a sudden another dreadful noise, which added the pleasure occasioned by that of the water, especially in Sancho, who was naturally fearful and pusillanimous. I say, they heard a dreadful din of arms and chains rattling across one another, and giving mighty strokes in time and measure, which, together with the furious noise of the water, would have struck terror into any other heart but that of Don Quixote. The night, as it said, was dark, and they chanced to enter among certain tall trees, whose leaves, agitated by a gentle breeze, caused a kind of fearful and still noise: so that the solitude, the situation, the darkness, and the noise of the water, with the whispering of the leaves, all occasioned horror and astonishment; especially when they found neither the blow ceased, nor the wind slept, nor the morning approached: and, as an addition to all this, a total ignorance where they were. But Don Quixote, accompanied by his intrepid heart, leaped upon Rosinante, and, bracing on his buckler, brandished his spear, and said: Friend Sancho, you must know, that, by the will of heaven, I was born in this age of iron, to revive in it that of gold, or, as people usually express it, 'the golden age'. I am he, for whom are reserved dangers, great exploits, and valorous achievements. I am he, I say again, who am destined to revive the order of the round table, that of the twelve peers of France, and the nine worthies, and to obliterate the memory of the Mafire, the Tablante, Olvante, and Tristante, the 'Knights of the Sun', and the Behanise, with the

whole tribe of the famous knights-errant, of times past, performing, in this age, in which I live, such stupendous deeds and feats of arms, as are sufficient to obscure the brightest they ever achieved. Trusty and loyal squire, you observe the darkness of this night, its strange silence, the confused and [deadened] sound of these trees, the fearful noise of that water we come to seek, which, one would think, precipitated itself headlong from the high mountains of the moon; that incessant striking and clashing that wounds our ears: all which together, and each by itself, are sufficient to infuse terror, fear, and amazement into the breast of Mars himself, how much more into that, which is not accustomed to the like adventures and accidents. Now all I have described to you serves to rouse and awaken my courage, and my heart already beats in my breast with eager desire of encountering this adventure, however difficult it may appear. Wherefore straiten Romancio's girths a little, and God be with you, and stay for me here three days, and no more: if I do not return in that time, you may go back to our town; and thence, to do me a favour and good service, you shall go to Toboso, where you shall say to my incomparable lady Dulcinea, that her enthralled knight died in the attempting things that might have made him worthy to be styled here.

When Sancho heard these words of his master, he began to weep with the greatest tenderness in the world, and to say: Sir, I do not understand why your worship should encounter this so fearful an adventure: it is now night, and nobody sees us; we may easily turn aside, and get out of harm's way, though we should not drink these three days: and, as nobody sees us, much less will there be anybody to tax us with cowardice. Besides I have heard the priest of our village, whom your worship knows very well, preach, that, 'he who seeketh danger pereth therein': so that it is not good to tempt God, by undertaking so extravagant an exploit, whence there is no

escaping but by a miracle. Let it suffice, that heaven has delivered you from being tossed in a blanket, as I was, and brought you off victorious, safe, and sound from among so many enemies as accompanied the dead man. And though all this be not sufficient to move you, nor soften your stony heart, let this thought and belief prevail, that, scarcely shall your worship be departed hence, when I, for very fear, shall give up my soul to whosoever shall be pleased to take it. I left my country, and forsook my wife and children, to follow and serve your worship, believing I should be the better, and not the worse, for it: but, as covetousness bursts the bag, so hath it rent from me my hopes: for, when they were most lively, and I just expecting to obtain that cursed and unlucky island, which you have so often promised me, I find myself, in exchange thereof, ready to be abandoned by your worship in a place remote from all human society. For God's sake, dear Sir, do me not such a darkness; and, since your worship will not wholly desert from this enterprise, at least adjourn it until daybreak, to which according to the little skill I learned when a shepherd, it cannot be above three hours: for the muzzle of the north-bear¹ is at the top of the beads, and makes midnight in the line of the left arm. How can you, Sancho, said Don Quixote, see where this line is made, or where this muzzle or top of the head you talk of is, since the night is so dark that not a star appears in the whole sky? True, said Sancho: but fear has many eyes, and sees things beneath the earth, how much more above in the sky: besides, it is reasonable to think it does not want much of daybreak. Wait what it will, answered Don Quixote, he shall never be said of me, neither now nor at any other time, that tears or entreaties could dissuade me from doing the duty of a knight: therefore, pray thee, Sancho, hold thy tongue: for God, who has put it in my heart to attempt this unparalleled and fearful adventure, will take care to watch over my safety, and to comfort

¹ Literally 'the mouth of the horn' (of Ursa Major).

then in thy sadness. What you have to do, is, to get Rosinante well, and to stay here; for I will quickly return, alive or dead.

Sancho, then, seeing his master's final resolution, and how little his tears, prayers and counsels prevailed with him, determined to have recourse to a stratagem, and oblige him to wait until day, if he could: and so while he was straightening the horse's girths, softly, and without being perceived, he tied Rosinante's two hinder feet together with his own halter, so that, when Don Quixote would have departed he was not able; for the horse could not move but by jumps. Sancho, seeing the good success of his contrivance, said: Ah, Sir! behold how heaven-moved by my tears and prayers, has ordained that Rosinante cannot go: and, if you will obstinately persist to spur him, you will but provoke fortune and, as they say, 'kick against the pricks'. This made Don Quixote quite desperate, and the more he spurred his horse, the less he could move him: and, without suspecting the ligature, he thought it best to be quiet, and either stay until day appeared, or until Rosinante could stir, believing certainly that it proceeded from some other cause, and not from Sancho's cunning; to whom he thus spoke: since it is so, Sancho, that Rosinante cannot stir, I am contented to stay until the dawn smokes, though I weep all the time she delays her coming. You need not weep, answered Sancho; for I will entertain you until dawn with telling you stories, if you had not rather alight and compose yourself to sleep a little upon the green grass, as knights errant are wont to do, and so be the less weary, when the day and hour comes for attempting that unparalleled adventure you wait for. What call you alighting, or sleeping? said Don Quixote: Am I one of those knights, who take repose in time of danger? Sleep thou, who wert born to sleep, or do what thou wilt: I will do what I see best befits my profession. Pray, good Sir, be not angry, answered Sancho: I do not say it with that design, and coming

close to him, he put one hand on the pommel of the saddle before, and the other on the pique behind, and there he stood embracing his master's left thigh, without daring to stir from him a finger's breadth, so much was he afraid of the blows which still sounded alternately in his ears. Don Quixote bade him tell some story to entertain him, as he promised: to which Sancho replied he would if the dread of what he heard would permit him: notwithstanding, said he, I will force myself to tell a story, which, if I can hit upon it and it slips not through my fingers, is the best of all stories; and pray be attentive, for now I begin.

What hath been, hath been: the good that shall befall, be for us all, and evil to him that evil seeks. And pray, Sir, take notice, that the beginning which the ancients gave to their tales, was not just what they pleased, but rather some sentence of Cato *Zensorio*¹ the Roman, who says, 'And evil to him that evil seeks'; which is as apt to the present purpose as a ring to your finger, signifying, that your worship should be quiet, and not go about searching after evil, but rather that we turn aside into some other road; for we are under no obligation to continue in this, wherein so many fears overwhelm us. Go on with your story, Sancho, said Don Quixote, and leave me to take care of the road we are to follow. I say then, continued Sancho, that, in a place of Extremadura, there was a shepherd I mean a goatherd; which shepherd or goatherd, as my story says, was called Lope Ruiz; and this Lope Ruiz was in love with a shepherdess called Torralva; which shepherdess called Torralva was a daughter to a rich herdsman, and this rich herdsman — If you tell your story after this fashion, Sancho, said Don Quixote, repeating every thing you say twice, you will not have done these two days: tell it concisely, and like a man of sense, or else say no more. In the very same manner that I tell it, answered Sancho, they will

¹ Cato the Censor; but, as censorious means censorious, he appears as Cato the Senecian in Sancho's version of the same.

all stories in my country; and I can tell it no other-wise, nor is it fit your worship should require me to make new customs. Tell it as you will then, answered Don Quixote; since fate will have it that I must hear thee, go on.

And so, dear Sir of my soul, continued Sancho, as I said before, this shepherd was in love with the shepherdess Torralva, who was a jolly strapping wench, a little scornful, and somewhat masculine; for she had certain small whiskers; and methinks I see her just now. What did you know her? said Don Quixote. I did not know her, answered Sancho; but he who told me this story said it was so certain and true, that I might, when I told it to another, affirm and swear I had seen it all. And so, in process of time, the devil who sleeps not, and troubles all things, brought it about, that the love which the shepherd bore to the shepherdess, was converted into mortal hatred; and the cause, according to evil tongues, was a certain quantity of little jealousies she gave him, beyond measure: and so much did he hate her from thenceforward, that, to avoid the sight of her, he chose to absent himself from that country, and go where his eyes should never behold her more. Torralva, who found herself deceived by Lope, presently began to love him better than ever she had loved him before. It is a natural quality of women, said Don Quixote, to slight those who love them, and love those who slight them. Go on, Sancho.

It fell out, proceeded Sancho, that the shepherd put his design into execution, and collecting together his goats, went on towards the plains of Extremadura, in order to pass over into the kingdom of Portugal. Torralva, knowing it, went after him, following him on foot and bare legged, at a distance, with a pilgrim's staff in her hand, and a wallet about her neck, in which she carried, as is reported, a piece of looking-glass, a piece of a comb, and a sort of a small gillipot of pomatum for the face. But, whatever she carried (for I shall not now set myself to vouch what it was),

factory. So then, said Don Quixote, the story is at an end. As sure as my mother is, quoth Sancho. Verily, answered Don Quixote you have told one of the rarest tales, fables, or histories imaginable; and your way of telling and concluding it is such as never was, nor will be seen in one's whole life; though I expected nothing less from your good sense: but I do not wonder at it; for perhaps this movement din may have disturbed your understanding. All that may be, answered Sancho: but as to my story, I know there's no more to be said: for it ends just where the error in the account of carrying over the goats begins¹. Let it end where it will, in God's name, said Don Quixote, and let us see whether Rosinante can stir himself. Again he clapped spurs to him, and again he jumped, and then stood stock still, so effectually was he lettered.

Now, whether the cold of the morning, which was at hand, or whether some lenitive food on which he had sapped, or whether the motion was purely natural (which is rather to be believed), it so befell that Sancho had a desire to do what nobody could do for him. But so great was the fear that had possessed his heart, that he durst not stir the breadth of a finger from his master; and, to think to leave that business undone, was also impossible: and so what he did for peace sake was, to let go his right hand, which held the hinder part of the saddle, with which, softly, and without any noise, he loosed the running point that kept up his breeches; whereupon down they fell, and hung about his legs like shackles: then he lifted up his shirt the best he could, and exposed to the open air those buttocks which were none of the smallest. This being done, which he thought the best expedient towards getting out of that terrible anguish and distress, another and a greater difficulty attended him,

¹ This story of the goats is given in Pedro Alfonso's *Disciplina Clericalis*, x., and in the *Crédo Novella Antiche*, xix. It is no doubt of oriental origin.

which was, that he thought he could not ease himself without making some noise: so he set his teeth close, and squeezed up his shoulders, and held his breath as much as possibly he could. But, notwithstanding all these precautions, he was so unlucky after all as to make a little noise, very different from that which had put him into so great a fright. Don Quixote heard it and said: What noise is this, Sancho? I do not know Sir, answered he, it must be some new business; for adventures and misadventures never begin with a little matter. He tried his fortune a second time, and it succeeded so well with him, that, without the least noise or rumbling more, he found himself discharged of the burden that had given him so much uneasiness. But, as Don Quixote had the sense of smelling no less perfect than that of hearing, and Sancho stood so close, and as it were sewed to him, some of the vapours, ascending in a direct line, could not fail to reach his nostrils; which they had no sooner done, but he relieved his nose by taking it between his fingers, and, with a kind of snuffling tone, said: Methinks, Sancho, you are in great bodily fear. I am so, said Sancho; but wherem does your worship perceive it now more than ever? In that you smell stronger than ever, and not of ambergris, answered Don Quixote. That may very well be, said Sancho, but your worship alone is in fault, for carrying me about at three unreasonable hours, and into these unfrequented places. Get three or four steps off, friend, said Don Quixote (all this without taking his fingers from his nostrils), and henceforward be more careful of your own person, and of what you owe to mine; my overmuch familiarity with you has bred contempt. I will lay a wager, replied Sancho, you think I have been doing something with my person that I ought not. The more you stir it, friend Sancho, the worse it will savour, answered Don Quixote.

In these and the like dialogues the master and man passed the night. But Sancho, perceiving that at length the morning was coming on, with

much caution untied Rosinante, and tied up his breeches Rosinante, finding himself at liberty, though naturally he was not over-mettle-some, seemed to feel himself alive, and began to paw the ground, but as for curvetting (begging his pardon) he knew not what it was. Don Quixote, perceiving that Rosinante began to bridle himself, took it for a good omen, and believed it signified he should forthwith attempt that fearful adventure. By this time the dawn appeared, and everything being distinctly seen, Don Quixote perceived he was got among some tall chestnut-trees, which afforded a gloomy shade: he perceived also that the striking did not cease: but he could not see what caused it. So without further delay, he made Rosinante feel the spur, and, turning again to take leave of Sancho, commended him to wait there for him three days at the farthest, as he had said before, and that, if he did not return by that time, he might conclude for certain it was God's will he should end his days in that perilous adventure. He again repeated the embassy and message he was to carry to his lady Dulcinea; and as to what concerned the reward of his service, he need be in no pain, for he had made his will before he left his village, wherein he would find himself gratified as to his wages, in proportion to the time he had served, but, if God should bring him off safe and sound from that danger, he might reckon himself infallibly secure of the promised island. Sancho wept afresh at hearing again the moving expressions of his good master, and resolved not to leave him till the last moment and end of the business. The author of this history gathers from the tears, and this so honourable a resolution of Sancho Panza's, that he must have been well born, and at least an Old Christian¹. This tender concern somewhat softened his master, but not so much as to make him discover any weakness:

¹ As distinguished from the New Christians—persons of Jewish descent, whose conformity was suspected to be merely external in many cases.

on the contrary, dreaming the best he could, he began to put on towards the place, from whence, the noise of the water and of the strokes seemed to proceed. Sancho followed him on foot, leading as usual his ass—that constant companion of his prosperous and adverse fortunes, by the halter. And having gone a good way among those shady chestnut-trees, they came to a little green spot at the foot of some steep rocks, from which a mighty gush of water precipitated itself. At the foot of the rocks were certain miserable huts, which seemed rather the ruins of buildings than houses, from amidst which proceeded, as they perceived, the sound and din of the strokes, which did not yet cease. Don Quixote started, and was in disorder, at the noise of the water and of the strokes, and Don Quixote, quiting him, went on far and softly towards the huts, recommending himself devoutly to his lady, and beseeching her to favour him in that fearful expedition and enterprise, and, by the by, besought God also not to forget him. Sancho started not from his side, stretching out his neck, and looking between Don Quixote's legs, to see if he could perceive what held him in such dread and suspense. They had gone about a hundred yards further, when, at doubling a point, the very cause (for it could be no other) of that terrible and dreadful noise, which had held them all night in such suspense and fear, appeared plain, and exposed to view.

It was (kind reader, take it out in judgment) six falling beams, whose alternative strokes formed that terrible sound. Don Quixote, seeing what it was, was struck dumb, and in the utmost confusion. Sancho looked at him, and saw he hung down his head upon his breast, with manifest indications of being quite staggered. Don Quixote looked also at Sancho, and saw his cheeks swollen, and his mouth full of laughter, with evident signs of being ready to burst with it, and notwithstanding his confusion, he could not resist laughing heartily at sight

of Sancho: who, seeing his master had led the way, burst out in so violent a manner, that he was forced to hold his sides with his hands, to save himself from splitting with laughter. Four times he ceased, and four times he returned to his laughter with the same impetuosity as at first. Whereat Don Quixote gave himself to the devil, especially when he heard him say, by way of irony: 'You must know, friend Sancho, that I was born by the will of heaven, in this our age of iron, to revive in it the golden, or that of gold. I am he for whom are reserved dangers, great exploits, and valorous achievements'. And so he went on, repeating most of all of the expressions which Don Quixote had used at the first hearing those dreadful strokes. Don Quixote, perceiving that Sancho played upon him, grew so ashamed, and enraged to that degree, that he lifted up his lance, and discharged two such blows on him, that, had he received them on his head as he did on his shoulders, the knight had acquitted himself of the payment of his wages, unless it were to his harm. Sancho, finding he paid so dearly for his jokes, and fearing lest his master should proceed further, cried out with much humility: Pray, Sir, be pacified; by the living God, I did but jest. Though you jest, I do not, answered Don Quixote. Come hither, merry Sir, what think you? suppose these mill-hammers had been some perilous adventure, have I not showed the courage requisite to undertake and achieve it? Am I, thank you, obliged, being a knight as I am, to distinguish sounds, and know which are, or are not, of a falling-mill? Besides, it may be (as it really is), that I never saw any falling-mills in my life, as thou hast, like a pitiful rustic as thou art, having been born and bred amongst them. But let these six falling-hammers be transformed into six giants, and let them beard me one by one, or all together, and if I do not art them all on their heads, then make what jest you will of me. It is enough, good Sir, replied Sancho; I confess I have been a little too joceous: but pray, tell me, now that it is peace

between us, as God shall bring you out of all the adventures that shall happen to you, safe and sound, as he has brought you out of this, was it not a thing to be laughed at, and worth telling, what great fear we were in, at least what I was in ? for, as to your worship, I know you are unacquainted with it, nor do you know what fear or terror are. I do not deny, answered Don Quixote, but that what has befallen to us is fit to be laughed at, but not fit to be told; for all persons are not discreet enough to know how to take things by the right handle. But, answered Sancho, your worship knew not how to handle your lance aright, when you pointed it at my head, and hit me on my shoulders, thanks be to God and to my own agility in slipping aside. But let that pass, it will out in the bucking, for I have heard say, 'he loves thee well, who makes thee weep'. and besides, your people of sorulium, when they have given a servant a hard word, presently give him some old hose and breeches; though what is usually given after a beating I cannot tell, unless it be that your knight errant, after bestadon, bestow shanks or knighdoms on the continent. The die may run so, quoth Don Quixote, that all you have said may come to pass, and I forgive what is past, since you are reasonable, and know, that the first motions are but in a man's power, and hereafterward be assured of one thing (that you may obtain and I cease talking too much with you, that in all the books of chivalry I ever read, as wise as they are, I never found that any squire converted so much with his master as you do with yours. And truly I account it a great fault both in you and me, in you, because you respect me so little, in me, that I do not make myself respected more. Was not Tuesday, square to Amalia de Cast, east of the first island ?' and we read of him, that he always spoke to his master cap in hand, his hand on heart, and his body bent after the Turkish fashion. What shall we say of Canabal, or, as to Don Galand, who was so much

* See the note to Chapter x, p. 17

that, to illustrate the excellency of his marvellous taciturnity, his name is mentioned but once in all that great and faithful history? From what I have said, you may infer, Sancho, that there ought to be a difference between master and man, between lord and lackey, and between knight and squire. So that, from this day forward, we must be treated with more respect; for which way soever I am angry with you, it will go ill with the potcher. The favours and benefits I promised you, will come in due time, and if they do not come, the wages at least, as I have told you, will not be lost. Your worship says very well, quoth Sancho; but I would fain know (if perchance the time of the favours should not come, and it should be expedient to have recourse to the article of the wages), how much might the squire of a knight-errant get in those times? and whether they agreed by the month, or by the day, like labourers? I do not believe, answered Don Quixote, that those squires were at stated wages, but relied on courtesy. And if I have appointed you any in the will I left sealed at home, it was for fear of what might happen; for I cannot yet tell how chivalry may succeed in these calamitous times of ours, and I would not have my soul suffer in the other world for a trifle, for I would have you to know, Sancho, that there is no state more perilous than that of adventurers. It is so in truth, said Sancho, since the noise of the hammers of a falling-mill were sufficient to disturb and decompose the heart of so valorous a knight as your worship. But you may depend upon it, that from henceforward I shall not open my lips to make merry with your worship's matters, but shall honour you as my master and natural lord. By so doing, replied Don Quixote, your days shall be long in the land; for, next to our parents, we are bound to respect our masters as if they were our fathers.

CHAPTER XXI

Which treats of the high adventure and rich Mambrino's helmet, with other things and our invincible knight.

ABOUT this time it began to rain a little, and had a mind they should betake themselves to falling-mills. But Don Quixote had conceived an abhorrence of them for the late jest, that by no means go in: and so, turning to the right, they struck into another road like that they took upon the day before. Soon after, Don Quixote covered a man on horseback, who had upon something which glittered, as if it had been and scarcely had he seen it, but, turning to him, he said, 'I am of opinion, Sancho, there is but what is true, because they are all wont from experience itself, the mother of all truth, especially that which says, "Where one door is opened, another is opened." I say this, because last night shut the door against what was deceiving us with the falling mills, it now was open for a better and more certain which if I fail to enter right into, the fault without imputing it to my little knowledge, or to the darkness of the night, because, if I mistake not, there comes one who carries on his head Mambrino's helmet, which I swore the oath you know, that I would not say what you do say, and now what you do say, for I would not wish for other things than the finding and making out where

* Mambrino, King of the Persians.
 † *El Rey de Persia de Mambrino*
 ...

you! replied Don Quixote: what has a helmet to do with felling-mills? I know not, answered Sancho; but, in faith, if I might talk as much as I used to do, perhaps I could give such reasons that your worship would see you are mistaken in what you say. How can I be mistaken in what I say, scrupulous traitor? said Don Quixote. Tell me, adest thou not you knight coming towards us on a dapple-grey steed, with a helmet of gold on his head? What I see and perceive, answered Sancho, is only a man on a grey as his name, with something on his head that glitters. Why, that is Mambrino's helmet, said Don Quixote: get aside, and leave me alone to deal with him: you shall see me conclude this adventure (to save time) without speaking a word; and the helmet I have so much longed for, shall be my own. I shall take care to get out of the way, replied Sancho: but, I pray God, I say again, it may not prove another felling-mill adventure. I have already told you, brother, not to mention those felling-mills, nor so much as to think of them any more, said Don Quixote: if you do, I say no more, but I vow to mill your soul for you. Sancho held his peace, fearing lest his master should perform his vow, which had struck him all of a heap.

Now the truth of the matter concerning the helmet, the steed, and the knight, which Don Quixote saw, was this. There were two villages in that neighbourhood, one of them so small, that it had neither shop nor barber, but the other adjoining to it had both, and the barber of the bigger served also the lesser; in which a person indisposed wanted to be let blood, and another to be trimmed; and for this purpose was the barber coming, and brought with him his brass basin. And fortune so ordered it, that as he was upon the road, it began to rain, and, that his hat might not be spoiled (for it was a new one) he clapped the basin on his head, and being new scoured, it glittered half a league off. He rode on a grey ass, as Sancho said; and this was the reason why Don Quixote took the barber for a knight, his ass for a dappled-grey

steed, and his basin for a golden helmet: for he very readily adapted whatever he saw to his knightly extravagances and wild conceits. And when he saw the poor cavalier approach, without staying to reason the case with him, he advanced at lightning's best speed, and couched his lance low, designing to run him through and through. But when he came up to him, without checking the fury of his career, he cried out: Defend yourself, cavalier, or surrender willingly what is so justly my due. The barber, who, not suspecting or apprehending any such thing, saw this phantom coming upon him, had no other way to avoid the thrust of the lance, but to let himself fall down from his ass: and no sooner had he touched the ground, when, leaping up nimbler than a roebuck, he began to scour over the plain, with such speed that the wind could not overtake him. He left the basin on the ground; with which Don Quixote was satisfied, and said, the miscreant had acted discreetly in imitating the beaver, who, finding itself closely pursued by the hunters, tears off, with its teeth, that for which it knows, by natural instinct, it is hunted. He ordered Sancho to take up the helmet, who holding it in his hand, said: Before God, *the basin is a special one, and is as well worth a piece of eight as a farthing.* Then he gave it to his master, who immediately clapped it on his head, twirling it about to find the visor: and not finding it, he said: Doubtless the pagan for whom this famous helmet was first forged, must have had a prodigious large head; and the worst of it is, that one half is wanting. When Sancho heard the basin called an helmet, he could not forbear laughing; but, recollecting his master's late choler, he checked it in the middle. What dost thou laugh at, Sancho? said Don Quixote. He answered, I laugh to think what a huge head the pagan had, who owned this helmet, which is, for all the world, just like a barber's basin. Knowest thou, Sancho, what I take to be the case? This famous piece, this enchanted helmet, by some strange accident, must

have fallen into the hands of some one, who, being ignorant of its true value, and not considering what he did, seeing it to be the purest gold, has melted down the one half for lacre's sake, and of the other half made this, which, as you say, does look like a barber's basin: but, be it what it will, to me, who knows it, its transformation signifies nothing: for I will get it put to rights in the first town where there is a smith, and in such sort, that even that, which the god of smiths made and forged for the god of battles¹, shall not surpass, nor equal it; in the meantime, I will wear it as I can; for something is better than nothing; and the rather, since it will be more than sufficient to defend me from stones. It will so, said Sancho, if they do not throw them with slings, as they did in the battle of the two armies, when they crossed your worship's chops, and broke the cruet, in which was contained that most blessed drach which made me vomit up my guts. I am in no great pain for having lost it, for you know, Sancho, said Don Quixote, I have the receipt by heart. So have I too, answered Sancho; but if ever I make or try it again while I live, may I never stir from this place. Besides, I do not intend to expose myself to the hazard of standing in need of it; for I intend to keep myself, with all my five senses, from being wounded, or from wounding anybody. As to being tossed again in a blanket, I say nothing: for it is difficult to prevent such mishaps: and if they do come, there is nothing to be done, but to shrug up one's shoulders, hold one's breath, shut one's eyes, and let one's self go whither fortune and the blanket please to toss one. You are no Christian, good Sancho, said Don Quixote, at hearing this: for you never forget an injury once done you: but know, it is inherent in generous and noble hearts to lay no stress upon trifles. What leg have you lamed, what rib, or what head have you broken, that you

¹ Vulcan forged arms for Menom, for Achilles, and even for Arctus. but not for Mars, apparently.

replied Sancho, that I could not want them more, if they were for my own proper person. And so saying, he proceeded, with that licence, to an exchange of caparsons¹, and made his own beast three parts, in four² the better for his new furniture. Thus done, they breakfasted on the remains of the plunder of the sumpter-mule, and drank of the water of the fulling-mills, without turning their faces to look at them, such was their abhorrence of them for the fright they had put them in. Their choler and hunger being thus allayed, they mounted, and without resolving to follow any particular road (as is the custom of knights-errant) they put on whithersoever Rosinante's will led him, which drew after it that of his master, and also that of the ass, which followed, in love and good fellowship, wherever he led the way. Notwithstanding which, they soon turned again into the great road, which they followed at a venture, without any other design.

As they thus sauntered on, Sancho said to his master: Sir, will your worship be pleased to indulge me the liberty of a word or two; for, since you imposed on me that harsh command of silence, sundry things have rotted in my breast, and I have one jest now at my tongue's end, that I would not for any thing should miscarry. Out with it, said Don Quixote, and be brief in thy discourse; for none that is long can be pleasing. I say then, Sir, answered Sancho, that for some days past, I have been considering how little is gained by wandering up and down in quest of those adventures your worship is seeking through these dreets and cross-ways, where, though you overcome and achieve the most perilous, there is nobody to see or know anything of them; so that they must remain in perpetual oblivion, to the prejudice

¹ In the original, *mutatio caparum*—the technical ecclesiastical term to describe the cardinals' change of surbonds for silk hoods at Whitsuntide.

² "Battered by a third and a fifth of the estate" would be a more exact rendering of the legal phrase in the original.

not give me his daughter to wife, until he is first very well assured that I am such, though my renowned actions should deserve it ever so well. So that, through this defect, I am afraid I shall lose that which my arm has richly deserved. It is true, indeed, I am a gentleman of an ancient family, possessed of a real estate of one hundred and twenty crowns a year*, and perhaps the sage, who writes my history, may so brighten up my kindred and genealogy, that I may be found the fifth or sixth in descent from a king. For you must know, Sancho, that there are two sorts of lineages in the world. Some there are, who derive their pedigrees from princes and monarchs, whom time has reduced, by little and little, until they have ended in a point, like a pyramid reversed: others have had poor and low beginnings, and have risen by degrees, until at last they have become great lords. So that the difference lies in this, that some have been what now they are not, and others are now what they were not before; and who knows but I may be one of the former, and that upon examination, my origin may be found to have been great and glorious; with which the king of my father-in-law, that is to be, ought to be satisfied: and though he should not be satisfied, the infant is to be so in love with me, that, in spite of her father, she is to receive me for her lord and husband, though she certainly knew I was the son of a water-carrier; and in case she should not, then is the time to take her away by force, and convey her whither I please; and time or death will put a period to the displeasure of her parents.

Here, said Sancho, comes in properly what some naughty people say, 'never stand begging for that which you may take by force', though this other is nearer to the purpose; 'a leap from a hedge is better

* Entitled to the fine of five hundred *sueldos* (the sum payable to any 'gentleman' who had been injured morally or materially), or 'entitled to a grant of five hundred *does* for services in the field'. Both interpretations legitimate.

than the prayer of a good man'. I say this, because, if my lord the king, your worship's father-in-law, should not vouchsafe to yield unto you my lady the infanta, there is no more to be done, as your worship says, but to steal and carry her off. But the mischief is, that while peace is making, and before you can enjoy the kingdom quietly, the poor squire may go whistle for his reward; unless the damsel go-between, who is to be his wife, goes off with the infanta, and he share his misfortune with her, until it shall please heaven to ordain otherwise: for I believe his master may immediately give her to him for his lawful spouse. That you may depend upon, said Don Quixote. Since it is so, answered Sancho, there is no more to be done but to commend ourselves to God and let things take their course. God grant it, answered Don Quixote, as I desire and you need, and let him be wretched who thinks himself so. Let him, in God's name, said Sancho: for I am an Old Christian, and that is enough to qualify me to be an earl. Aye, and more than enough, said Don Quixote: but it matters not whether you are or no; for I being a king, can easily bestow nobility on you, without your buying it, or doing me the least service: and in creating you an earl, I make you a gentleman of course; and say what they will, in good faith, they must style you 'your lordship', though it grieved them never so much. Do you think, quoth Sancho, I should not know how to give authority to the indignity? Dignity, you should say, and not indignity, said his master. So let it be, answered Sancho Panza; I say, I should do well enough with it; for I assure you I was once head of a company, and the head's gown became me so well, that everybody said I had a presore fit to be warden of the said company. Then what will it be when I am arrayed in a duke's robe, all shining in gold and pearls, like a foreign count? I am of opinion folks will come a hundred leagues to see me. You will make a goodly appearance, indeed, said Don Quixote: but it will be necessary to trim your beard

a little oftener: for it is so rough and frowzy, that, if you do not shave with a razor every other day at least, they will discover what you are a musket shot off. Why, said Sancho, it is but taking a barber into the house, and giving him wages, and if there be occasion, I will make him follow me like a gentleman of the horse to a grandee. How came you to know, demanded Don Quixote, that grandees have their gentlemen of the horse to follow them? I will tell you, said Sancho: some years ago I was about the court for a month, and there I saw a very little gentleman riding backward and forward, who, they said, was a very great lord¹: a man followed him on horse-back, turning about as he turned, that one would have thought he had been his tail. I asked why that man did not ride by the other's side, but kept always behind him? they answered me, that it was his gentleman of the horse, and that noblemen commonly have such to follow them; and from that day to this I have never forgotten it. You are in the right, said Don Quixote, and in the same manner you may carry about your barber: for all customs do not arise together, nor were they invented at once; and you may be the first earl, who carried about his barber after him, and indeed it is a greater trust to shave the board than to saddle a horse. Leave the business of the barber to my care, said Sancho; and let it be your worship's to procure yourself to be a king, and to make me an earl. So it shall be, answered Don Quixote, and lifting up his eyes, he saw what will be told in the following chapter

¹ This 'little gentleman' is conjectured to be Don Pedro Telles de Giron, Duke of Osuna, subsequently Viceroy of Naples.

CHAPTER XXII

How Don Quixote set at liberty several unfortunate persons, who were carrying, much against their wills, to a place they did not like.

CID HAMEY BEN ESQUELI, the Arabian and Manchegan author, relates, in this most grave, lofty, accurate, delightful, and ingenious history, that presently after those discourses which passed between the famous Don Quixote de la Mancha and Sancho Panza his squire, as they are related at the end of the foregoing chapter, Don Quixote lifted up his eyes, and saw coming on, in the same road, about a dozen men on foot, strung like beads in a row, by the necks, in a great iron chain, and all handcuffed. There came also with them two men on horseback and two on foot, those on horseback armed with firelocks, and those on foot with pikes and swords, and Sancho Panza, spying them, said: This is a chain of galley-slaves, persons forced by the king to the galleys. How! persons forced! quoth Don Quixote; is it possible the king should force anybody? I say not so, answered Sancho, but that they are persons condemned by the law for their crimes to serve the king in the galleys per force. In short, replied Don Quixote, however it be, still they are going by force, and not with their own liking. It is so, said Sancho. Then, said his master, here the execution of my office takes place, to defeat violence, and to succour and relieve the miserable. Consider, Sir, quoth Sancho, that justice, that is, the king himself, does no violence nor injury to such persons, but only punishes them for their crimes.

By this the chain of galley-slaves were come up, and Don Quixote, in most courteous terms, desired of the guard that they would be pleased to inform and tell him the cause or causes why they conducted

those persons in that manner. One of the guards on horseback answered, that they were slaves belonging to his majesty, and going to the galleys, which was all he could say, or the other need know of the matter. For all that, replied Don Quixote, I should be glad to know from each of them in particular the cause of his misfortune. To these he added such other courteous expressions to induce them to tell him what he desired, that the other horseman said: Though we have here the record and certificate of the sentence of each of these wretches, this is no time to produce and read them: draw near, Sir, and ask it of themselves; they may inform you if they please; and inform you they will, for they are such as take a pleasure both in acting and relating rogues' tales. With this leave (which Don Quixote would have taken though they had not given it) he drew near to the chain, and demanded of the first for what offence he marched in such evil plight? He answered, that he went in that manner for being in love. For that alone? replied Don Quixote: if they send folks to the galleys for being in love, I might long since have been rowing in them. It was not such love as your worship imagines, said the galley-slave: mine was the being so deeply enamoured of a basket of fine linen, and embracing it so close, that, if justice had not taken it from me by force, I should not have parted with it by my goodwill to this very day. I was taken in the fact, so there was no place for the torture; the process was short; they accommodated my shoulders with a hundred lashes, and have sent me, by way of supplement, for three years to the *garepas*, and there is an end of it. What are the *garepas*? quoth Don Quixote. The *garepas* are galleys answered the slave, who was a young man about twenty-four years of age, and said he was born at Madrid. Don Quixote put the same question to the second, who returned no answer, he was so melancholy and dejected: but the first answered for him, and said: This gentleman gives for being a canary bird, I mean, for being a muskian and

a singer. How so, replied Don Quixote, are men sent to the galleys for being musicians and singers? Yes, Sir, replied the slave, for there is nothing worse than to sing in an agony. Nay, said Don Quixote, I have heard say, 'Who sings in grief, procures relief'. This is the very reverse, said the slave; for here, he who sings once, weeps all his life after. I do not understand that, said Don Quixote. One of the guards said to him: Señor cavalier, to sing in an agony, means, in the cant of these rogues, to confess upon the rack. The offender was put to the torture, and confessed his crime, which was that of being a *quintero*, that is, a stealer of cattle; and, because he confessed, he is sentenced for six years to the galleys, besides two hundred lashes he has already received on the shoulders. And he is always so pensive and sad, because the rest of the rogues, both those behind, and those before, abuse, vilify, flout, and despise him for confessing, and not having the courage to say No: for, say they, No contains the same number of letters as Ay; and it is lucky for a delinquent, when his life or death depends upon his own tongue, and not upon proofs and witnesses; and, for my part, I think they are in the right of it. And I think so too, answered Don Quixote; who, passing on to the third, interrogated him as he had done the others: who answered very readily, and with very little concern; I am going to Mendance the grapes for five years, for wanting ten ducats. I will give twenty with all my heart, said Don Quixote, to redeem you from this misery. That, said the slave, is like having money at sea, and dying for hunger, where there is nothing to be bought with it. I say that, because, if I had been possessed in time of those twenty ducats you now offer me, I would have so greased the clerk's pen, and sharpened my advocate's wit, that I should have been this day upon the market-place of Zorodóver in Toledo, and not upon this road, coupled and dragged like a hound: but God is great; patience: I say no more.

Don Quixote passed on to the fourth, who was a

man of a venerable aspect, with a white beard reaching below his breast; who, hearing himself asked the cause of his coming thither, began to weep, and answered not a word: but the fifth lent him a tongue, and said: This honest gentleman goes for four years to the galleys, after having gone in the usual procession, pompously appparelled and mounted. That is, I suppose, said Sancho, put to public shame. Right, replied the slave; and the offence, for which he underwent that punishment, was his having been a broker of the ear, yea, and of the whole body: in effect, I would say that the cavalier goes for pumping, and exercising the trade of a conjurer. Had it been merely for pumping, said Don Quixote, he had not deserved to row in, but to command, and be a general of the galleys; for the office of a pump is not a slight business, but an employment fit only for discreet persons, and a most necessary one in a well regulated commonwealth; and none but persons well-born ought to exercise it, and in truth there should be inspectors and controllers of it, as there are of other offices, with a certain number of them deputed, like exchange-brokers; by which means many abuses would be prevented, which now happen, because this office and profession is in the hands of foolish and ignorant persons, such as silly waiting women, pagers, and buffoons of a few years standing, and of small experience, who, at the greatest exigency, and when there is occasion for the most dexterous management and address, suffer the wheel to freeze between the fingers and the mouth, and scarcely know which is their right hand. I could go on, and assign the reasons, why it would be expedient to make choice of proper persons, to exercise an office so necessary in the commonwealth: but this is no proper place for it, and I may one day or other lay this matter before those, who can provide a remedy. At present I only say, that the concern I felt at seeing those grey hairs, and that venerable countenance in so much distress for pumping, is entirely removed by the rational character of his being a wizard. Though I very

we'll know, there are no sorceries in the world, which can affect and force the will, as some foolish people imagine; for our will is free, and no herb nor charm can compel it. What some silly women and crafty knaves are wont to do is, with certain mixtures and poisons, to turn people's brains, under pretence that they have power to make one fall in love: it being, as I say, a thing impossible to force the will. It was so, said the honest old fellow: and truly, Sir, as to being a wizard, I am not guilty, but as for being a pump, I cannot deny it, but I never thought there was any harm in it; for the whole of my intention was, that all the world should divert themselves, and live in peace and quiet, without quarrels or troubles, but this good design could not save me from going whence I shall have no hope of returning, considering I am so laden with years, and so troubled with the stranguary, which leaves me not a moment's repose, and here he began to weep, as at first; and Sancho was so moved with compassion, that he drew out from his bosom a real, and gave it him as an alms.

Don Quixote went on, and demanded of another what his offence was, who answered, not with less, but much more alacritty than the former: I am going for making a little too free with two she-cousins-german of mine, and with two other cousins-german not mine. In short, I carried the jest so far with them all, that the result of it was the increasing of kindred so intricately, that no carrier can make it out. The whole was proved upon me; I had neither friends nor money, my wind-pipe was in the utmost danger; I was sentenced to the galleys for six years. I submit—it is the punishment of my fault; I am young; and life may last, and time brings everything about: if your worship or cavalier, has anything about you to relieve us poor wretches, God will repay you in heaven, and we will make it the business of our prayers to beseech him, that your worship's life and health may be as long and prosperous, as your goodly presence deserves. This slave was in the habit of a student; and one of the guards

answered Passamonte, to go on fair and softly; for your superiors did not give you that staff to misuse us poor wretches here, but to conduct and carry us whither his majesty commands: now by the life of— I say no more; but the spots which were contracted in the inn, may perhaps one day come out in the bucking. and let every one hold his tongue, and live well, and speak better; and let us march on, for that has held us long enough.

The community lifted up his staff to strike Passamonte in return for his threats; but Don Quixote interposed, and desired he would not abuse him, since it was but fair, that he who had his hands so tied up, should have his tongue a little at liberty. Then turning about to the whole string he said: From all you have told me, dearest brethren, I clearly gather, that though it be only to punish you for your crimes, you do not much relish the punishment you are going to suffer, and that you go to it much against the grain and against your good liking: and, perhaps, the jealousy of him who was put to the torture, the man's want of money, and the other's want of friends, and in short the judge's wresting of the law, may have been the cause of your ruin, and that you did not come off, as in justice you ought to have done. And I have so strong a persuasion that this is the truth of the case, that my mind prompts, and even forces me, to show to you the effect, for which heaven threw me into the world and ordained me to profess the order of chivalry, which I do profess, and the vow I made in it to succour the needy, and those oppressed by the mighty. But knowing that it is one part of profane, not to do that by foul means, which may be done by law, I will retreat these gentlemen your guard, and the community, that they will be pleased to leave, and let you go in peace, there being people enough to serve the king for better reasons; for it seems to me a hard case to make slaves of those whom God and nature made free. Now, gentlemen, said Don Quixote, these poor men have married

no efforts against you: let every one answer for his sins in the other world: there is a God in heaven, who does not neglect to chastise the wicked, nor to reward the good; neither is it fitting that honest men should be the executioners of others, they having no interest in the matter. I request this of you in this calm and gentle manner, that I may have some ground to thank you for your compliance. but if you do it not willingly, this lance, and this sword, with the vigour of my arm, shall compel you to do it. This is pleasant talking, answered the compeer; an admirable conceit he has hit upon at least: he would have us let the king's prisoners go, as if we had authority to set them free, or be to command us to do it. Go on your way, señor, and adjust that beam on your noddie, and do not go feeling for three legs in a cat. You are a cat, and a rat, and a rascal to boot, answered Don Quixote; and so, with a word and a blow, he attacked him so suddenly, that before he could stand upon his defence, he threw him to the ground, much wounded with a thrust of the lance. And it happened luckily for Don Quixote, that this was one of the two who carried firelocks. The rest of the guards were astonished and confounded at the unexpected encounter; but recovering themselves, those on horseback drew their swords, and those on foot laid hold on their javelins, and fell upon Don Quixote, who waited for them with much valour; and doubtless it had gone ill with him, if the galley-slaves, perceiving the opportunity which offered itself to them of recovering their liberty, had not procured it, by breaking the chain with which they were linked together. The hurry was such, that the guards now endeavouring to prevent the slaves from getting loose, and now engaging with Don Quixote, who attacked them, did nothing to any purpose. Bascho, for his part, carried on looking Cane de Pasmonta, who was the first that leaped free and down-barricaded upon the plain; and sitting upon the fallen summary, he took away his sword and his gun, with which, leveling it, first at one, and then at another,

without discharging it, he cleared the field of all the guard, who fled no less from Passamonte's gun than from the shower of stones which the slaves, now at liberty, poured upon them.

Sancho was much grieved at what had happened; for he imagined that the fugitives would give notice of the fact to the Holy Brotherhood, which, upon ringing a bell, would rally out in quest of the delinquents; and so he told his master, and begged of him to be gone from thence immediately, and take shelter among the trees and rocks of the neighbouring mountain. It is well, said Don Quixote; but I know what is now expedient to be done. Then having called all the slaves together, who were in a fright, and had stripped the commissary to his buff, they gathered in a ring about him to know his pleasure, when he thus addressed them. To be thankful for benefits received is the property of persons well born; and one of the sins, at which God is most offended, is ingratitude. This I say, gentlemen, because you have already found by manifest experience, the benefit you have received at my hands; in recompense whereof my will and pleasure is, that, laden with this chain, which I have taken from your necks, you immediately set out, and go to the city of Toboso, and there present yourselves before the lady Dulcinea del Toboso, and tell her, that her Knight of the Sorrowful Figure sends you to present his service to her; and recount to her every tittle and circumstance of this memorable adventure, to the point of setting you at your wished-for liberty: this done, you may go, in God's name, whither you list.

Since de Passamonte answered for them all, and said: What your worship command us, noble Sir, and our deliverer, is of all impossibilities the most impossible to be complied with: for we dare not be seen together on the road, but must go separate and alone, each man by himself, and endeavour to hide ourselves in the very bowels of the earth from the Holy Brotherhood, who doubtless will be out in quest of us. What your worship may, and ought to do,

is to change this service and duty to the lady Dulcinea del Toboso into a certain number of Ave-Marias and Credos, which we will say for the success of your design; and this is what we may do, by day or by night, lying or reposing, in peace or in war: but to think that we will now return to the brick-kilns of Egypt, I say, to take our chains, and put ourselves on the way to Toboso, is to think it is now night already, whereas it is not yet ten o'clock in the morning; and to expect this from us is to expect pears from an elm-tree. I vow then, quoth Don Quixote, already enraged, Don son of a whore, Don Guernillo de Parapilla, or however you call yourself, you alone shall go with your tail between your legs, and the whole chain upon your back. Pasaquente, who was not over passive, and had already perceived that Don Quixote was not wiser than he should be, since he committed such an extravagance as the setting them at liberty, seeing himself treated in this manner, winked upon his comrades; and they all stepping aside, began to rain such a shower of stones upon Don Quixote, that he could not contrive to cover himself with his buckler; and poor Rocinante made no more of the spur than if he had been made of brass. Sancho got behind his ass, and thereby sheltered himself from the storm and hail that poured upon them both. Don Quixote could not screen himself so well but that he received I know not how many thumps on the body, with such force that they brought him to the ground; and scarcely was he fallen, when the student set upon him, and taking the basin from off his head, gave him three or four blows with it on the shoulders, and then struck it as often against the ground, whereby he almost broke it to pieces. They stripped him of a jacket he wore over his armour, and would have stripped him of his trousers too, if the ground had not hindered him. They took from Sancho his clock, leaving him in his doublet; and sharing among themselves the spoils of the battle, they made the best of their way off, each a several way, with more care how to escape the holy

Brotherhood they were in fear of, than to load themselves with the chain, and to go and present themselves before the lady Dulcinea del Toboso.

The ass and Rosinante, Sancho and Don Quixote, remained by themselves; the ass hanging his head and pensive, and now and then shaking his ears, thinking that the storm of stones was not yet over, but still whizzing about his head; Rosinante stretched along close by his master, he also being knocked down with another stone; Sancho in his doublet, and afraid of the Holy Brotherhood: and Don Quixote very much out of humour to find himself so ill treated by those very persons to whom he had done so much good.

CHAPTER XXIII

Of what befell the renowned Don Quixote in the Salto Mountain, being one of the most curious and uncommon adventures of any related in this faithful history.

DON QUIXOTE, finding himself so ill treated, said to his squire: Sancho, I have always heard it said, that to do good to low fellows is to throw water into the sea. Had I believed what you said to me, I might have prevented this trouble; but it is done, I must have patience, and take warning from henceforward. Your worship will as much take warning, answered Sancho, as I am a Turk: but since you say, that, if you had believed me, you had avoided this mischief, believe me now, and you will avoid a greater; for, let me tell you, there is no putting off the Holy Brotherhood with chivalries: they do not care two farthings for all the knights-errant in the world; and know, that I fancy already I hear their arrows whizzing about my ears. Thou art naturally a coward, Sancho, said Don Quixote; but that you may not say I am

abstinate, and that I never do what you advise, I will or once take your counsel, and get out of the reach of that fury you fear so much; but upon this one condition, that neither living nor dying, you shall ever tell anybody that I retired and withdrew myself from this peril out of fear, but that I did it out of mere compliance with your entreaties: for if you say otherwise, you will lie in so doing, and from this time to that, and from that time to that, I tell you, you lie, and will lie, every time you say or think it: and reply no more; for the bare thought of withdrawing and retreating from any danger, and especially from this, which seems to carry some or no appearance of fear with it, makes me, that I now stand prepared to abide here, and expect alone, not only that holy brotherhood you talk of and fear, but the brothers of the twelve tribes of Israel, and the seven Maccabees and Castor and Pollux, and even all the brothers and brotherhoods that are in the world. Sir, answered Sancho, retreating is not running away, nor is staying wisdom, when the danger overbalances the hope: and it is the part of wise men to secure themselves to-day for to-morrow, and not to venture all upon one throw. And know, though I am but a clown and a peasant, I have yet some smattering of what is called good conduct: therefore, repent not of having taken my advice, but get upon Rocinante, if you can, and if not, I will assist you; and follow me; for my noddle tells me, that for the present we have more need of heels than hands. Don Quixote mounted, without replying a word more; and Sancho leading the way upon his ass, they entered on one side of the Sable Mountain¹, which was close by, it being Sancho's intention to pass quite across it, and to get out at Vico or Almodóvar del Campo, and to hide themselves for some days among those craggy rocks, that they might not be found, if the Holy Brotherhood should come in quest of them. He was encouraged to this by seeing that the provisions carried by his ass had

¹ The Sierra Morena range.

escaped safe from the skirmish with the galley-slaves, which he looked upon as a miracle, considering what the slaves took away, and how narrowly they searched.

That night they got into the heart of the Sable Mountain, where Sancho thought it convenient to pass that night, and also some days, at least as long as the provisions he had with him lasted: so they took up their lodging between two great rocks, and amidst abundance of cork-trees. But destiny, which, according to the opinion of those who have not the light of the true faith, guides, fashions, and disposes all things its own way, so ordered it, that Gines de Pasamonte, the famous cheat and robber, whom the valour and madness of Don Quixote had delivered from the chain, being justly afraid of the Holy Brotherhood, took it into his head to hide himself in those very mountains; and his fortune and his fear carried him to the same place where Don Quixote's and Sancho Panza's had carried them, just at the time he could distinguish who they were, and at the instant they were fallen asleep. And as the wicked are always ungrateful, and necessity puts people upon applying to shifts, and the present conveniency overcomes the consideration of the future, Gines, who had neither gratitude nor good nature, resolved to steal Sancho Panza's ass, making no account of Rocinante, as a thing neither pawnable nor saleable. Sancho Panza slept; the varlet stole his ass, and before it was day he was too far off to be found.

Aurora issued forth, rejoicing the earth, and addressing Sancho Panza, who missed his Dapple, and finding himself deprived of him, began the dolefullest lamentation in the world; and so loud it was, that Don Quixote awaked at his cries, and heard him say: O child of my bowels, born in my own house, the joy of my children, the entertainment of my wife, the envy of my neighbours, the relief of my burdens, and lastly, the half of my maintenance! for, with six and twenty maravedis I earned every day by thy means, I had supported my family. Don Quixote

hearing the lamentation, and learning the cause, comforted Sancho with the best reasons he could, and desired him to have patience, promising to give him a bill of exchange for three young asses out of five he had left at home. Sancho was comforted here with, wiped away his tears, moderated his sighs, and thanked his master for the kindness he showed him. Don Quixote's heart leaped for joy at entering into the mountains, such kind of places seeming to him the most likely to furnish him with those adventures he was in quest of. They recalled to his memory the marvellous events which had befallen knights-errant in such solitudes and deserts. He went on meditating on these things, and so wrapped and transported in them that he remembered nothing else. Nor had Sancho any other concern (now that he thought he was out of danger) than to appease his hunger with what remained of the clerical spoils: and thus, sitting sideling, as women do, upon his beast¹, he jogged after his master, emptying the bag, and stuffing his paunch; and while he was thus employed, he would not have given a farthing to have met with any new adventure whatever.

Being thus busied, he lifted up his eyes, and saw

¹ The translation follows the text of the second edition. As the theft of Sancho Panza's ass is recorded in the previous paragraph, and as it is not recovered till we reach Chapter xix, it is plain that it is a mistake to describe Sancho as riding on it at this point. The account of the episode in the first edition is mutilated, and the blunder appears to have been made by an unauthorized person, who took it on himself to remedy the defect. An attempt to correct the inconsistency was made during the author's lifetime, but not by the author himself.

The translator suggested that the passage was a 'burlesque on the *History of Montblanc, Knight of the Orde*, ch. 23', and added that 'if Cervantes had this meaning (as most probably he had), the critics were fairly hit'. This theory is untenable, for, in Chapter xxvii of the Second Part, Cervantes admits the mistake, and throws the responsibility on the printers.

That doth condemn me to severest pains.
 But if love be a god, we must suppose
 His knowledge boundless, nor can cruelty
 With reason be imputed to a god.
 Whence then the grief, the cruel pains I feel?
 Chloë, art thou the cause? impossible!
 Such ill can ne'er subsist with so much good;
 Nor does high heaven's behest ordain my fall.
 I soon shall die, my fate's inevitable;
 For where we know not the disease's cause,
 A miracle alone can hat the cure.

From this parcel of verses, quoth Sancho, nothing can be collected, unless by the clue here given, you can come at the whole bottom. What clue is here? said Don Quixote. I thought, said Sancho, your worship named a clue. No, I said Chloë¹, answered Don Quixote; and doubtless that is the name of the lady whom the author of this sonnet complains of; and, in faith, either he is a tolerable poet, or I know but little of the art. So, then, said Sancho, your worship understands making verses too? Yes, and better than you think, answered Don Quixote; and you shall see I do, when you carry a letter to my lady Dulcinea del Toboso, written in verse from top to bottom: for know, Sancho, that all, or most of the knights-errant of time past, were great poets, and great musicians; these two accomplishments, or rather graces, being annexed to lovers-errant. True it is, that the couplets of former knights have more of passion than elegance in them. Pray, Sir, read on further, said Sancho; perhaps you may find something to satisfy us. Don Quixote turned over the leaf, and said: This is in prose, and seems to be a letter. A letter of business, Sir? demanded Sancho. By the beginning, it seems rather one of love, answered Don Quixote. Then pray, Sir, read it aloud, said Sancho; for I mightily relish these love matters.

¹ The translator's rendering of *lizo* and *Filz* by 'clue' and 'Chloë' has been adopted by all his successors.

the hunger, thirst, and weariness, he had undergone in his good master's service.

The Knight of the Sorrowful Figure was extremely desirous to know who was the owner of the portmanteau, conjecturing by the sonnet and the letter, by the money in gold, and by the fineness of the shirt, that it must doubtless belong to some lover of condition, whom the slight and ill treatment of his mistress had reduced to terms of despair. But there being no one, in that uninhabitable and craggy place, to give him any information, he thought of nothing but going forward, which way soever *Rosante* pleased, and that was wherever he found the way easiest; still possessed with the imagination that he could not fail of meeting with some strange adventure among those briars and rocks.

As he thus went on moving, he espied, on the top of a hillock, just before him, a man skipping from crag to crag, and from bush to bush, with extraordinary agility. He seemed to be naked, his beard black and bushy, his hair long and tangled, his legs and feet bare; on his thighs he wore a pair of breeches of sad-coloured velvet, but so ragged, that his skin appeared through several parts. His head was bare; and, though he passed with the swiftness already mentioned, the Knight of the Sorrowful Figure saw and observed all these particulars; but though he endeavoured to follow him, he could not; for it was not given to *Rosante's* freeness to make way through those craggy places; and besides, he was naturally slow-footed and phlegmatic. *Don Quixote* immediately fancied this must be the owner of the saddle-cushion and portmanteau, and so resolved to go in search of him, though he were sure to wander a whole year among those mountains before he should find him; wherefore he commanded *Sancho* to cut short over one side of the mountain, while he coasted on the other, in hope that by this diligence they might light on the man who had so suddenly vanished out of their sight. I cannot do it, answered *Sancho*;

and presently, on their left hand, appeared a good number of goats, and behind them, on the top of the mountain, the goatherd that kept them, who was an old man. Don Quixote called aloud to him, and desired him to come down to them. He answered as loudly, and demanded who had brought them to that desolate place, seldom or never trodden, unless by the feet of goats, wolves, or other wild beasts, which frequented those mountains. Sancho replied, if he could come down, they would satisfy his curiosity in everything. The goatherd descended, and coming to the place where Don Quixote was, he said: I will lay a wager you are riving the hackney mule which lies dead in this bottom: in good faith it has lain there these six months already. Pray tell me, have you lighted on his master herabouts? We have lighted on nothing, answered Don Quixote, but a saddle-cushion and a small portmanteau, which we found not far from hence. I found it too, answered the goatherd, but would by no means take it up, nor come near it, for fear of some mischief, and lest I should be charged with having stolen it; for the devil is subtle, and lays stumbling-blocks and occasions of falling in our way, without our knowing how or how not. I say so too, answered Sancho; for I also found it, and would not go within a stone's throw of it; there I left it, and there it lies as it was for me; for I will not have a dog with a bell. Tell me, honest man, said Don Quixote, do you know who is the owner of these goods? What I know, said the goatherd, is, that six months ago, more or less, there arrived at the huts of certain shepherds, about three leagues from this place, a grotesque and comely youth mounted on this very mule, which lies dead here, and with the same saddle-cushion and portmanteau, you say you found, and touched not. He inquired of us, which part of this hill was the most craggy, and least accessible. We told him it was that where we now are; and so it is, truly; for if you were to go on about half a league further, perhaps you would not

early find the way out : and I admire how you could get even hither, since there is no road nor path that leads to this place. The youth then, I say, hearing our answer, turned about his mule, and made towards the place we showed him, leaving us all pleased with his goodly appearance, and in admiration at his question, and the haste he made to reach the mountain ; and, from that time, we saw him not again, until, some days after, he issued out upon one of our shepherds, and, without saying a word, came up to him, and gave him several cuffs and kicks, and immediately went to our sumpter-ass, which he plundered of all the bread and cheese she carried ; and, this done, he fled again to the rocks with wonderful swiftness. Some of us goatherds knowing this, went almost two days in quest of him, through the most intricate part of this craggy hill ; and at last we found him lying in the hollow of a large cork-tree. He came out to us with much gentleness, his garment torn, and his face so disfigured and scorched by the sun, that we should scarcely have known him, but that his clothes, ragged as they were, with the description given us of them, assured us he was the person we were in search after. He saluted us courteously, and in few, but complainant terms, bade us not wonder to see him in that condition, to which he was necessitated, in order to perform a certain penance enjoined him for his manifold sins. We entreated him to tell us who he was, but we could get no more out of him. We desired him likewise, that, when he stood in need of food, without which he could not subsist, he would let us know where we might find him, and we would very freely and willingly bring him some ; and if this was not to his liking, that, at least, he would come out and ask for it, and not take it away from the shepherds by force. He thanked us for our offers, begged pardon for the violence passed, and promised from thenceforth to ask it for God's sake, without giving disturbance to anybody. As to the place of his abode, he said, he had no other than what chance

presented him, wherever the night overtook him; and he ended his discourse with such melting tears, that we who heard him, must have been very stones not to have borne him company in them, considering what he was the first time we saw him, and what we saw him now to be; for, as I before said, he was a very comely and graceful youth, and by his courteous behaviour and civil discourse, showed himself to be well born, and a court-like person; for though we who heard him were country-people, his genteel carriage was sufficient to discover itself, even to rusticity. In the height of his discourse he stopped short, and stood silent, turning his eyes to the ground for a considerable time, whilst we all stood still in suspense, waiting to see what that fit of distraction would end in, with no small compassion at the sight: for by his demeanour, his staring, and fixing his eyes unmoved for a long while on the ground, and then shutting them again; by his biting his lips, and arching his brows, we easily judged that some fit of madness was come upon him; and he quickly confirmed us in our suspicions; for he started up with great fury from the ground on which he had just before thrown himself, and fell upon the first that stood next him, with such resolution and rage, that, if we had not taken him off, he would have bit and cuffed him to death. And all this while he cried out: *Ah traitor Fernando!* here, here you shall pay for the wrong you have done me; *these hands shall cut out that heart, in which all kinds of wickedness, and especially deceit and treachery, do lurk and are harboured:* and to these he added other expressions, all tending to revile the said Fernando, and charging him with falsehood and treachery. We disengaged him from our companion at last, with no small difficulty; and he, without saying a word, left us, and plunged amidst the thickest of the bushes and briars; so that we could not possibly follow him. By this we guessed that his madness returned by fits, and that some person, whose name he *Fernando*, must have done him some injury of an

determined not to quit these mountains until I had found you, and learned from your own mouth, whether the affliction, which, by your leading this strange life, seems to possess you, may admit of any remedy, and, if need were, to use all possible diligence to compass it; and though your misfortune were of that sort which keeps the door locked against all kind of comfort, I intended to assist you in bewailing and bemoaning it the best I could; for it is some relief in misfortunes to find those who pity them. And if you think my intention deserves to be taken kindly, and with any degree of acknowledgement, I beseech you, Sir, by the abundance of civility I see you are possessed of; I conjure you also by whatever in this life you have loved, or do love most, to tell me who you are, and what has brought you hither, to live and die like a brute beast, amidst these solitudes; as you seem to intend, by frequenting them in a manner so unbecoming of yourself, if I may judge by your person, and what remains of your attire. And I swear, added Don Quixote, by the order of knight-hood I have received, though unworthy and a sinner, and by the profession of a knight-errant, if you gratify me in this, to serve you to the utmost of what my profession obliges me to, either in remedying your misfortune, if a remedy may be found, or in assisting you to bewail it, as I have already promised. The Knight of the Wood, hearing him of the Sorrowful Figure, talk in this manner, did nothing but view him and review him, and view him again from head to foot; and when he had surveyed him thoroughly, he said to him: If you have anything to give me to eat, give it me, for God's sake, and when I have eaten, I will do all you command me, in requital for the good wishes you have expressed toward me.

Sancho immediately drew out of his wallet, and the goatherd out of his scrip, some meat, wherewith the Ragged Knight satisfied his hunger, eating what they gave him like a distracted person, so fast, that he took no time between one mouthful and another;

with me, that it became the subject of everybody's discourse; and though I had a great share likewise in the favour and affection of the elder brother, yet they did not come up to that distinguishing manner in which Don Fernando loved and treated me. Now, as there is no secret which is not communicated between friends, and as the intimacy I held with Don Fernando ceased to be barely such by being converted into friendship, he revealed to me all his thoughts and especially one relating to his being in love, which gave him no small disquiet. He loved a country girl, a vassal of his father's: her parents were very rich, and she herself was so beautiful, reserved, discreet, and modest, that no one who knew her could determine in which of these qualifications she most excelled, or was most accomplished. These perfections of the country-maid raised Don Fernando's desires to such a pitch, that he resolved, in order to carry his point, and subdue the chastity of the maiden, to give her his promise to marry her: for, otherwise, it would have been to attempt an impossibility. The obligation I was under to his friendship put me upon using the best reasons, and the most lively examples, I could think of, to divert and dissuade him from such a purpose. But, finding it was all in vain, I resolved to acquaint his father, Duke Ricardo, with the affair. Don Fernando, being sharp-sighted and artful, suspected and feared no less, knowing that I was obliged, as a faithful servant, not to conceal from my lord and master the Duke, a matter so prejudicial to his honour: and therefore, to amuse and deceive me, he said, that he knew no better remedy for effacing the remembrance of the beauty that had so captivated him, than to absent himself for some months; and this absence, he said, should be effected by our going together to my father's house, under pretence, as he would tell the Duke, of seeing and cheapening some very fine horses in our town, which produces the best world. Scarcely had I heard him say this, when, by my own love, I approved of his proposal.

as one of the best concerted imaginable, and should have done so, had it not been so plausible a one, since it afforded me so good an opportunity of returning to see my dear Lucinda. Upon this motive I came into his opinion, and seconded his design, desiring him to put it in execution as soon as possible; since, probably, absence might have its effect in spite of the strongest inclinations. At the very time he made this proposal to me, he had already, as appeared afterwards, enjoyed the maiden, under the title of a husband, and only waited for a convenient season to divulge it with safety to himself, being afraid of what the Duke his father might do, when he should hear of his folly. Now as love in young men is, for the most part, nothing but appetite, and as pleasure is its ultimate end, it is terminated by enjoyment; and what seemed to be love vanishes, because it cannot pass the bounds assigned by nature; whereas true love admits of no limits. I would say, that, when Don Fernando had enjoyed the country girl, his desires grew faint, and his fondness abated; so that, in reality, that absence, which he proposed as a remedy for his passion, he only chose, in order to avoid, what was now no longer agreeable to him. The Duke gave him his leave, and ordered me to bear him company.

We came to our town: my father received him according to his quality; I immediately visited Lucinda; my passion revived, though, in truth, it had been neither dead nor asleep: unfortunately for me, I revealed it to Don Fernando, thinking that, by the laws of friendship, I ought to conceal nothing from him. I expatiated to him, in so lively a manner, on the beauty, good humour, and discretion of Lucinda, that my praise excited in him a desire of seeing a damsel endowed with such fine accomplishments. I complied with it, to my misfortune, and showed her to him one night by the light of a taper at a window, where we two used to converse together. She appeared to him, though in an undress, so charming, as to blot out of his memory all the beauties he had ever seen

with me, that it became the subject of everybody's discourse; and though I had a great share likewise in the favour and affection of the elder brother, yet they did not come up to that distinguishing manner in which Don Fernando loved and treated me. Now as there is no secret which is not communicated between friends, and as the intimacy I held with Don Fernando ceased to be barely such by being converted into friendship, he revealed to me all his thoughts and especially one relating to his being in love, which gave him no small inquiet. He loved a country girl, a vassal of his father's: her parents were very rich, and she herself was so beautiful, reserved, discreet, and modest, that no one who knew her could determine in which of these qualifications she most excelled, or was most accomplished. These perfections of the country-maid raised Don Fernando's desires to such a pitch, that he resolved, in order to carry his point, and subdue the chastity of the maiden, to give her his promise to marry her; for, otherwise, it would have been to attempt an impossibility. The obligation I was under to his friendship put me upon using the best reasons, and the most lively examples, I could think of, to divert and dissuade him from such a purpose. But, finding it was all in vain, I resolved to acquaint his father, Duke Ricardo, with the affair. Don Fernando, being sharp-sighted and artful, suspected and feared no less, knowing that I was obliged as a faithful servant, not to conceal from my lord and master the Duke, a matter so prejudicial to his honour: and therefore, to amuse and deceive me, he said, that he knew no better remedy for effacing the remembrance of the beauty that had so captivated him, than to absent himself for some months; and this absence, he said, should be effected by our going together to my father's house, under pretence, as he would tell the Duke, of seeing and cheapening some very fine horses in our town, which produces the best in the world. Scarcely had I heard him say this, when, prompted by my own love, I approved of his proposal.

as one of the best concerted imaginable, and should have done so, had it not been so plausible a one, since it afforded me so good an opportunity of returning to see my dear Lucinda. Upon this motive I came into his opinion, and seconded his design, desiring him to put it in execution as soon as possible; since, probably, absence might have its effect in spite of the strongest inclinations. At the very time he made this proposal to me, he had already, as appeared afterwards, enjoyed the maiden, under the title of a husband, and only waited for a convenient season to divulge it with safety to himself, being afraid of what the Duke his father might do, when he should hear of his folly. Now as love in young men is, for the most part, nothing but appetite, and as pleasure is its ultimate end, it is terminated by enjoyment; and what seemed to be love vanishes, because it cannot pass the bounds assigned by nature; whereas true love admits of no limits. I would say, that, when Don Fernando had enjoyed the country girl, his desires grew faint, and his fondness abated; so that, in reality, that absence, which he proposed as a remedy for his passion, he only chose, in order to avoid, what was now no longer agreeable to him. The Duke gave him his leave, and ordered me to bear him company.

We came to our town: my father received him according to his quality; I immediately visited Lucinda; my passion revived, though, in truth, it had been neither dead nor asleep: unfortunately for me, I revealed it to Don Fernando, thinking that, by the laws of friendship, I ought to conceal nothing from him. I expatiated to him, in so lively a manner, on the beauty, good humour, and discretion of Lucinda, that my praises excited in him a desire of seeing a damsel endowed with such fine accomplishments. I complied with it, to my misfortune, and showed her to him one night by the light of a taper at a window, where we two used to converse together. She appeared to him, though in an undress, so charming, as to blot out of his memory all the beauties he had ever seen

before. He was struck dumb ; he lost all sense ; he was transported : in short, he fell in love to such a degree, as will appear by the sequel of the story of my misfortunes. And, the more to inflame his desire, which he concealed from me, and disclosed to heaven alone, fortune so ordered it, that he one day found a letter of hers to me, desiring me to demand her of her father in marriage, so ingenious, so modest, and so full of tenderness, that, when he had read it, he declared to me, that he thought in Lucinda alone, were united all the graces of beauty and good sense, which are dispersed and divided among the rest of her sex. True it is (I confess it now) that though I knew what just grounds Don Fernando had to commend Lucinda, I was grieved to hear those commendations from his mouth : I began to fear and suspect him : for he was every moment putting me upon talking of Lucinda, and would begin the discourse himself, though he brought it in never so abruptly : which awakened in me I know not what jealousy : and though I did not fear any change in the goodness and fidelity of Lucinda, yet I could not but dread the very thing they secured me against. Don Fernando procured a sight of the letters I wrote to Lucinda, and her answers, under pretence that he was mightily pleased with the wit of both. Now it fell out, that Lucinda, who was very fond of books of chivalry, having desired me to lend her that of *Amadis de Gaul*—

Scarce had Don Quixote heard him mention books of chivalry, when he said : Had you told me, Sir, at the beginning of your story, that the Lady Lucinda was fond of reading books of chivalry, there would have needed no other exaggeration to convince me of the subtlimity of her understanding ; for it could never have been so excellent as you have described it, had she wanted a relish for such savory reading ; so that, with respect to me it is needless to waste more words in displaying her beauty, worth, and understanding ; for, from only knowing her taste, I pronounce her to

be the most beautiful and the most ingenious woman in the world. And I wish, Sir, that, together with *Amadis de Gaul*, you had sent her the good *Don Ruyel of Greece*; for I know that the lady Lucinda will be highly delighted with Daraida and Garaya, and the witty conceits of the shepherd Darinel; also with those admirable verses of his *Bucolics*¹, which he sung and repeated with so much good humour, wit, and freedom; but the time may come when this fault may be amended, and the reparation may be made, as soon as ever you will be pleased, Sir, to come with me to our town; where I can furnish you with more than three hundred books, that are the delight of my soul, and the entertainment of my life: though, upon second thoughts, I have not one of them left, thanks to the malice of wicked and envious enchanters. Pardon me, Sir, the having given you this interruption, contrary to what I promised: but, when I hear of matters of chivalry and knights-errant, I can as well forbear talking of them, as the beams of the sun can cease to give heat, or those of the moon to moisten. So that, pray excuse me, and go on; for that is of most importance to us at present.

While Don Quixote was saying all this, Cardenio hung down his head upon his breast, with all the signs of being profoundly thoughtful: and though Don Quixote twice desired him to continue his story, he neither lifted up his head, nor answered a word. But after some time, he raised it, and said: I cannot get it out of my mind, nor can any one persuade me to the contrary, and he must be a blockhead who understands or believes otherwise, but that that great villain master Elsiebat lay with Queen Madama². It is false, I swear, answered Don Quixote, in great

¹ These 'bucolics' occur in the Fourth Part of *Don Florisel de Niquea* (Salamanca, 1551).

² A sib for the Infanta Gracinda, in whose household Elsiebat was physician. None of the three Madamas in *Amadis de Gaul* was a queen.

wrath; it is extreme malice, or rather villany, and it is not to be presumed, that so high a princess should lie with a quack; and whoever pretends she did, lies like a very great rascal; and I will make him know it on foot or on horseback, armed or unarmed, by night or by day, or how he pleases. Cardenio sat looking at him very attentively, and, the mad fit being already come upon him, he was in no condition to prosecute his story; neither would Don Quixote have heard him, so disgusted was he at what he had heard of Madama: and strange it was to see him take her part with as much earnestness, as if she had really been his true and natural princess; so far had his cursed books turned his head.

I say, then, that Cardenio, being now mad, and hearing himself called liar and villain, with other such opprobrious words, did not like the jest; and, catching up a stone that lay close by him, he gave Don Quixote such a thump with it on the breast, that it tumbled him down backward. Sancho Panza, seeing his master handled in this manner, attacked the madman with his clenched fist; and the Ragged Knight received him in such sort, that with one blow he laid him along at his feet; and presently, getting upon him, he pounded his ribs, much to his own heart's content. The goatherd, who endeavoured to defend him, *saw'd little better*; and when he had beaten and thrashed them all, he left them, and very quietly marched off to his haunt amidst the rocks. Sancho got up in a rage, to find himself so roughly handled, and so undeservedly withal, and was for taking his revenge on the goatherd, telling him he was in fault for not having given them warning, that this man had his mad fits; for had they known as much, they should have been aware, and upon their guard. The goatherd answered, that he had already given them notice of it, and that, if he had not heard it, the fault was none of his. Sancho Panza replied, and the goatherd rejoined; and the replies and rejoinders ended in taking one another by the beard, and cuffing one

another so, that, if Don Quixote had not made peace between them, they would have beat one another to pieces. Sancho, still keeping fast hold of the goatherd, said: Let me alone, Sir Knight of the Sorrowful Figure; for, this fellow being a bumpkin, like myself, and not dubbed a knight, I may very safely revenge myself on him for the injury he has done me, by fighting with him hand to hand, like a man of honour. True, said Don Quixote; but I know that he is not to blame for what has happened. Herewith he pacified them, and Don Quixote inquired again of the goatherd, whether it were possible to find out Cardenio; for he had a mighty desire to learn the end of his story. The goatherd told him, as at first, that he did not certainly know his haunts; but that, if he walked thereabouts pretty much, he would not fail to meet him, either in or out of his senses.

CHAPTER XXV

Which treats of the strange things that befall the valiant knight of La Mancha in the Sable Mountain; and how he imitated the penance of Belshazzor¹.

DON QUIXOTE took his leave of the goatherd, and mounting again on *Rosinante*, commanded Sancho to follow him; which he did, with a very ill will. They jogged on softly, entering into the most craggy part of the mountain; and Sancho was ready to burst, for want of some talk with his master, but would fain have had him begin the discourse, that he might not break through what he had enjoined him; but, not being able to endure so long a silence, he said to him:

¹ The name bestowed on Amadis by the hermit at the Peña Fobra, the rock to which the knight withdrew when suspected of infidelity by Oriana.

Señor Don Quixote, be pleased to give me your worship's blessing, and my dismissal: for I will get me home to my wife and children, with whom I shall, at least, have the privilege of talking, and speaking my mind: for, to desire me to bear your worship company through these solitudes, night and day, without suffering me to talk when I list, is to bury me alive. If fate had ordered it, that beasts should talk now, as they did in the days of Quixote¹, it had not been quite so bad: since I might then have communed with my ass as I pleased, and thus have forgotten my ill fortune: for it is very hard, and not to be borne with patience, for a man to ramble about all his life in quest of adventures, and to meet with nothing but kicks and cuffs, tappings in a blanket, and lickbat lango, and, with all this, to sew up his mouth, and not dare to utter what he has in his heart, as if he were dumb. I understand you, Sancho, answered Don Quixote: you are impatient until I take off the embargo I have laid on your tongue: suppose it taken off, and say what you will, upon condition that this revocation is to last no longer than whilst we are wandering among these craggy rocks. Be it so, said Sancho: let me talk now, for God knows what will be hereafter. And so beginning to enjoy the benefit of this licence, I say: What had your worship to do to stand up so warmly for that same Queen Magimama, or what's her name? or, what was it to the purpose, whether that Alad² was her gallant, or no? for, had you let that parroning you were not his judge, I verily believe the madman would have gone on with his story, and you would have escaped the thump with the stone, the kick, and above half a dozen buffets.

In such Sancho, answered Don Quixote, if you did but know, as I do, how commendable and how excellent a lady Queen Malandana was, I am certain you would

¹ *Asop.*

² *Alad* - *alad*; and, from the last two syllables of the same, Sancho assumes that *Alad* was an excellent but instead of a physician.

own I had a great deal of patience, that I did not dash to pieces that month, out of which such blasphemies issued. For it is a very great blasphemy to say, or even to think, that a queen should be punk to a barber-surgeon. The truth of the story is, that that same master Elisabet, whom the madman spoke of, was a very prudent man, and of a very sound judgment, and served as tutor and physician to the queen; but, to think she was his paramour, is an impertinence that deserves to be severely chastised. And to show you that Cardenio did not know what he said, you may remember, that when he said it, he was out of his wits.—So say I, quoth Sancho; and therefore no account should have been made of his words; for if good fortune had not been your friend; and the flint-stone had been directed at your head as it was at your breast, we had been in a fine condition for standing up in defence of that dear lady, whom God confound. Besides, do you think Cardenio, if he had killed you, would not have come off as being a madman?—A knight-errant, answered Don Quixote, is obliged to defend the honour of women, be they what they will, both against men in their senses and those out of them; how much more then should he stand up in defence of queens of such high degree and worth, as was Queen Madama, for whom I have a particular affection on account of her good parts: for, besides her being extremely beautiful, she was very prudent, and very patient in her afflictions, of which she had many. And the counsels and company of master Elisabet were of great use and comfort to her, in helping her to bear her sufferings with prudence and patience. Hence the ignorant and evil-minded vulgar took occasion to think and talk that she was his paramour; and I say again they lie, and will be two hundred times more, all who say or think her so.—I neither say or think so, answered Sancho; let those who say it eat the lie, and swallow it with their bread; whether they were guilty or no they have given an account to God before now: I come from my

vineyard; I know nothing; I am no friend to inquiring into other men's lives; for he that buys and be shall find the he left in his purse behind; besides naked was I born, and naked I remain. I neither win nor lose; if they were guilty what is that to me? Many think to find lacun where there is not so much as a pin to hang it on: but who can hedge in the cuckoo? Especially, do they spare God himself? God be my aid, quoth Don Quixote, what a parcel of impertinence are you stringing! what has the subject you are upon to do with the proverbs you are threading like beads! Præter, Sancho, hold your tongue, and henceforward mind spurring your ass, and forbear meddling with what does not concern you. And understand, with all your fire-arms, that whatever I have done, do, or shall do, is highly reasonable, and exactly conformable to the rules of chivalry, which I am better acquainted with than all the knights who have professed it in the world. So, replied Sancho, is it a good rule of chivalry, that we go wandering through these mountains, without path or road, in quest of a madman, who, perhaps, when he is found, will have a sword to slash what he says, but his story—but the breaking of your back, and my ribs?

I've it, I say, Sancho, come again, said Don Quixote: let know, that it is not barely the desire of having the adventures that brings me to these parts, but the intention I have to perform an exploit in them, whereby I shall acquire a perpetual name and renown over the face of the whole earth. and it shall be such an one as shall set the seal to all that can require a knight-errant complete and famous. And to the same effect a very dangerous one? quoth Sancho I have heard he of the successful figure; though we do may chance to run on, that we may have an enemy to kill. but the whole will depend on your danger. I give my danger? quoth Sancho Yes, said Don Quixote, but if you return speaking to me the same words I intend to beat you, my good and true

be over, and my glory will presently commence: and, because it is not expedient to keep you any longer in suspense, waiting to know what my discourse drives at, understand Sancho, that the famous Amadis de Gaul was one of the most complete knights-errant: I should not have said one of—he was the sole, the principal, the only one, in short the prince of all that were in his time in the world. A fig for Don Bellianis, and for all those who say he equalled him in anything! for I swear they are mistaken. I say also, that if a painter would be famous in his art, he must endeavour to copy after the originals of the most excellent masters he knows. And the same rule holds good for all other arts and sciences that serve as ornaments of the commonwealth. In like manner, whoever aspires to the character of prudent and patient, must imitate Ulysses, in whose person and toils Homer draws a lively picture of prudence and patience; as Virgil also does of a pious son, and a valiant and expert captain, in the person of Æneas; not delineating or describing them as they really were, but as they ought to be, in order to serve as patterns of virtue to succeeding generations. In this very manner was Amadis the polar, the morning star, and the sun of all valiant and enamoured knights, and he whom all we, who militate under the banners of love and chivalry, ought to follow. This being so, friend Sancho, the knight-errant who imitates him the most nearly, will, I take it, stand the fairest to arrive at the perfection of chivalry. And one circumstance in which this knight most eminently discovered his prudence, worth, courage, patience, constancy, and love, was his retiring, when disdained by the lady Oriana, to do penance in the Poor Rock, changing his name to that of Belshazzar: a name most certainly significant, and proper for the life he had voluntarily chosen. Now, it is easier for me to copy after him in this than in cleaving giants, beheading serpents, slaying dragons, rooting armies, shattering fleets, and dissolving enchantments. And, were this place so well adapted for the purpose,

squire has, or ever had, in the world. Is it possible, that, in all the time you have gone about with me, you do not perceive that all matters relating to knight-errant appear chimeras, follies, and extravagancies, and seem all done by the rule of contraries? not that they are in reality so, but because there is a crew of enchanterers always about us, who alter and disguise all our matters, and turn them according to their own pleasure, and as they are inclined to favour or distress us: hence it is that this, which appears to you a barber's basin, appears to me Mambrino's helmet, and to another will perhaps appear something else: And it was a singular fortnight of the sage my friend, to make that appear to everybody to be a basin, which, really and truly, is Mambrino's helmet: because, being of so great value, all the world would persecute me, in order to take it from me: but now that they take it for nothing but a barber's basin, they do not trouble themselves to get it; as was evident in him who endeavoured to break it, and left it on the ground without carrying it off; for, in faith, had he known what it was he would never have left it. Take care of it, friend; for I have no need of it at present; I rather think of putting off all my armour, and being naked as I was born, in case I should have more mind to copy *Achilles*, *as my passion then directed*.

While they were thus discoursing, they arrived at the foot of a steep rock, which stood alone among several others that surrounded it, as if it had been born out from the rest. By its skirts ran a gentle stream, and it was enriched by a meadow so verdant and fertile, that it delighted the eyes of all who beheld it. There grew about it several forest trees, and some plants and flowers, which added greatly to the pleasantness of the place. This was the scene in which the Knight of the Sorrowful Figure chose to perform his penance, and upon turning it he thus took out in a loud voice, as if he had been beating himself: This is the place, O ye heavens, which I select and appoint for bearing the misfortune in which yourselves have

involved me. This is the spot where my flowing tears shall increase the waters of this crystal rivulet, and my continual and profound sighs shall incessantly move the leaves of those lofty trees, in testimony and token of the pain my persecuted heart endures. O ye rural deities, whoever ye be that inhabit these remote deserts, give ear to the complaints of an unhappy lover, whom long absence and some pangs of jealousy have driven to bewail himself among these craggy rocks, and to complain of the cruelty of that ungrateful fair, the utmost extent and ultimate perfection of all human beauty! O ye wood-nymphs and dryads, who are accustomed to inhabit the clearest recesses of the mountains (so may the nimble and lecherious satyr, by whom you are beloved to ruin, never disturb your sweet repose), assist me to lament my hard fate, or at least be not weary of bearing my moan! O *Dukinea del Toboso*, light of my darkness, glory of my pain, the north-star of my travels, and overruling planet of my fortune (so may heaven prosper you in whatever you pray for) consider, I beseech you, the place and state to which your absence has reduced me, and how will you return what is due to my fidelity! O ye solitary trees, who from henceforth are to be the companions of my retirement, wave gently your branches, in token of your kind acceptance of my person! And O thou my square, agreeable companion in my most prosperous and adverse fortune, carefully imprint in thy memory what thou shalt see me here perform, that thou mayest recount and relate it to her, who is the sole cause of it all! And, saying this, he alighted from *Humante*, and, in an instant, took off his bridle and saddle, and giving him a slap on the buttocks, said to him: O thou, an excellent for thy performances, as unfortunate by thy fate, be glad thou blotty who wants it himself! He whither thou wilt; for thou hast it written in thy forehead, that neither *Astolfo's Hippogriff*¹, nor the

¹ The Hippogriff is the winged horse in *Orlando Furioso* in which Astolfo rode to seek tidings of Orlando.

famous Frontino¹, which cost Bradamante so dear, could match thee in speed.

Sancho, observing all this, said; God's peace be with him, who saved us the trouble of unpannelling Dapple; for, in faith, he should not have wanted a slap on the buttocks, nor a speech in his praise; but, if he were here, I would not consent to his being unpannelled, there being no occasion for it; for he had nothing to do with love or despair, any more than I, who was once his master when it so pleased God. And truly, Sir Knight of the Sorrowful Figure, if it be so, that my departure and your madness go on in earnest, it will be needful to saddle Rosinante again, that he may supply the loss of my Dapple, and save me time in going and coming; for, if I go on foot, I know not when I shall get thither, nor when return, being in truth a sorry footman. Be it as you will, answered Don Quixote; for I do not disapprove your project; and I say, you shall depart within three days; for I intend in that time to show you what I can do and say for her, that you may tell it her. What have I more to see, quoth Sancho, than what I have already seen? You are very far from being perfect in the story, answered Don Quixote; for I have not yet torn my garments, scattered my arms about, and dashed my head against those rocks with other things of the like sort, that will strike you with admiration. For the love of God, said Sancho, have a care how you give yourself those knocks; for you may chance to light upon such an unlucky point of a rock, that, at the first dash, you may demolish the whole machine of this personage; and I should think, since your worship is of opinion that knocks of the head are necessary, and that this work cannot be done without them, you might content yourself (since it is a *thrua*, a counterfeit, and a sham), I say, you might

¹ Frontino was the war-horse of Scarrifante, from whom it was stolen by Brunello and given to Bradamante's lover Ruggiero. It passed to Roldano, who was compelled to give it up on his defeat by Bradamante.

content yourself with running your head against water, or some soft thing, such as cotton; and leave it to me to tell my lady that you dashed your head against the point of a rock harder than that of a diamond. I thank you for your goodwill, friend Sancho, answered Don Quixote; but I would have you to know, that all these things that I do are not in jest, but very good earnest: for, otherwise, it would be to transgress the rules of chivalry, which enjoins us to tell no lie at all, on pain of being punished as apostates; and the doing one thing for another is the same as lying. And therefore my knocks on the head must be real, substantial, and sound ones, without equivocation, or mental reservation. However, it will be necessary to leave me some lint to heal me, since fortune will have it that we have lost the balsam. It was worse to lose the ass, answered Sancho; for in losing him, we lost lint and everything else; and I beseech your worship not to put me in mind of that cursed drench; for in barely hearing it mentioned my very soul is turned upside-down, not to say my stomach. As for the three days allowed me for seeing the mad pranks you are to perform, make account, I beseech you, that they are already passed, for I take them all for granted, and will tell wondrous to my lady: and write you the letter, and dispatch me quickly: for I long to come back, and release your worship from this purgatory wherein I leave you. Purgatory, do you call it, Sancho? said Don Quixote. Call it rather hell, or worse, if anything can be worse. I have heard say, quoth Sancho, that 'out of hell there is no retention'. I know not, said Don Quixote, what retention means. Retention, answered Sancho, means, that he who is once in hell, never does, nor ever can, get out. But it will be quite the reverse with your worship, or it shall go hard with my heels if I have but spurs to ruben flouante; and let me but once get to Toboso, and into the presence of my lady Dulcinea, and I warrant you I will tell her such a story of the foolish and mad things (for they are all no better) which

your worship has done, and is doing, that I shall bring her to be as supple as a glove, though I find her harder than a cork-tree: with whose sweet and honeyed answer I will return through the air like a witch, and fetch your worship out of this purgatory, which seems a hell, and is not, because there is hope to get out of it; which, as I have said, none can have that are in hell; nor do I believe you will be otherwise.

That is true, answered he of the Sorrowful Figure; but how shall we contrive to write the letter? And the answer-bill? added Bascho. Nothing shall be omitted, said Don Quixote; and, since we have no paper, we shall do well to write it, as the ancients did, on the leaves of trees, or on tablets of wax, though it will be as difficult to meet with these as present as with paper. But, now I recollect, it may be as well, or rather better, to write it in Cardenio's pocket-book, and you shall take care to get it fairly transcribed upon paper, in the first town you come to where there is a schoolmaster; or, if there be none, any parish-clerk will transcribe it for you; but be sure you give it to no hackney-writer of the law; for the devil himself will never be able to read their confounded court-hand. But what must we do about the signing it with your own hand? said Bascho. Indiscreetness are never subscribed, answered Don Quixote. Very well, replied Bascho; but the warrant for the execution of our enemy be signed by yourself; for, if that be signed, people will say the signing is counterfeited, and I shall be forced to go without the writ. The warrant shall be signed in the same pocket-book; and at night if it my name will make no difficulty to comply with it. As to what concerns the letter, let it be written thus: "Yeave, good death, the Knight of the Sorrowful Figure." And is so great matter if it be in another hand. I.e., by what I remember, but now can I think writing our friend, our hero ever with a letter in writing of mine in his whole life, he will

loves have always been of the Platonic kind, extending no farther than to modest looks at one another; and even those so very rarely, that I dare truly swear, in twelve years that I have loved her more than the sight of those eyes, which the earth must one day devour, I have not seen her four times; and perhaps of those four times she may not have once perceived that I looked at her. Such is the reserve and strictness with which her father Lorenzo Corchuelo and her mother Aldonza Nogales have brought her up.

Hey day! quoth Sancho; what, the daughter of Lorenzo Corchuelo! is she the lady Dulcinea del Toboso, alias Aldonza Lorenzo? It is even she, said Don Quixote; and she who deserves to be mistress of the universe. I know her well, quoth Sancho; and I can assure you she will pitch the bar with the lustiest swain in the parish: Long live the giver, why, she is a mettled lass, tall, straight, and vigorous, and can make her part good with any knight-errant that shall have her for a mistress. O (be jado! what a pair of lungs and a voice she has! I remember she got one day upon the church steeple to call some young ploughmen, who were in the field of her father's; and though they were half a league off they heard her as plainly as if they had stood at the foot of the tower; and the best of her is, that she is not at all coy; for she has much of the courtesan in her, and makes a jest and a may-game of everybody. I say, then, Sir Knight of the Borrowed Figure, that you not only may, and ought to run mad for her, but also you may justly despair and hang yourself, and nobody that hears it but will say you did extremely well, though the devil should carry you away. I would fain be gone, if it were only to see her; for I have not seen her thus many a day, and by this time she must needs be altered; for it mightily spoils women's faces to be always abroad in the field, exposed to the sun and weather. And I confess to your worship, Señor Don Quixote, that hitherto I have been in a great error; for I thought, for certain, that the lady Dulcinea

was some great princess, with whom you was in love, or at least some person of such great quality, as to deserve the rich presents you have sent her, as well that of the Bucamer as that of the galley-alarms, and many others there must have been, considering the many victories you must have gained before I came to be your squire. But, all things considered, what good can it do the lady Aldonza Lorenzo (I mean the lady Dulcinea del Toboso) to have the vanquished, whom your worship sends, or may send, fall upon their knees before her? for who knows, but at the time they arrive, she may be carding flax, or thrashing in the barn, and they may be ashamed to see her, and she may laugh, or be disgusted at the present? I have often told thee, Sancho, said Don Quixote, that thou art an eternal babbler; and, though void of wit, your bluntness often occasions smarting; but to convince you at once of your folly and my discretion, I will tell you a short story.

Know, then, that a certain widow, handsome, young, gay, and rich, and withal no prude, fell in love with a young, strapping, well set lay brother. His superior beard of it, and one day took occasion to say to the good widow, by way of brotherly reprehension, I wonder, madam, and out without great reason, that a woman of such quality, so beautiful and so rich, should fall in love with such a despicable, mean, silly fellow, when there are in this house so many graduates, dignitaries, and doctors, among whom you might pick and choose as you would among pears, and say, this I like, that I do not like. But she answered him with great frankness and good humour: You are much mistaken, worthy sir, and that altogether in the old-fashioned way, if you imagine that I have made an ill choice in that fellow, how will I ever be my appear, since, for the purpose I intend him, he knows as much of pure philosophy than Aristotle himself. In like manner, Sancho Panza said to Dulcinea for the purpose I intend her, deserves as easily as the greatest princess on earth. The fools, who have

celebrated the praises of ladies under fictitious names imposed at pleasure, had not all of them real mistresses. Thinkest thou that the *Amarylluses*, the *Phylluses*, the *Silvius*, the *Dianas*, the *Galateas*, the *Alidas*, and the like, of whom books, ballads, barber-shops, and stage-plays, are full, were really mistresses of flesh and blood, and to those who do, and have celebrated them? No, certainly; but they are for the most part feigned, on purpose to be subjects of their verses, and to make the authors pass for men of gallant and amorous dispositions. And therefore it is sufficient that I think and believe that the good *Aldonza Lorenzo* is beautiful and chaste; and as to her lineage, it matters not; for there needs no inquiry about it, as if she were to receive some order of knighthood¹, and, for my part, I make account that she is the greatest princess in the world. For you must know, Sancho, if you do not know it already, that two things, above all others, incite to love; namely, great beauty, and a good name: now both of these are to be found in perfection in *Dalucía*; for in beauty none can be compared to her, and for a good name few can come near her. To conclude, I imagine that everything is exactly as I say, without addition or diminution; and I represent her to my thoughts just as I wish her to be both in beauty and quality. Helen is not comparable to her, nor is she excelled by *Lucretia*, or any other of the famous women of antiquity, whether Grecian, Latin, or Barbarian. And let every one say what he pleases; for if, upon this account, I am blamed by the ignorant, I shall not be censured by the most severe judges. Your worship, replied Sancho, is always in the right, and I am an ass: but why do I mention an ass, when one ought not to talk of an halter in his house who

¹ Knights were not admitted to the Spanish orders till they had proved their *limpieza de sangre*, or freedom from any taint of Jewish or Moorish blood. Great difficulties were raised in the case of the famous painter, Velazquez, before he was admitted to the order of Santiago within fifty years of Cervantes's death.

was hanged ? but give me the letter, and God be with you ; for I am upon the wing.

Don Quixote pulled out the pocket-book, and, stepping aside, began very gravely to write the letter ; and when he had done, he called Sancho, and said he would read it to him, that he might have it by heart if he should chance to lose it by the way ; for everything was to be feared from his ill fortune. To which Sancho answered : Write it, Sir, two or three times in the book, and give it me, and I will carry it carefully ; but to think that I can carry it in my memory is a folly ; for mine is so bad, that I often forget my own name. Nevertheless, read it to me ; I shall be glad to hear it, for it must needs be a clever one. Listen, then, said Don Quixote, for it runs thus :—

Don Quixote's letter to Dulcinea del Toboso.

'Sovereign and high lady,

'The stabbed by the point of absence, and the pierced to the heart, O sweetest Dulcinea del Toboso, sends that health to you which he wants himself. If your beauty despises me, if your worth profits me nothing, and if your disdain still pursues me, though I am insured to suffering, I shall still support an affliction, which is not only violent, but the more durable for being so. My good squire Sancho will give you a full account, O ungrateful fair, and my beloved enemy, of the condition I am in for your sake. If it pleases you to relieve me, I am yours ; and if not, do what seems good to you ; for, by my death, I shall at once satisfy your cruelty and my own passion.

'Yours until death,

'The Knight of the Sorrowful Figure.'

By the life of my father, quoth Sancho, hearing the letter, it is the toppingest thing I ever heard. Odds my life, how curiously your worship expresses in it whatever you please ! and how excellently do

you close all with ' the Knight of the Sorrowful Figure ' ! Verily your worship is the devil himself : and there is nothing but what you know. The profession I am of, answered Don Quixote, requires me to understand everything. Well then, said Sancho, pray clap on the other side of the leaf, the bill for the three escuolts, and sign it very plain, that people may know your hand at first sight. With all my heart, said Don Quixote ; and, having written it, he read as follows :—

' Dear niece, at sight of this my first bill of escuolts, give order that three of the five I left at home in your custody be delivered to Sancho Panza, my squire ; which three colts I order to be delivered and paid for the like number received of him here in sale ; and thus, with his acquaintance, shall be your discharge. Done in the heart of the Sable Mountain, the twenty-second of August, this present year.'

It is mighty well, said Sancho ; pray sign it. It wants no signing, said Don Quixote ; I need only put my cipher¹ to it, which is the same thing, and is sufficient, not only for three escuas, but for three hundred. I rely upon your worship, answered Sancho ; let me go and saddle Rocinante, and prepare to give me your blessing ; for I intend to depart immediately, without staying to see the lollies you are about to commit ; and I will relate that I saw you act so many, that she can desire no more. At least, Sancho, said Don Quixote, I would have you see (nay, it is necessary you should see), I say, I will have you see me naked, and do a dozen or two of mad pranks ; for I shall dispatch them in less than half an hour ; and having seen these with your own eyes, you may safely swear to those you intend to add ; for assure yourself, you will not relate so many as I intend to perform. For the love of God, dear Sir, quoth Sancho, let me not see your worship naked ; for it will move my compassion

¹ The *rubrica*, or *Rourub*, without which no signature was complete in Spain : it often took the place of the signature in the case of illustrious persons.

much, and I shall not be able to forbear weeping: and my head is so drownded with last night's grief for the loss of poor Dapple, that I am in no condition at present to begin new lamentations. If your worship has a mind I should be an eye-witness of some mad prank, pray do them clothed, and with brevity, and let them be such as will stand you in most stead: and the rather, because for me there needed nothing of all this; and, as I said before, it is but delaying my return with the news your worship so much desires and deserves. If otherwise, let the lady Dulcinea prepare herself; for if she does not answer as she should do, I protest solemnly I will fetch it out of her stomach by dint of kicks and buffets: for it is not to be endured, that so famous a knight-errant as your worship should run mad, without why or wherefore, for a—Let not madam provoke me to speak out; before God, I shall blab, and out with all by wholesale, though it spoil the market. I am pretty good at this sport: she does not know me; if she did, in faith she would agree with me. In troth, Sancho, said Don Quixote, to all appearance you are as mad as myself. Not quite so mad, answered Sancho, but a little more choleric. But, setting aside all this, what is it your worship is to eat until my return? Are you to go upon the highway, to rob the shepherds like Cardenio? Trouble not yourself about that, answered Don Quixote: though I were provided I would eat nothing but herbs and fruits, which this meadow and these trees will afford me; for the essence of my affair consists in not eating, and other austerities. Then Sancho said: Do you know, Sir, what I fear? that I shall not be able to find the way again to this place, where I leave you, it is so concealed? Observe well the marks; for I will endeavour to be hertabouts, said Don Quixote, and will moreover take care to get to the top of some of the highest cliffs, to see if I can discover you when you return. But the surest way not to miss me, nor lose yourself, will be to cut down some boughs off the many trees that are here, and

strew them, as you go on, from space to space, until you have got down into the plain; and they will serve as landmarks and tokens to find me by at your return, in imitation of Theseus's clue to the labyrinth.

I will do so, answered Sancho Panza; and having cut down several, he begged his master's blessing, and, not without many tears on both sides, took his leave of him. And mounting upon Rocinante, of whom Don Quixote gave him an especial charge, desiring him to be careful of him as of his own proper person, he rode towards the plain, strewing broom-boughs here and there, as his master had directed him; and so away he went, though Don Quixote still importuned him to stay, and see him perform, though it were but a couple of mad pranks. But he had not gone above a hundred paces, when he turned back, and said: Your worship, Sir, said very well, that in order to my being able to swear with a safe conscience that I have seen you do mad tricks, it would be proper I should at least see you do one; though in truth I have seen a very great one already in your staying here. Did I not tell you so? quoth Don Quixote: stay but a moment, Sancho, I will despatch them in the repeating of a *Credo*. Then stripping off his breeches in all haste he remained naked from the waist downwards, and covered only with the tail of his shirt; and presently, without more ado, he cut a couple of capers in the air, and a brace of tumblers, head down and heels up, exposing things that made Sancho turn Rocinante about, that he might not see them a second time; and fully satisfied him that he might safely swear his master was stark mad; and so we will leave him going on his way until his return, which was speedy.

CHAPTER XXVI

A continuation of the refinements practised by Don Quixote, as a lover, in the Solís Mountain.

THE history, turning to recount what the Knight of the Sorrowful Figure did, when he found himself alone, informs us, that Don Quixote, having finished his tumblers and gambols, naked from the middle downward, and clothed from the middle upward, and perceiving that Sancho was going without caring to see any more of his foolish pranks, got upon the top of a high rock, and there began to think again of what he had often thought before, without ever coming to any resolution: and that was, which of the two was best, and would stand him in most stead, to imitate Orlando in his extravagant madness, or Amadis in his melancholic moods. And, talking to himself, he said: If Orlando was so good and valiant a knight, as everybody allows he was, what wonder is it since, in short, he was enchanted, and nobody could kill him, but by thrusting a needle into the sole of his foot; and therefore he always wore shoes with seven soles of iron? These contrivances, however, stood him in no stead against Bernardo del Carpio, who knew the secret, and pressed him to death, between his arms, in Roncesvalles. But setting aside his valour, let us come to his losing his wife, which it is certain he did, occasioned by some tokens he found in the forest, and by the news brought him by the shepherd, that Angelica had slept more than two afternoons with Medoro, a little Moor with curled locks, and page to Agramante¹. And if he knew this to be true, and that his lady played him false, he did no great matter

¹ It was not Orlando, but Ferrao, who wore the seven finely tempered plates in the *Orlando Furioso*, xxiv. 48.

² Medoro was not page to Agramante, but to Dardanel.

be running mad. But how can I imitate him in his madnesses, if I do not imitate him in the occasion of them? for I dare swear my *Dulcinea del Toboso* never saw a Moor, in his own dress, in all her life, and that she is this day as the mother that bore her: and I should do her a manifest wrong, if, suspecting her, I should run mad of the same kind of madness with that of *Orlando Furioso*. On the other side, I see that *Amadis de Gaul*, without losing his wife, and without acting the madman, acquired the reputation of a lover, as much as the best of them. For, as the history has it, finding himself disdained by his lady *Orlana*, who commanded him not to appear in her presence, until it was her pleasure, he only retired to the *Poor Rock*, accompanied by a hermit, and there wept his bellyful, until heaven came to his relief, in the midst of his trouble and greatest anguish. And, if this be true, as it really is, why should I take pains to strip myself stark naked, or grieve those trees that never did me any harm? neither have I any reason to disturb the water of those crystal streams, which are to furnish me with drink when I want it. Live the memory of *Amadis*, and let him be imitated, as far as may be, by *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, of whom shall be said what was said of another, that, if he did not achieve great things, he died in attempting them. And if I am not rejected, nor disdained, by my *Dulcinea*, it is sufficient, as I have already said, that I am absent from her. Well, then; hands to your work: come to my memory, ye deeds of *Amadis*, and teach me where I am to begin to imitate you: but I know that the most he did was to pray; and so will I do. Whereupon he strung some large galls of a cork-tree, which served him for a rosary. But what troubled him very much, was, his not having a hermit to hear his confession, and to comfort him; and so he passed the time in walking up and down the meadow, writing and graving on the barks of trees, and in the fine sand, a great many verses, all accommodated to his melancholy, and some in praise of *Dulcinea*,

But those that were found entire and legible, after he was found in that place, were only these following:—

I

Ye trees, ye plants, ye herbs that grow
 So tall, so green, around this place,
 If ye rejoice not at my woe,
 Hear me lament my piteous case.
 Nor let my loud-resounding grief
 Your tender trembling leaves dismay,
 Whilst from my tears I seek relief,
 In absence from Dulcinea

Del Toboso.

II

Here the sad lover shuns the light,
 By sorrow to this desert led;
 Here exiled from his lady's sight,
 He seeks to hide his wretched head.
 Here, bandied betwixt hopes and fears,
 By cruel love in wanton play,
 He weeps a pipkin full of tears,
 In absence from Dulcinea

Del Toboso.

III

O'er craggy rocks he roves forlorn,
 And seeks misadventure from place to place;
 Cursing the proud relentless scorn
 That banish'd him from human race.
 To wound his tender bleeding heart,
 Love's hands the cruel lash display;
 He weeps, and feels the raging smart,
 In absence from Dulcinea

Del Toboso.

The addition of Del Toboso to the name of Dulcinea, occasioned no small laughter in those who found the above recited verses, for they concluded that Don Quixote imagined, that if, in naming Dulcinea, he did not add Del Toboso, the couplet could not be understood; and it was really so, as he afterwards confessed.

He wrote many others: but, as is said, they could transcribe no more than those three stanzas fair and entire. In this amusement, and in sighing, and invoking the lamps and sylvan deities of those woods, the nymphs of the brooks, and the mournful and humid echo, to answer, to console, and listen to his moan, he passed the time, and in gathering herbs to sustain himself until Sancho's return; who, if he had tarried three weeks, as he did three days, the Knight of the Sorrowful Figure would have been so disfigured, that the very mother who bore him could not have known him. And here it will be proper to leave him, wrapped up in his sighs and verses, to relate what befell Sancho in his embassy.

Which was, that when he got into the high road he steered towards Toboso; and the next day he came within sight of the inn where the mishap of the blanket had befallen him: and scarcely had he discovered it at a distance, when he fancied himself again flying in the air, and therefore would not go in, though it was the hour that he might and ought to have stopped, that is, about noon: besides he had a mind to eat something warm, all having been cold treat with him for many days past. This necessity forced him to draw nigh to the inn, still doubting whether he should go in or not. And, while he was in suspense, there came out of the inn two persons, who presently knew him; and one said to the other: Pray, Señor becniente, is not that Sancho Panza yonder on horseback, who, as our adventure's house-keeper told us, was gone with her master as his squire? 'Tis it is, said the becniente, and that is our Don Quixote's horse. And no wonder they knew him so well, they being the priest and the barber of his village, and the persons who had made the scrutiny and gualditory of the books; and being now certain it was Sancho Panza and Ronsante, and being desirous vithal to learn some tidings of Don Quixote, they went up to him, and the priest, calling him by his name, said: Friend Sancho Panza, where have you

left your master? Sancho Panza immediately knew them, and resolved to conceal the place and circumstances in which he had left his master: so he answered, that his master was very busy in a certain place, and about a certain affair of the greatest importance to him, which he durst not discover for the eyes he had in his head. No, no, quoth the barber, Sancho Panza, if you do not tell us where he is, we shall conclude, as we do already, that you have murdered and robbed him, since you come thus upon his horse; and see that you produce the horse's owner, or woe be to you. There is no reason why you should threaten me, quoth Sancho; for I am not a man to rob or murder anybody: let every man's fate kill him, or God that made him. My master is doing a certain penance, much to his liking, in the midst of yon mountain. And thereupon, very glibly, and without hesitation, he related to them in what manner he had left him, the adventures that had befallen him, and how he was carrying a letter to the lady Dulcinea del Toboso, who was the daughter of Lorenzo Corchuelo, with whom his master was up to the ears in love.

They both stood in admiration at what Sancho told them; and though they already knew Don Quixote's madness, and of what kind it was, they were always struck with fresh wonder at hearing it. They desired Sancho Panza to show them the letter he was carrying to the lady Dulcinea del Toboso. He said it was written in a pocket-book, and that it was his master's orders he should get it copied out upon paper, at the first town he came at. The priest said, if he would show it him, he would transcribe it in a very fair character. Sancho Panza put his hand into his bosom, to take out the book, but found it not; nor could he have found it, had he searched for it well now; for it remained with Don Quixote, who had forgotten to give it him, and he to ask for it. When Sancho perceived he had lost the book, he turned as pale as death; and feeling again all over his body, in a great hurry, and seeing it was not to be found, without

more ado, he laid hold of his beard with both hands, and tore away half of it; and presently after he gave himself half a dozen cuffs on the nose and mouth, and bathed them all in blood. Which the priest and barber seeing, they asked him what had happened to him, that he handled himself so roughly? What should happen to me, answered Sancho, but that I have lost, and let slip through my fingers, three ass colts each of them as stately as a castle? How so? replied the barber. I have lost the pocket-book, answered Sancho, in which was the letter to Dulcinea, and a bill signed by my master, by which he ordered his niece to deliver to me three colts out of four or five he had at home. And, at the same time, he recounted to them the loss of Dapple. The priest bid him be of good cheer, telling him, that, when he saw his master, he would engage him to renew the order, and draw the bill over again upon paper, according to usage and custom, since those that were written in pocket-books were never accepted, nor complied with. Sancho was comforted by this, and said, that, since it was so, he was in no great pain for the loss of the letter to Dulcinea, for he could almost say it by heart; so that they might write it down from his mouth, where and when they pleased. Repeat it, then, Sancho, quoth the barber, and we will write it down afterwards. Then Sancho began to scratch his head, to bring the letter to his remembrance; and now stood upon one foot, and then upon another: one time he looked down upon the ground, another up to the sky: and after he had bit off half a nail of one of his fingers, keeping them in suspense and expectation of hearing him repeat it, he said, after a very long pause: Before God, master lieutenant, let the devil take all I remember of the letter; though at the beginning it said, 'High and subterranean lady'—No, said the barber, not subterranean, but super-humane, or sovereign lady. It was so, said Sancho. Then, if I do not mistake, it went on: 'the wounded, and the weeping, and the mourning, leave your honour's hands, ungrateful and

regardless fair'; and then it said I know not what of 'health and sickness that he sent'; and so he went on, until at last he ended with 'thine till death the Knight of the Sorrowful Figure.'

They were both not a little pleased to see how good a memory Sancho had, and commended it much, and desired him to repeat the letter twice more, that they also might get it by heart, in order to write it down in due time. Thrice Sancho repeated it again, and thrice he added three thousand other extravagances. After this, he recounted also many other things concerning his master, but said not a word of the toiling in the blanket, which had happened to himself in the inn, into which he refused to enter. He said likewise, how his lord, upon his carrying him back a kind of despatch from his lady Dulcinea del Toboso, was to set forward, to endeavour to become an emperor, or at least a king: for so it was concerted between them two; and it would be a very easy matter to bring it about, considering the worth of his person and the strength of his arm; and when this was accomplished, his master was to marry him (for by that time he should, without doubt, be a widower) and to give him to wife one of the empire's maids of honour, bestow to a large and rich territory on the mainland; for, as to islands, he was quite out of concert with them. Sancho said all this with so much gravity, ever and anon blowing his nose, and so much in his speech, that they were struck with fresh admiration at the powerful influence of Don Quixote's madness, which had carried away with it the poor fellow's understanding also. They would not give themselves the trouble to convince him of his error, thinking it better, since it did not at all hurt his conscience, to let him continue in it; besides that it would afford them the more pleasure in hearing he talked; and therefore they told him, he should pray to God for his lord's health, since it was very possible, and very feasible, for him, by means of him, to become an emperor, or at least an arch-

bishop, or something else of equal dignity. To which Sancho answered: Gentlemen, if fortune should so order it, that my master should take it into his head not to be an emperor, but an archbishop, I would fain know what archbishops-errant usually give to their squires? They usually give them, answered the priest, some benefice, or cure, or vergership, which brings them in a good penny-rent, besides the perquisites of the altar, usually valued at as much more. For this, it will be necessary, replied Sancho, that the squire be not married, and that he knows, at least, the responses to the mass: and if so, woe is me; for I am married, and do not know the first letter of A, B, C. What will become of me if my master should have a mind to be an archbishop, and not an emperor, as is the fashion and custom of knights-errant? Be not uneasy, friend Sancho, said the barber; for we will entreat your master, and advise him, and even make it a case of conscience, that he be an emperor, and not an archbishop, for it will be better for him also, by reason he is more a soldier than a scholar. I have thought the same, answered Sancho, though I can affirm that he has ability for everything. What I intend to do, on my part, is to pray to our Lord, that he will direct him to that which is best for him, and will enable him to bestow most favours upon me. You talk like a wise man, said the priest, and will act therein like a good Christian. But the next thing now to be done, is, to contrive how we may bring your master off from the performance of that unprofitable penance; and, that we may concert the proper measures, and get something to eat likewise (for it is high time), let us go into the inn. Sancho desired them to go on, and said he would stay there without, and afterwards he would tell them the reason why he did not, nor was it convenient for him to go in; but he prayed them to bring him out something to eat that was warm, and also some barley for Roldante. They went in, and left him, and soon after the barber brought him out some meat.

Then they two having laid their heads together how to bring about their design, the priest bethought him of a device exactly fitted to Don Quixote's humour, and likely to effect what they desired. Which was, as he told the barber, that he designed to put himself into the habit of a damsel-errant, and would have him to equip himself, the best he could, so as to pass for his squire; and that in this disguise they should go to the place where Don Quixote was; and himself, pretending to be an afflicted damsel, and in distress, would beg a boon of him, which he, as a valorous knight-errant, could not choose but vouchsafe; and that the boon he intended to beg, was, that he would go with her whither she should carry him, to redress an injury done her by a discourteous knight, entreating him, at the same time, that he would not desire her to take off her mask, nor inquire anything further concerning her, until he had done her justice on that wicked knight; and he made no doubt but that Don Quixote would, by these means, be brought to do whatever they desired of him, and so they should bring him away from that place, and carry him to his village, where they would endeavour to find some remedy for his unaccountable madness.

CHAPTER XXVII

How the priest and the barber put their design in execution with other matters worthy to be recited in this history.

THE barber liked the priest's contrivance so well, that it was immediately put in execution. They borrowed of the landlady a petticoat and head-dress, leaving a new cassock of the priest's in pawn for them. The barber made himself a huge beard of the sorrel tail of a pied ox, in which the innkeeper used to hang his comb. The hostess asked them, why they desired those things? The priest gave them a brief

account of Don Quixote's madness, and how necessary that disguise was, in order to get him from the mountain where he then was. The host and hostess presently conjectured that this madman was he who had been their guest, the maker of the balsam, and master of the blanketed squire; and they related to the priest what had passed between him and them, without concealing what Sancho so industriously concealed. In fine, the landlady equipped the priest so nicely, that nothing could be better. She put him on a cloth petticoat, lard thick with stripes of black velvet, each the breadth of a span, all pinked and slashed; and a tight waistcoat of green velvet, trimmed with a border of white satin; which, together with the petticoat, must have been made in the days of King Wamba¹. The priest would not consent to wear a woman's head-dress, but put on a little white quilted cap, which he wore at night, and bound one of his garters of black taffeta about his forehead, and with the other made a kind of vizard, which covered his face and beard very neatly. Then he sunk his head into his beaver, which was so broad-brimmed, that it might serve him for an umbrella; and, tapping himself up in his cloak, he got upon his mule sideways, like a woman; the barber got also upon his, with his beard, that reached to his girdle, between sorrel and white, being, as has been said, made of the sorrel tail of a pied ox. They took leave of all, and of good Martines, who promised, though a sinner, to pray over an entire merry, that God might give them good success in so arduous and Christian a business as that they had undertaken.

But scarcely had they got out of the inn, when the priest began to think he had done amiss in equipping himself after that manner, it being an indecent thing for a priest to be so accoutred, though much deplored upon it; and acquainting the barber with his scruple, he desired that they might change dresses, it being fitter that he should personate the distressed damsel,

¹ King of the Goths (570-682) in Spain.

and himself act the squire, as being a less profanation of his dignity; and if he would not consent to do so, he was determined to proceed no further, though the devil should run away with Don Quixote. Upon this Sancho came up to them, and, seeing them both tricked up in that manner, could not forbear laughing. The barber, in short, consented to what the priest desired, and the scheme being thus altered, the priest began to instruct the barber how to act his part, and what expressions to use to Don Quixote, to prevail upon him to go with them, and to make him out of concert with the place he had chosen for his fruitless penance. The barber answered, that, without his instructions, he would undertake to manage that point to a tittle. He would not put on the dress until they came near to the place where Don Quixote was; and so he folded up his habit, and the priest adjusted his beard, and on they went, Sancho Panza being their guide; who, on the way, recounted to them what had happened in relation to the madman they met in the mountain: but said not a word of finding the portmanteau, and what was in it; for, with all his folly and simplicity, the spark was somewhat covetous.

The next day they arrived at the place where Sancho had strewed the broom-boughs, as tokens to ascertain the place where he had left his master; and knowing it again, he told them, that was the entrance into it, and therefore they would do well to put on their disguise, if that was of any significance toward delivering his master; for they had before told him, that their going dressed in that manner, was of the utmost importance towards disengaging his master from that evil life he had chosen; and that he must by no means let his master know who they were, nor that he knew them; and if he should ask him, as no doubt he would, whether he had delivered the letter to Dulcinea, he should say he had, and that she, not being able to read or write, had answered by word of mouth, that she commended him, on pain

perceiving the silence continued a good while, they resolved to move forth in search of the musician, who had sung so agreeably. And, just as they were about to do so, the same voice hindered them from starting, and again reached their ears with this sonnet.

Friendship, thou hast with nimble flight
Exulting gain'd th' empyreal height,
In heav'n to dwell, whilst, here below
Thy semblance reigns in mimic show
From thence to earth, at thy behest,
Descends fair peace, celestial guest;
Beneath whose veil of shining hue
Doe'st oft lurk, concealed from view.
Leave, friendship, leave thy heav'nly seat;
Or strip the livery off the cheat.
If still he wears thy borrowed smiles,
And still unwary truth beguiles,
Soon must this dark terrestrial ball
Into its first confusion fall.

The song ended with a deep sigh, and they again listened very attentively in hopes of more; but finding that the music was changed into groans and laments, they agreed to go and find out the unhappy person whose voice was so excellent in his complaints were mournful. They had not gone far, when at doubling the point of a rock, they perceived a man of the same stature and figure that Sancho had described to them, when he told them the story of Cardenio. The man expressed no surprise at the sight of them, but stood still, inclining his head upon his breast, in a pensive posture, without lifting up his eyes to look at them: until just at the instant when they came unexpectedly upon him. The priest, who was a well-spoken man, being already acquainted with his misfortune, and knowing him by the description, went up to him, and in few, but very significant words, entreated and persuaded him to forsake that miserable kind of life, lest he should lose it in that place: which, of all misfortunes, would be the greatest. Cardenio

heard it, you may save yourselves the trouble of endeavouring to cure a malady that admits of no consolation.

The two, who desired nothing more than to learn, from his own mouth, the cause of his misery, entreated him to relate it, assuring him they would do nothing but what he desired, either by way of remedy or advice: and, upon this, the poor gentleman began his melancholy story, almost in the same words and method he had used, in relating it to Don Quixote and the goatherd, some few days before, when, on the mention of master Elmabet, and Don Quixote's punctuality in observing the decorum of Lught-errantry, the tale was cut short, as the history left it above. But now, as good fortune would have it, Cardenio's mad fit was suspended, and afforded him leisure to rehearse it to the end: and so, coming to the passage of the love-letter which Don Fernando found between the leaves of the book of *Amadis de Gaul*, he said he remembered it perfectly well, and that it was as follows.

LUCINDA TO CARDENIO.

'I every day discover such worth in you, as obliges and forces me to esteem you more and more, and therefore, if you would put it in my power to discharge my obligations to you, without prejudice to my honour, you may easily do it. I have a father, who knows you, and has an affection for me; who will never force my inclinations, and will comply with whatever you can justly desire, if you really have that value for me, which you profess, and I believe you to have.'

This letter made me resolve to demand Lucinda in marriage, as I have already related, and was one of those which gave Don Fernando such an opinion of Lucinda, that he looked upon her as one of the most sensible and prudent women of her time. And it was this letter which put him upon the design of undoing me, before mine could be effected. I told

Don Fernando what Lucinda's father expected; which was, that my father should propose the match; but that I durst not mention it to him, lest he should not come into it; not because he was unacquainted with the circumstances, goodness, virtue, and beauty of Lucinda, and that she had qualities sufficient to adorn any other family of Spain whatever; but because I understood by him, that he was desirous I should not marry soon, but wait until we should see what Duke Ricardo would do for me. In a word, I told him, that I durst not venture to speak to my father about it, as well for that reason, as for many others, which disheartened me. I knew not why; only I perceived, that my desires were never to take effect. To all this Don Fernando answered, that he took it upon himself to speak to my father, and to prevail upon him to speak to Lucinda's. O ambitious Marus! O cruel Catiline! O wicked Sulla! O crafty Galton!¹ O perfidious Vellado!² O vindictive Julian!³ O covetous Judas! traitor! cruel, vindictive, and crafty! what disservice had this poor wretch done you, who so frankly discovered to you the secrets and the joys of his heart? wherein had I offended you? what word did I ever utter, or ad-
 like

¹ As already noted in Chapter I, p. 12, the chief leader in the Charlemagne cycle.

² The rebel who murdered King Sancho at the siege of Zamora in 1072.

³ Judas (whose name is also given as Ilan, Urhan, and Oiban) aided the Moors to invade Spain: the theme has been treated by Walter Scott in *The House of Elrick*, and by Southey in *Elrick*, the last of the *Ords*. Cervantes naturally follows tradition and the ballads in charging Judas among the traitors, but it seems certain that Judas was not a Spanish Goth. According to Dray he was a Egyptian; according to Paarmira, an Armenian or Persian; and later investigators describe him as a Parthian chief. The outrage of Judas's daughter is recorded in King Wences by Ibn-Khalikan, the most celebrated of the historians.

did I ever give, that were not all directed to the increase of your honour and your interest? But why do I complain? miserable wretch that I am! since it is certain, that, when the strong influences of the stars pour down misfortunes upon us, they fall from on high with such violence and fury, that no human force can stop them, nor human address prevent them. Who could have thought that Don Fernando, an illustrious cavalier, of good sense, obliged by my services, and secure of success wherever his amorous inclinations led him, should take cruel pains to deprive me of my single ewe-lamb, which was not yet in my possession? But, setting aside these reflections as vain and unprofitable, let us resume the broken thread of my unhappy story.

I say then, that Don Fernando, thinking my presence an obstacle to the putting his treacherous and wicked design in execution, resolved to send me to his elder brother for money to pay for six horses, which merely for the purpose of getting me out of the way, that he might the better succeed in his hellish intent, he had bought that very day on which he offered to speak to my father, and on which he dispatched me for the money. Could I prevent this treachery? could I so much as suspect it? No, certainly, on the contrary, with great pleasure I offered to depart instantly, well satisfied with the good bargain he had made. That night I spoke with Lucinda, and told her what had been agreed upon between Don Fernando and me, bidding her not doubt the success of our just and honourable design. She, as little suspecting Don Fernando's treachery as I did, desired me to make haste back, since she believed the completion of our wishes would be no longer deferred than until my father had spoken to him. I know not whence it was, but she had no sooner said this than her eyes stood full of tears, and some sudden obstruction in her throat would not suffer her to utter one word of a great many she seemed endeavouring to say to me. I was astonished at this strange accident, having

never seen the like in her before ; for, whenever good fortune, or my candour, gave us an opportunity, we always conversed with the greatest pleasure and satisfaction, nor ever intermixed with our discourse tears, sighs, jealousies, suspicions, or fears. I did nothing but applaud my good fortune in having her given me by heaven for a mistress. I magnified her beauty, and admired her merit and understanding. She returned the compliment, by commending to me what, as a lover, she thought worthy of commendation. We told one another a hundred thousand little childish stories concerning our neighbours and acquaintance ; and the greatest length my presumption ran was to seize, as it were, by force, one of her fair and snowy hands, and press it to my lips, as well as the narrowness of the iron grate which was between us would permit. But the night that preceded the doleful day of my departure she wept and sighed, and withdrew abruptly, leaving me full of confusion and trepidation, and astonished at seeing such new and sad tokens of grief and tender concern in Loreda. But, not to destroy my hopes, I ascribed it all to the violence of the love she bore me, and to the sorrow which parting occasions in those who love one another tenderly. In short, I went away sad and pensive, my soul filled with imaginations and suspicions, without knowing what I imagined or suspected ; all manifest premisses of the dismal event reserved in store for me.

I arrived at the place whither I was sent : I gave the letters to Don Fernando's brother : I was well received ; but my business was not soon dispatched ; for he ordered me to wait (much to my sorrow) for eight days, and to keep out of his father's sight ; for his brother, he said, had written to him to send him a certain sum of money without the duke's knowledge. All this was a contrivance of the late Don Fernando ; for his brother did not want money to have dispatched me immediately. This injunction put me into such a condition, that I could not possibly think of obeying it, it seeming to me to be impossible

to support life under an absence of so many days from Lucinda, especially considering I had left her in so much sorrow, as I have already told you. Nevertheless I did obey, like a good servant, though I found it was likely to be at the expense of my health. But four days after my arrival, there came a man in quest of me, with the letter which he gave me, and which by the superscription I knew to be Lucinda's; for it was her own hand. I opened it with fear and trembling, believing it must be some very extraordinary matter, that put her to writing to me at a distance, a thing she very seldom did when I was near her. Before I read it, I inquired of the messenger who gave it him, and how long he had been coming. He told me, that, passing accidentally through a street of the town about noon, a very beautiful lady, with tears in her eyes, called to him from a window, and said to him in a great hurry. Friend, if you are a Christian, as you seem to be, I beg of you, for the love of God, to carry this letter, with all expedition, to the place and person it is directed to, for both are well known; and in so doing you will do a charity acceptable to our Lord. And that you may not want wherewithal to do it, take what is tied up in this handkerchief; and, so saying, she threw the handkerchief out at the window, in which were tied up a hundred reals, and this good ring I have here, with the letter I have given you: and presently, without staying for my answer, she quitted the window, but first she saw me take up the letter and the handkerchief; and I assured her by signs, that I would do what she commanded. And now, seeing myself so well paid for the pains I was to take in bringing the letter, and knowing by the superscription it was for you (for, sir, I know you very well), and obliged besides by the tears of that beautiful lady, I resolved not to trust any other person, but to deliver it to you with my own hands. And, in sixteen hours (for so long it is since it was given me) I have performed the journey, which you know

in eighteen leagues. While the kind messenger was speaking thus to me, I hung upon his words, my legs trembling so that I could scarcely stand. At length I opened the letter, and saw it contained these words:

'The promise Don Fernando gave you, that he would draw your father to speak to mine, he has fulfilled, more for his own gratification than your interest. Know, sir, he has demanded me to wife; and my father, allured by the advantage he thinks Don Fernando has over you, has accepted this proposal with so much earnestness, that the marriage is to be solemnized two days hence, and that with so much secrecy and privacy, that the heavens alone, and a few of our own family, are to be witnesses of it. Imagine what a condition I am in, and consider whether it be convenient for you to return home. Whether I love you or not, the event of this business will show you. God grant this may come to your hand, before mine be reduced to the extremity of being joined with his, who keeps his promised faith so ill.'

These, in fine, were the contents of the letter, and such as made me set out immediately, without waiting for any other answer, or the money: for now I plainly saw it was not the buying of the horses, but the indulging his own pleasure, that had moved Don Fernando to send me to his brother. The rage I conceived against Don Fernando, joined with the fear of losing the prize I had acquired by the services and wishes of so many years, added wings to my speed: so that the next day I reached our town, at the hour and moment most convenient for me to go and talk with Lucinda. I went privately, having left the mule I rode on at the house of the honest man who brought me the letter. And fortune, which I then found propitious, so ordered it that Lucinda was standing at the grate¹, the witness of our loves. She presently

¹ The *reja*, or grating, before the windows on the ground-floor.

knew me and I her; but not as she ought to have known me and I her. But who is there in the world that can boast of having fathomed, and thoroughly seen into the intricate and variable nature of a woman? Nobody, certainly. I say then, that, as soon as Lucinda saw me, she said: Cardenio, I am in my bridal habit: there are now staying for me in the hall the treacherous Don Fernando and my covetous father, with some others, who shall sooner be witnesses of my death than of my nuptials. Be not troubled, my friend; but procure the means to be present at this sacrifice, which, if my arguments cannot avert, I carry a dagger about me, which can prevent a more determined force, by putting an end to my life, and giving you a convincing proof of the affection I have borne, and still do bear you. I replied to her, with confusion and precipitation, fearing I should want time to answer her: Let your actions, madam, make good your words; if you carry a dagger to secure your honour, I carry a sword to defend you, or kill myself, if fortune proves adverse to us. I do not believe she heard all these words, being, as I perceived, called away hastily; for the bridegroom waited for her. Herewith the night of my sorrow was fallen! the sun of my joy was set! I remained without light in my eyes, and without judgement in my intellect! I was irresolute as to going into her house, nor did I know which way to turn me: but when I reflected on the consequences of my being present at what might happen in that case, I animated myself the best I could, and at last got into her house. And as I was perfectly acquainted with all the avenues, and the whole family was busied about the secret affair then transacting, I escaped being perceived by anybody. And so, without being seen, I had leisure to place myself in the hollow of a bow-window of the hall, behind the hangings, where two pieces of tapestry met; whence, without being seen myself, I could see all that was done in the hall. Who can describe the emotions and beatings of heart I felt while I stood

there ? the thoughts that occurred to me ? the reflections I made ? Such and so many were they, that they neither can nor ought to be told. Let it suffice to tell you, that the bridegroom came into the hall without other ornament than the clothes he usually wore. He had with him, for bridesman, a counsellor-german of Lucinda's, and there was no other person in the room but the servants of the house. Soon after, from a withdrawing room, came out Lucinda, accompanied by her mother and two of her own maids, as richly dressed and adorned as her quality and beauty deserved, and as befitting the height and perfection of all that was gallant and courtly: the agony and distraction I was in, gave me no leisure to view and observe the particulars of her dress ; I could only take notice of the colours, which were carnation and white, and of the splendour of the precious stones and jewels of her head-attire, and of the rest of her habit, which yet were exceeded in lustre by the singular beauty of her fair and golden tresses, which vying with the precious stones, and the light of four flambeaux that were in the hall, struck the eyes with superior brightness. O memory, thou mortal enemy of my repose ! why dost thou represent to me now the incomparable beauty of that my adored enemy ? Were it not better, cruel memory, to put me in mind of, and represent to my imagination what she then did ; that moved by so flagrant an injury, I may strive, since I do not revenge it, at least to put an end to my life ? Be not weary, gentlemen, of hearing the digressions I make ; for my misfortune is not of that kind that can or ought to be related succinctly and methodically, since each circumstance seems to me to deserve a long discourse. To this the priest replied ; that they were so far from being tired with hearing it, that they took great pleasure in the minutest particulars he recounted, being such as deserved not to be passed over in silence, and merited no less attention than the principal parts of the story.

I say then, continued Cardenio, that, they being

all assembled in the hall, the parish priest entered, and having taken them both by the hand, in order to perform what is necessary on such occasions, when he came to these words, 'Will you, Madam Lucinda, take Señor Don Fernando, who is here present, for your lawful husband, as our holy mother the church commands?' I thrust out my head and neck through the partings of the tapestry, and with the utmost attention and distraction of soul, set myself to listen to what Lucinda answered, expecting from her answer the sentence of my death, or the confirmation of my life. O! that I had dared to venture out then, and to have cried aloud, Ah! Lucinda, Lucinda! take heed what you do, consider what you owe me; behold, you are mine, and cannot be another's. Take notice, that your saying Yes, and the putting an end to my life, will both happen in the same moment. Ah, traitor Don Fernando! ravisher of my glory, death of my life! what is it you would have? what is it you pretend to? consider, you cannot, as a Christian, arrive at the end of your desires, for Lucinda is my wife, and I am her husband. Ah, fool that I am! now that I am absent, and at a distance from the danger, I am saying I ought to have done what I did not do. Now that I have suffered myself to be robbed of my soul's treasure, I am cursing the thief on whom I might have revenged myself, if I had had as much heart to do it as I have now to complain. In short, since I was then a coward and a fool, no wonder if I am now ashamed, repentant, and mad. The priest stood expecting Lucinda's answer, who gave it not for a long time; and, when I thought she was pulling out the dagger in defence of her honour, or letting loose her tongue to avow some truth, which might undeceive them, and redound to my advantage, I heard her say, with a low and faint voice, I will. The same said Don Fernando, and, the ring being put on, they remained tied in an indissoluble band. The bridegroom came to embrace his bride; and she, laying her hand on her

heart, swooned away between her mother's arms. It remains now to tell you what condition I was in when I saw in the Yes I had heard, my hopes frustrated, Lucinda's vows and promises broken, and so possibility left of my ever recovering the happiness I in that moment lost. I was totally confounded, and thought myself abandoned of heaven, and become an enemy to the earth that sustained me, the air drying my breath for my sighs, and the water moisture for my tears: the fire alone was so increased in me, that I was all inflamed with rage and jealousy. They were all affrighted at Lucinda's swooning; and her mother, unlacing her bosom to give her air, she discovered in it a paper folded up, which Don Fernando presently seized, and read it by the light of one of the flambeaux; and, having done reading it, he sat himself down in a chair, leaning his cheek on his hand, with all the signs of a man full of thought, and without attending to the means that were using to recover his bride from her fainting fit.

Perceiving the whole house in a consternation, I ventured out, not caring whether I was seen or not; and with a determined resolution, it seem, to act so desperate a part, that all the world should have known the just indignation of my breast, by the chastisement of the false Don Fernando, and of the false, though swooning traitress. But my fate, which has doubtless reserved me, for greater evils, if greater can possibly be, ordained that, at that juncture I had the use of my understanding, which has since failed me; and so, without thinking to take revenge on my greatest enemies (which might very easily have been done, when they thought so little of me), I resolved to take it on myself, and to execute on my own person that punishment which they deserved; and perhaps with greater rigour than I should have done on those, ever to taking away their lives; for a sudden death were by torture, it always killing, without putting an end to life. In a word, I got out of the house, and was

to the place where I had left the mule: I got it saddled and without taking any leave, I mounted, and rode out of the town, not daring, like another Lot, to look behind me; and, when I found myself in the field alone, and covered by the darkness of the night, and the silence thereof inviting me to complain, without regard or fear of being heard or known, I gave a loose to my voice, and untied my tongue, in a thousand exclamations on Lucinda and Don Fernando, as if that had been satisfaction for the wrong they had done me. I called her cruel, false, and ungrateful; but, above all, covetous, since the wealth of my enemy had shut the eyes of her affection, and withdrawn it from me to engage it to another, to whom fortune had shown herself more bountiful and liberal. But in the height of these curses and reproaches, I excused her, saying: It was no wonder that a maiden, kept up close in her father's house, and always accustomed to obey her parents, should comply with their inclination, especially when they gave her for a husband to considerable, so rich, and so accomplished a cavalier; and that to have refused him, would have made people think she had no judgement, or that her affections were engaged elsewhere; either of which would have redounded to the prejudice of her honour and good name. But, on the other hand, supposing she had owned her engagement to me, it would have appeared, that she had not made so ill a choice, but she might have been excused, since, before Don Fernando offered himself, they themselves could not, consistently with reason, have deemed a better match for their daughter; and how easily might she, before she came to the last extremity of giving her hand, have said, that I had already given her mine; for I would have appeared, and have confirmed whatever she had invented on this occasion. In fine, I concluded, that little love, little judgement, much ambition, and a desire of greatness, had made her forget those words, by which she had deluded, kept up, and nourished my first hopes, and honest desires.

With three soliloquies, and with this disquietude I journeyed on the rest of the night, and at daybreak arrived at an opening into these mountainous parts through which I went on three days more, without any road or path, until at last I came to a certain meadow, that lies somewhere hereabouts; and there I inquired of some shepherds, which was the most solitary part of these craggy rocks. They directed me towards this place. I presently came hither, with design to end my life here; and, at the entering among these brakes, my mule fell down dead through weariness and hunger; or, as I rather believe, to be rid of so useless a burden. Thus I was left on foot, quite spent and famished, without having or desiring any relief. In this manner I continued, I know not how long, extended on the ground; at length I got up, somewhat refreshed, and found near me some goatherds, who must needs be the persons that relieved my necessity; for they told me in what condition they found me, and that I said so many senseless and extravagant things, that they wanted no further proof of my having lost my understanding: and I am sensible I have not been perfectly right ever since, but so shattered and crazy, that I commit a thousand extravagances, tearing my garments, howling aloud through these solitudes, cursing my fortune, and in vain repeating the beloved name of my enemy, without any other design or intent, at the time, than to end my life with outcries and exclamations. And when I come to myself, I find I am so weary, and so sore, that I can hardly stir. My usual abode is in the hollow of a cork-tree, large enough to be a habitation for this miserable carcass. The goatherds, who feed their cattle hereabouts, provide me sustenance out of charity, laying victuals on the rocks, and in places where they think I may chance to pass and find it; and though, at such times, I happen to be out of my senses, natural necessity makes me know my nourishment, and awakes in me an appetite to desire it, and the will to take it. At other times, as they tell me

when they meet me in my senses, I come into the road, and though the shepherds, who are bringing food from the village to their huts, willingly offer me a part of it, I rather choose to take it from them by force. Thus I pass my sad and miserable life, waiting until it shall please heaven to bring it to a final period, or by fixing the thoughts of that day in my mind, to erase out of it all memory of the beauty and treachery of Lucinda, and the wrongs done me by Don Fernando: for if it touches me thus merely before I die, my thoughts will take a more rational turn, if not, it remains only to beseech God to have mercy on my soul; for I feel no ability nor strength in myself to raise my body out of this strait, into which I have voluntarily brought it.

Thus gentlemen, is the bitter story of my misfortune. tell me now, could it be borne with less concern than what you have perceived in me? And, pray, give yourselves no trouble to persuade or advise me to follow what you may think reasonable and proper for my cure, for it will do me just as much good as a medicine prescribed by a skilful physician will do a sick man who refuses to take it. I will have no health without Lucinda; and, since she was pleased to give herself to another, when she was, or ought to have been, mine, let me have the pleasure of indulging myself in unhappiness, since I might have been happy if I had pleased. She, by her mutability, would have me irretrievably undone: I, by endeavouring to destroy myself, would surely be still; and I shall stand as an example to posterity, of having been the only unfortunate person whom the impossibility of receiving consolation could not comfort, but plunged in still greater afflictions and misfortunes; for I verily believe they will not have an end even in death itself.

Here Cardenio ended his long discourse, and his story, no less full of misfortunes than of love: and just as the priest was preparing to say something to him, by way of consolation, he was prevented by a voice, which, in mournful accents, said what will be

related in the fourth book of this history; for, at that point the wise and judicious historian Cid Hamad Ben Engeli put an end to the third¹.

CHAPTER XXVIII *

Which treats of the new and agreeable adventure that befell the priest and the barber in the Sable Mountains.

Most happy and fortunate were the times in which the most daring knight Don Quixote de la Mancha was ushered into the world; since, through the honourable resolution he took of reviving and restoring to the world the long since lost, and as it were buried order of knight-errantry, we, in these our times, barren and unfruitful of amusing entertainments, enjoy not only the sweets of his true history, but also the stories and episodes of it, which are, in some sort, no less pleasing, artificial, and true, than the history itself. In which resuming the broken thread of the narration relates, that, as the priest was preparing himself to comfort Cardenio, he was hindered by a voice, which with mournful accents, spoke in this manner:

O heavens! is it possible I have at last found a place that can afford a secret grave for the unhappy burden of this body, which I bear about so much against my will? yes, it is, if the solitude, which these rocks promise, do not deceive me. Ah, woe is me! how much more agreeable society shall I find in these crags and broken, which will at least afford me leisure to communicate my miseries to heaven by complaints, than in the conversation of men, since there is no one living from whom I can expect counsel in doubts, ease in complaints, or remedy in misfortune.

¹ This refers to the original division of *Don Quixote* into parts—already explained in a note on p. 66.

* In the *principe*, Chapter xxvii begins the Fourth Part.

The priest, and they that were with him, heard all this very distinctly; and perceiving, as indeed it was, that the voice was near them, they rose up in quest of the speaker; and they had not gone twenty paces, when, behind a rock, they espied a youth, dressed like a peasant, sitting at the foot of an ash-tree; whose face they could not then discern, because he hung down his head, on account that he was washing his feet in a rivulet which ran by. They drew near so silently that he did not hear them; nor was he intent upon anything but washing his feet, which were such, that they seemed to be two pieces of pure crystal growing among the other pebbles of the brook. They stood in admiration at the whiteness and beauty of the feet, which did not seem to them to be made for breaking of clods, or following the plough, as their owner's dress might have persuaded them they were: and finding they were not perceived, the priest, who went foremost, made signs to the other two, to crouch low, or hide themselves behind some of the rocks thereabouts: which they accordingly did, and stood observing attentively what the youth was doing. He had on a grey double-sleeved jerkin, girt tight about his body with a laced towel. He wore also a pair of breeches and gamashes of grey cloth, and a grey huntsman's cap on his head. His gamashes were now pulled up to the middle of his leg, which really seemed to be of snowy alabaster. Having made an end of washing his beautiful feet, he immediately wiped them with a handkerchief, which he pulled out from under his cap: and, at the taking it from thence, he lifted up his face, and the lookers on had an opportunity of beholding an incomparable beauty, and such a beauty, that Cardenio said to the priest, in a low voice; since this is not Lucinda, it can be no human, but must be a divine creature. The youth took off his cap, and shaking his head, there began to flow down, and spread over his shoulders, a quantity of lovely hair, that Apollo himself might envy. By this they found that the person who seemed to be

peasant was, in reality, a woman, and a delicate
 no; nay, the handsomest that two of the three had
 ever beheld with their eyes, or even Cardenio himself.
 he had never seen and known Lucinda. For, as he
 afterwards affirmed, the beauty of Lucinda alone
 could come in competition with her. Her long and
 golden tresses not only fell on her shoulders, but
 covered her whole body, excepting her feet. Her
 fingers served instead of a comb, and if her feet in
 the water seemed to be of crystal, her hands in her
 hair were like driven snow. All which excited a still
 greater admiration and desire in the three spectators
 to learn who she was. For this purpose they made
 to show themselves, and, at the rustling they made
 in getting upon their feet, the beautiful maiden raised
 her head, and, with both her hands, parting her hair
 from before her eyes, saw those who had made the
 noise: and scarcely had she seen them, when she rose
 up, and, without staying to put on her shoes, or re-
 place her hair, she hastily caught up something like
 a bundle of clothes which lay close by her, and betook
 herself to flight, all in confusion and surprise: but
 she had not gone six steps, when her timid feet were
 brought able to endure the sharpness of the stone, she
 fell down, which the three perceiving, they went up
 to her, and the first was the first, who said: stay,
 maiden, wherever you are; for those you see here
 have no other intention but that of serving you, there
 is no reason why you should endeavour to make us
 becomen as you, which neither your feet can bear,
 nor ours permit. To aid this she scattered out a wind
 being surrounded and surrounded. Then the first
 taking hold of her hand, went on saying: What
 your dress, maiden, would exceed from in your face
 discovers: a manifest indication that no evil can
 has disguised your beauty in so uncouth a habit,
 and brought you to such a distance as this, in which
 it has been our goal to find you, if not to sit
 amidst a remedy to your misfortune, at least to
 assist you with our advice, since no evil which does

not destroy life itself, can affect so much, or arrive to that extremity, as to make the sufferer refuse to hearken to advice, when given with a sincere intention; and therefore, dear madam, or dear sir, or whatever you please to be, shake off the surprise which the sight of us has occasioned, and relate to us your good or ill fortune; for you will find us jointly, or severally, disposed to sympathize with you in your misfortune.

While the priest was saying this, the disguised maiden stood like one stupefied, her eyes fixed on them all, without moving her lips, or speaking a word: just like a country clown, when he is shown of a sudden something curious, or never seen before. But the priest adding more to the same purpose, she fetched a deep sigh, and, breaking silence, said: Since neither the solitude of these rocks has been sufficient to conceal me, nor the decomposition of my hair has suffered my tongue to belie my sex, it would be in vain for me now to dress up a fiction, which, if you seemed to give credit to, it would be rather out of complaisance, than for any other reason. Thus being the case, I say, gentlemen, that I take kindly the offers you have made me, which have laid me under an obligation to satisfy you in whatever you have desired of me; though I fear the relation I shall make of my misfortune will raise in you a return equal to your compassion; since it will not be in your power, either to remedy or alleviate them. Nevertheless, that my honour may not suffer in your opinion, from your having already discovered me to be a woman, and your seeing me young, and alone, and in this garb, any one of which circumstances is sufficient to bring discredit on the best reputation, I must tell you what I would gladly have concealed, if it was in my power. All this she, who appeared so beautiful a woman, spoke without hesitating, so readily, and with so much ease, and sweetness both of tongue and voice, that her good sense surprised them no less than her beauty. And they again repeating their kind offers, and treats to her, that she would perform her promise.

she, without more asking, having first modestly put on her shoes and stockings, and gathered up her hair, seated herself upon a flat stone; and the three being placed round her, after she had done some violence to herself in restraining the tears that came into her eyes, she began the history of her life, with a clear and sedate voice, in this manner:

There is a place in this country of Andalusia, from which a duke takes a title, which makes him one of those they call 'Grandees of Spain.' This duke has two sons; the elder, heir to his estate, and in appearance, to his virtues; and the younger, heir to I know not what, unless it be to the treachery of Vellido, and the deceitfulness of Galanon.¹ My parents are vassals to this nobleman; it is true, they are of low extraction, but so rich, that, if the advantages of their birth had equalled those of their fortune, neither would they have had anything more to wish for, nor should I have had any reason to fear being exposed to the misfortune I am now involved in; for it is probable, my misfortune arose from their not being nobly born. It is true, indeed, they are not so low, that they need to be ashamed of their condition, nor so high, as to hinder me from thinking, that their meanness is the cause of my unhappiness. In a word, they are farmers, plain people, without mixture of bad blood, and, as they usually say, rusty Old Christians; but so rusty, that their wealth, and handsome way of living, is, by dexterity, acquiring them the name of gentlemen, and even of cavaliers; though the riches and nobility they valued themselves most upon, was, their having me for their daughter; and, as they had no other child to inherit what they possessed, and were besides very affectionate parents, I was one of the most indulged girls that ever father or mother fondled. I was the mirror, in which they beheld themselves, the staff of their old age, and she whose happiness was the sole object of all their wishes.

¹ See the notes on pp. 12 and 236.

under the guidance of heaven; to which, being so good, mine were always entirely conformable. And, as I was mistress of their affections, so was I of all they possessed. As I pleased, servants were hired and discharged; through my hands passed the account and management of what was sowed and reaped. The oil-mills, the wine-presses, the number of herds, flocks, bee-hives; in a word, all that so rich a farmer as my father has, or can be supposed to have, was entrusted to my care: I was both steward and mistress, with so much diligence on my part, and satisfaction on theirs, that I cannot easily enhance it to you. The hours of the day that remained after giving directions, and assigning proper tasks to the head servants, overseers, and day-labourers, I employed in such exercises as are not only allowable, but necessary to young maidens, to wit, in handling the needle, making lace, and sometimes spinning: and if now and then, to recreate my mind, I quitted those exercises, I entertained myself with reading some book of devotion, or touching the harp; for experience showed me that music composes the mind when it is disordered, and relieves the spirits after labour. Such was the life I led in my father's house; and if I have been so particular in recounting it, it was not out of ostentation, nor to give you to understand that I am rich, but that you may be apprised how little I deserved to fall from that state into the unhappy one I am now in. While I passed my time in so many occupations, and in a retirement that might be compared to that of a nunnery, without being seen, as I imagined, by any one besides our own servants, because, when I went to Mass, it was very early in the morning, and always in company with my mother, and some of the maid-servants, and I was so closely veiled and reserved, that my eyes scarce saw more ground than the space I set my foot upon; it fell out, I say, notwithstanding all this, that the eyes of love, or rather of violence to which those of a lynx are not to be compared, discovered me through the industrious conceits of

Don Fernando; for that is the name of the duke's younger son, whom I told you of.

She had no sooner named Don Fernando, than Cardenio's colour changed, and he began to sweat with such violent perturbation, that the priest and the barber, who perceived it, were afraid he was falling into one of the mad fits, to which they had heard he was now and then subject. But Cardenio did nothing but sweat, and sat still, fixing his eyes most attentively on the country-maid, imagining who she must be; who, taking no notice of the emotions of Cardenio, continued her story, saying:

Scarcely had he seen me, when (as he afterwards declared) he fell desperately in love with me, as the proofs he then gave of it sufficiently evinced. But to shorten the account of my misfortunes, which are endless, I pass over in silence the diligence Don Fernando used in getting an opportunity to declare his passion to me. He bribed our whole family; he gave and offered presents, and did favours to several of my relations. Every day was a festival and day of rejoicing in our street: nobody could sleep at nights for the serenades. Infinite were the billets-doux that came, I knew not how, to my hands, filled with amorous expressions, and offers of kindness, with more promises and oaths in them than letters. All which was so far from softening me, that I grew the more obdurate, as if he had been my mortal enemy; and all the measures he took to bring me to his lure had been designed for quite a contrary purpose; not that I disliked the gallantry of Don Fernando, or thought him too importunate; for it gave me I know not what secret satisfaction to see myself thus courted and respected by so considerable a cavalier, and it was not disagreeable to me to find my own praise in his letters: for let us women be never so ill-favoured, I take it, we are always pleased to hear ourselves called handsome. But all this was opposed by my own virtue, together with the repeated good advice of my parents, who plainly saw through Don Fer-

ando's design; for, indeed, he took no pains to hide it from the world. My parents told me, that they reposed their credit and reputation in my virtue and integrity alone; they bade me consider the disproportion between me and Don Fernando, from whence I ought to conclude that his thoughts, whatever he might say to the contrary, were more intent upon his own pleasure, than upon my good: and if I had a mind to throw an obstacle in the way of his designs in order to make him desist from his unjust pretensions, they would marry me, they said, out of hand, to whosoever I pleased, either of the chief of our town, or of the whole neighbourhood around us; since their considerable wealth, and my good character, put it in their power easily to provide a suitable match for me. With this promise, and the truth of what they said, I fortified my virtue, and would never answer Don Fernando the least word that might afford him the most distant hope of succeeding in his design. All this reservedness of mine which he ought to have taken for disdain, served rather to quicken his lascivious appetite: for I can give no better name to the passion he showed for me, which, had it been such as it ought, you would not now have known it, since there would have been no occasion for my giving you this account of it.

At length Don Fernando discovered, that my parents were looking out for a match for me, in order to deprive him of all hope of gaining me, or at least were resolved to have me more narrowly watched. And this news, or suspicion, put him upon doing what you shall presently hear; which was, that, one night as I was in my chamber, attended only by a maid that waited upon me, the doors being fast locked, lest by any neglect my virtue might be endangered, without my knowing or imagining how, in the midst of all this care and precaution, and the solitude of the silence and retirement, he stood before me, at whose sight I was struck blind and dumb, and had not power to cry out; nor do I believe he would have suffered

who is not my lawful husband shall ever prevail on me.

If that be all you stick at, most beautiful Dorothea (for that is the name of this unhappy woman), said the treacherous cavalier, lo! here I give you my hand to be yours, and let the heavens, from which nothing is hid, and the image of Our Lady you have here, be witnesses to this truth. When Cardenio heard her call herself Dorothea, he fell again into his disorder, and was thoroughly confirmed in his first opinion; but he would not interrupt the story, being desirous to hear the event of what he partly knew already; only he said: What! Madam, is your name Dorothea? I have heard of one of the same name, whose misfortune very much resembles yours. But proceed, for some time or other I may tell you things that will equally move your wonder and compassion. Dorothea took notice of Cardenio's words, and of his strange and tattered dress; and desired him, if he knew anything of her affairs, to tell it presently; for, if fortune had left her anything that was good, it was the courage she had to bear any disaster whatever that might befall her, secure in this, that none could possibly happen, that could in the least add to those she already endured. Madam, replied Cardenio, I would not be the means of destroying that courage in you, by telling you what I think, if what I imagine should be true; and hitherto there is no opportunity lost, nor is it of any importance that you should know it as yet. Be that as it will, answered Dorothea: I go on with my story. Don Fernando, taking the image that stood in the room, and placing it for a witness of our reposeals, with all the solemnity of vows and oaths, gave me his word to be my husband: although I warned him, before he had done, to consider well what he was about, and the uneasiness it must needs give his father, to see him married to a farmer's daughter, and his own vassal; and therefore he ought to beware, lest my beauty, such as it was, should blind him, since that would not be a sufficient excuse for his fault; and if

attested new saints, and imprecated a thousand curses on himself, if he failed in the performance of his promise. The tears came again into his eyes; he redoubled his sighs, and pressed me closer between his arms, from which he had never once loosed me. And with this, and my maid's going again out of the room, I ceased to be one, and he became a traitor and perjured.

The day that succeeded the night of my misfortune came on, but not so fast as I believe Don Fernando wished. For, after the accomplishment of our desires, the greatest pleasure is to get away from the place of enjoyment. I say this, because Don Fernando made haste to leave me; and by the diligence of the same maid who had betrayed me, was got in the street before break of day. And, at parting, he said, though not with the same warmth and vehemency as at his coming, I might entirely depend upon his honour, and the truth and sincerity of his oaths; and as a confirmation of his promise, he drew a ring of great value from his finger, and put it on mine. In short, he went away, and I remained I know not whether sad or joyful; thus I can truly say, that I remained confused and thoughtful, and almost distracted at what had passed; and either I had no heart, or I forgot to chide my maid for the treachery she had been guilty of in conveying Don Fernando into my chamber: for, indeed, I had not yet determined with myself, whether what had befallen me was to my good or harm. I told Don Fernando, at parting, he might, if he pleased, since I was now his own, see me on other nights by the same method he had now taken, until he should be pleased to publish what was done to the world. But he came no more after the following night, nor could I get a sight of him in the street, or at church, in above a month, though I tired myself with looking after him in vain; and though I knew he was in the town, and that he went almost every day to hunt, an exercise he was very fond of. Those days, and those hours, I too well remember, were sad and dismal ones to me; for in them I began to

as he expressed it, to the end of the world. I immediately put up, in a pillow-case, a woman's dress, with some jewels and money, to provide against whatever might happen: and in the dead of that very night, without letting my treacherous maid into the secret, I left our house, accompanied only by my servant, and a thousand anxious thoughts, and took the way that led to the town on foot, the desire of getting thither adding wings to my flight, that, if I could not prevent what I concluded was already done, I might at least demand of Don Fernando, with what conscience he had done it. In two days and a half I arrived at the place, and, going into the town, I inquired where Lucinda's father lived: and the first person I addressed myself to answered me more than I desired to hear. He told me where I might find the house, and related to me the whole story of what had happened at the young lady's wedding; all which was so public in the town, that the people assembled in every street to talk of it. He told me that, on the night Don Fernando was married to Lucinda, after she had pronounced the *Yes*, by which she became his wedded wife, she fell into a swoon; and the bridegroom, in unclasping her bosom to give her air, found a paper written with Lucinda's own hand, in which she affirmed and declared, that she could not be wife to Don Fernando, because she was already Cardenio's (who, as the man told me, was a very considerable cavalier of the same town) and that she had given her consent to Don Fernando, merely in obedience to her parents. In short, the paper gave them to understand, that she designed killing herself as soon as the ceremony was over, and contained likewise her reasons for so doing: all which they say, was confirmed by a poniard they found about her, in some part of her clothes. Don Fernando, seeing all this, and concluding himself deluded, mocked, and deceived by Lucinda, made at her, before she recovered from her fainting fit, and, with the same poniard that was found, endeavoured to stab her; and had certainly done it, if her parents

be too a person so much below me, and so unworthy of my better inclinations. At the instant I heard the crier, I went out of the town with my servant, who already began to discover some signs of staggering in his promised fidelity; and that night we got into the thickest of this mountain, for fear of being found. But, as it is commonly said, that one evil calls upon another, and that the end of one disaster is the beginning of a greater, so it befell me: for my good servant, until then faithful and trusty, seeing me in this desert place, and incited by his own baseness rather than by any beauty of mine, resolved to lay hold of the opportunity this solitude seemed to afford him, and, with little shame, and less fear of God, or respect to his mistress, began to make love to me; but, finding that I answered him with such language as the impudence of his attempt deserved, he laid aside entreaties, by which, at first, he hoped to succeed, and began to use force. But just heaven, that seldom or never fails to regard and favour righteous intentions, favoured mine in such a manner, that, with the little strength I had, and without much difficulty, I pushed him down a precipice, where I left him, I know not whether alive or dead. And then, with more nimbleness than could be expected from my surprise and alarm, I entered into this desert mountain, without any other thought or design than to hide myself here from my father, and others, who, by his order, were in search after me. It is I know not how many months since, with this design, I came hither, where I met with a shepherd who took me for his servant to a place in the very midst of these rocks. I served him, all this time, as a shepherd's boy, endeavouring to be always abroad in the field, the better to conceal my hair, which has now so unexpectedly discovered me. But all my care and solitude were to no purpose; for my master came to discover I was not a man, and the same wicked thoughts sprung up in his breast that had possessed my servant. But, as fortune does not always with the difficulty

he offered them. The barber, who all this time had stood silent and in suspense, paid also his compliment and, with no less goodwill than the priest, made them an offer of whatever was in his power for their service. He told them also, briefly, the cause that brought them thither, with the strange madness of Don Quixote, and that they were then waiting for his squire, who was gone to seek him. Cardenio hereupon remembered, as if it had been a dream, the quarrel he had with Don Quixote, which he related to the company, but could not recollect whence it arose.

And thus instant they heard a voice, and, knowing it to be Sancho Panza's, who, not finding them where he had left them, was calling as loud as he could to them, they went forward to meet him; and asking him after Don Quixote, he told them, that he had found him, naked to his shirt, feeble, wan, and half dead with hunger, and sighing for his lady Dulcinea; and though he had told him, that she had her commands on him to come out from that place, and repair to Toboso, where she expected him, his answer was, that he was determined not to appear before her beauty, until he had performed exploits that might render him worthy of her favour: and, if his master permitted in that behaviour, he would run a risk of never becoming an emperor, as he was in honour bound to be, not even an archbishop, which was the least he could be: therefore they should consider what was to be done to get him from that place. The licentiate bid him be in no pain about that matter; for they would get him away, whether he would or no.

He then recounted to Cardenio and Dorothea what they had contrived for Don Quixote's cure, or at least for decoying him to his own house. Upon which Dorothea said, she would undertake to act the distressed damsel better than the barber, especially since she had a woman's apparel, with which she could do it to the life; and they might leave it to her to perform what was necessary for carrying on their

of his master's coming to be an emperor depend upon his not seeming to know them. Neither the priest, nor Cardenio, would go with them; the latter that he might not put Don Quixote in mind of the quarrel he had with him; and the priest, because his presence was not then necessary: and therefore they let the others go on before, and followed them far and softly on foot. The priest would have instructed Dorothea in her part: who said, they need give themselves no trouble about that, for she would perform all to a tittle, according to the rules and precepts of the books of chivalry.

They had gone about three quarters of a league, when, among some intricate rocks, they discovered Don Quixote, by this time clothed, but not armed; and as soon as Dorothea espied him, and was informed by Sancho, that was his master, she whipped on her palfrey, being attended by the well-bearded barber; and, when she was come up to Don Quixote, the squire threw himself off his mule, and went to take down Dorothea in his arms, who, alighting briskly, went and knelted at Don Quixote's feet: and though he strove to raise her up, she, without getting up, addressed him in this manner:

I will never arise from this place, O valorous and redoubted knight, until your goodness and courtesy vouchsafe me a horse, which will redound to the honour and glory of your person, and to the weal of the most disconsolate and aggrieved damsel the sun has ever beheld. And if it be so, that the valour of your puissant arm be correspondent to the vice of your immortal fame, you are obliged to protect an unhappy wight, who is come from regions so remote, led by the odour of your renowned name, to seek at your hands a remedy for her misfortune. I will not answer you a word, fair lady, replied Don Quixote, nor will I hear a jot more of your business, until you arise from the ground. I will not arise, Señor, answered the afflicted damsel, if, by your courtesy, the boon I beg be not first vouchsafed me. I do vouch-

safe, and grant it you, answered Don Quixote, provided my compliance therewith be of no detriment or damage to my king, my country, or her who keeps the key of my heart and liberty. It will not be to the prejudice or damage of any of these, dear sir, replied the doleful damsel. And as she was saying this, Sancho Panza approached his master's ear, and said to him softly: Your worship, sir, may very safely grant the boon she asks, for it is a mere trifle, only to kill a great lubberly giant: and she, who begs it, is the mighty Princess Micomicona, queen of the great kingdom of Micomicon in Ethiopia. Let her be who she will, answered Don Quixote, I shall do what is my duty, and what my conscience dictates, in conformity to the rules of my profession: and, turning himself to the damsel, he said: Fairest lady, rise: for I vouchsafe you whatever boon you ask. Then, what I ask, said the damsel, is, that your magnanimous person will go with me, whither I will conduct you: and that you will promise me not to engage in any other adventure, or comply with any other demand whatever, until you have avenged me on a traitor who, against all right, human and divine, has usurped my kingdom. I repeat it, that I grant your request, answered Don Quixote: and therefore, lady, from this day forward shake off the melancholy that disturbs you, and let your fainting hopes recover fresh force and spirits: for by the help of God, and of my arm, you shall soon see yourself restored to your kingdom, and seated on the throne of your ancient and high estate, in despite of all the traitors that shall oppose it: and therefore all hands to the work: for the danger, they say, lies in the delay. The distressed damsel would fain have kissed his hands: but Don Quixote, who was in everything a most gallant and courteous knight, would by no means consent to it, but, making her arise, embraced her with much politeness and respect, and ordered Sancho to get Ronsante ready, and to help him on with his armour instantly. Sancho took down the arms, which were hung,

companies: but the priest, who was a grand schismatic, soon hit upon an expedient; which was, that with a pair of scissors, which he carried in a case, he whipped off Cardenio's beard in an instant: then put him on a grey reponch, and gave him his own black cloak, himself remaining in his breeches and doublet: and now Cardenio made so different a figure from what he did before that he would not have known himself, though he had looked in a glass. This being done, though the others were got a good way before them, while they were thus disguising themselves, they easily got first into the high road: for the rockiness and narrowness of the way would not permit those on horseback to go on so fast as those on foot. In short, they got into the plain at the foot of the mountain: and, when Don Quixote and his company came out, the priest set himself to gaze at him very earnestly for some time, giving signs as if he began to know him: and, after he had stood a pretty while viewing him, he ran to him with open arms, crying aloud: In an happy hour are you met, mirror of chivalry, my noble countryman Don Quixote de la Mancha, the flower and cream of gentility, the shelter and relief of the needy, the quintessence of knight-errant! and, in saying this he embraced Don Quixote by the knee of his left leg: who being amazed at what he saw and heard, set himself to consider him attentively: at length he knew him, and was surprised to see him, and made no small effort to alight. But the priest would not suffer it: whereupon Don Quixote said: Permit me, señor licenciado, to alight; for it is not fit I should be on horseback, and so reverence a person as your worship on foot. I will by no means consent to it, said the priest: let your greatness continue on horseback; for on horseback you achieve the greatest exploits and adventures that our age hath beheld: as for me, who am a priest, though unworthy, it will suffice me to get up behind some one of these gentlemen, who travel with you, if it be not too troublesome to them; and I shall fancy myself mounted on Pegasus, or on a zebra, or

as before : at which Don Quixote marvelled greatly, and desired the priest, when he had leisure, to teach him that charm ; for he was of opinion, that its virtue must extend further than to the fastening on of beards, since it was clear, that, where the beard was torn off, the flesh must be left wounded and bloody, and since it wrought a perfect cure, it must be good for other things besides beards. It is so, said the priest, and promised to teach it him the very first opportunity. They now agreed, that the priest should get up first, and that they should all three ride by turns, until they came to the inn, which was about two leagues off.

The three being mounted, that is to say, Don Quixote, the priest, and the damsel ; and the other three on foot, to wit, Cardenio, the barber, and Sancho Panza ; Don Quixote said to the damsel : Your grandfather, madam, will be pleased to lead on which way you like best. And, before she could reply, the licentiate said : Towards what kingdom would your ladyship go ? towards that of Micomicon, I presume, for it must be thither, or I know little of kingdoms. She, being perfect in her lessons, knew very well she was to answer Yee, and therefore said : Yee, señor, my way lies towards that kingdom. If it be so, said the priest, we must pass through our village, and from thence you must go straight to Carthage, where you may take shipping in God's name ; and, if you have a fair wind, a smooth sea, and no storms, in little less than nine years, you may get sight of the great lake Meona, I mean Meotis, which is little more than a hundred days' journey on this side of your highness's kingdom. You are mistaken, good sir, said she ; for it is not two years since I left it ; and though, in truth, I had very bad weather during the whole passage, I am already got hither, and behold with my eyes, what I so much longed for, namely, Señor Don Quixote de la Mancha, the fame of whose valour reached my ears the moment I set foot in Spain, and put me upon finding him out, that I might recommend myself to his courtesy, and commit the

justice of my cause to the valour of his intrepid arm. No more : cease your compliments, said Don Quixote, for I am an enemy to all sort of flattery, and though this be not such, still my chaste ears are offended at this kind of discourse. What I can say, dear madam, is, that, whether I have valour or no, what I have or have not, shall be employed in your service, even to the loss of my life : and so, leaving these things to a proper time, I desire, that the who licentiate would tell me, what has brought him into these parts, so alone, so unattended, and so lightly clad, that I am surprised at it. To this I shall answer briefly, replied the priest. Your worship, then, will know, brother Don Quixote, that I, and Master Nicholas our friend and barber, were going to Seville, to receive some money, which a relation of mine, who went many years ago to the Indies, had sent me : and it was no inconsiderable sum, for it was about sixty thousand pieces of eight, all of due weight, which is no trivial matter : and passing yesterday through these parts, we were set upon by four highway robbers, who stripped us of all we had to our very beads, and in such a manner, that the barber thought it expedient to put in a counterfeit one : and, as for the youth here (pointing to Cardenio), you see how they have wronged him. And the best of the story is, that it is publicly reported hereabouts, that the persons who robbed us, were actually galley slaves, who, they say, were set at liberty near this very place, by a most so famous, that in spite of the customary and old law, he let them all loose : and, without all doubt, he must needs have been out of his senses, or as great a rascal as they, or was void of all conscience and humanity, that could let loose the evil among the sheep, the lost among the flock, and the wags among the hounds. He has dishonoured justice, he has done and has set himself up against his oath and his duty, by acting against his office and authority : he has, I say, dishonoured his charge of law, and dishonoured the many years repute of his office as a judge and a

word, he has done a deed whereby he may lose his soul, and not gain his body. Sancho had related to the priest and the barber the adventure of the galley-slaves, achieved with so much glory by his master ; and therefore the priest laid it on thick in the relation, to see what Don Quixote would do, or say : whose colour changed at every word, and yet he durst not own, that he had been the deliverer of those worthy gentlemen. These, said the priest, were the persons who robbed us ; and God of his mercy pardon him, who prevented their being carried to the punishment they so richly deserved.

CHAPTER XXX

Which treats of the pleasant and ingenious method of drawing our enamoured knight from the very rigorous penance he had imposed on himself

SCARCE had the priest done speaking, when Sancho said : By my troth, señor licenciado, it was my master who did this feat ; not but that I gave him fair warning and advised him to beware what he did, and that it was a sin to set them at liberty, for that they were all going to the galleys for being most notorious villains. Blockhead, said Don Quixote, knights-errant have nothing to do, nor does it concern them, to inquire whether the afflicted, enchained, and oppressed, whom they meet upon the road, are reduced to those circumstances, or that distress, by their faults or their misfortunes : they are bound to assist them merely as being in distress, and to regard their sufferings alone, and not their crimes. I lighted on a bead-roll and string of miserable wretches, and did by them what my profession requires of me ; and for the rest I care not : and whoever takes it amiss, saving the holy dignity of Señor the Licenciado, and his honourable person, I say, he knows little of the principles

of chivalry, and lies like the base-born son of a whore and this I will make good with my sword in the most ample manner. This he said, setting himself in his stirrups, and clapping down the visor of his helmet for the barber's bann, which, in his account, was Mambrino's helmet, hung at his saddle-bow, until it could be repaired of the damages it had received from the galley-slaves.

Dorothea, who was witty, and of a pleasant disposition, already perceiving Don Quixote's frenzy, and that everybody, excepting Sancho Panza, made a jest of him, resolved not to be behind-hand with the rest; and seeing him in such a heat, said to him Sir knight, be pleased to remember the boon you have promised me, and that you are thereby engaged not to intermeddle in any other adventure, be it ever so urgent: therefore assuage your wrath; for, if Señor the Licentiate had known that the galley-slaves were freed by that invincible arm, he would sooner have sewed up his mouth with three stitches, and thrice have bit his tongue, than he would have said a word that might redound to the disparagement of your worship. I would so, I swear, quoth the priest, and even sooner have pulled off a moustache. I will say no more, madam, said Don Quixote; and I will repress that just indignation raised in my breast, and will go on peaceably and quietly, until I have accomplished for you the promised boon. But in requital of this good intention, I beseech you to tell me, if it be not too much trouble, what is your grievance, and who, how many, and of what sort, are the persons, on whom I must take, due, satisfactory, and complete revenge. That I will do, with all my heart, answered Dorothea, if it will not prove tedious and irksome to you to hear nothing but afflictions and misfortunes. Not at all, dear madam, answered Don Quixote. To which Dorothea replied: Since it is so, pray favour me with your attention. She had no sooner said this, but Cardenio and the barber placed themselves on each side of her, to hear what kind of a story the

ingenious Dorothea would invent. The same did Satcho, who was as much deceived about her as his master. And she, after settling herself well in her saddle, with a hem or two, and the like preparatory airs, began, with much good humour, in the manner following :

In the first place, you must know, gentlemen, that my name is—— Here she stopped short, having forgot the name the priest had given her : but he presently helped her out ; for he knew what she stopped at, and said : It is no wonder, madam, that your grandeur should be disturbed, and in some confusion, at recounting your misfortunes ; for they are often of such a nature, as to deprive us of our memory, and make us forget our very names ; as they have now done by your high ladyship, who have forgotten that you are called the Princess Micomicona, rightful heiress of the great kingdom of Micomicon : and with this intimation your grandeur may easily bring back to your doleful remembrance whatever you have a mind to relate. You are in the right, answered Dorothea, and henceforward I believe it will be needless to give me any more hints ; for I shall be able to conduct my true history to a conclusion without them.

My father, who was called Xanacatlacatl, was very learned in what they call the magic art, and knew, by his science, that my mother, who was called Queen Xaramilla, would die before him, and that he himself must, soon after, depart this life, and I be left an orphan, deprived both of father and mother. But this, he used to say, did not trouble him so much, as the certain fore-knowledge he had, that a monstrous giant, lord of a great island, almost bordering upon our kingdom, called Paodaslando of the Gloomy Aspect (for it is averred, that though his eyes stand right, and in their proper place, he always looks askew as if he squinted ; and thus he does out of pure malignity, to scare and frighten those he looks at) : I say, he knew that this giant would take the advantage of my being an orphan, and invade my kingdom with

a mighty force, and take it all from me, without leaving me the smallest village to hide my head in; but that it was in my power to avoid all this ruin and misfortune, by marrying him; though, as far as he could understand, he never believed I would hearten to so unequal a match; and in this he said the truth, for it never entered into my head to marry this giant, nor any other, though never so huge and unmeasurable. My father said also, that, after his death, when I should find Pandafilando begin to invade my kingdom, he advised me not to stay to make any defence, for that would be my ruin; but, if I would avoid death, and prevent the total destruction of my faithful and loyal subjects, my best way was, freely to quit the kingdom to him without opposition, since it would not be possible for me to defend myself against the hellish power of the giant; and immediately to set out with a few attendants for Spain, where I should find a remedy for my distress, by meeting with a knight-errant, whose fame, about that time, should extend itself all over this kingdom, and whose name, if I remember right, was to be Don Acote, or Don Gigote. Don Quixote, you would say, madam, quoth Sancho Panza, or as others call him, the Knight of the Sorrowful Figure. You are in the right, said Dorothea. He said further, that he was to be tall and thin-visaged, and that on his right side under the left shoulder, or thereabouts, he was to have a grey mole with hairs like bristles.

Don Quixote, hearing this, said to his squire; see, son Sancho, help me to strip: I would know whether I am the knight prophesied of by that wise king. Why would you pull off your clothes, sir? said Dorothea. To see whether I have the mole your father spoke of, answered Don Quixote. You need not strip, said Sancho; I know you have a mole with those same marks on the ridge of your back, which is a sign of being a strong man. It is enough, said Dorothea; for, among friends, we must not stand upon trifles; and whether it be on the shoulder, or on the back:

bone, imports little: it is sufficient that there is a mole, let it be where it will, since it is all the same flesh: and doubtless my good father hit right in everything, and I have not aimed amiss in recommending myself to Señor Don Quixote: for he must be the knight, of whom my father spoke, since the features of his face correspond exactly with the great fame he has acquired, not only in Spain, but in all La Mancha: for I was hardly landed in Orona, before I heard so many exploits of his recounted, that my mind immediately gave me, that he must be the very person I came to seek. But, dear madam, how came you to land at Orona? answered Don Quixote, since it is no seaport town¹. But, before Dorothea could reply, the priest interposing, said: Doubtless the princess meant to say, that, after she had landed at Alcala, the first place where she heard news of your worship, was Orona. That was my meaning, said Dorothea. It is very likely, quoth the priest, please your majesty to proceed. I have little more to add, replied Dorothea, but that, having at last had the good fortune to meet with Señor Don Quixote, I already look upon myself as queen and mistress of my whole kingdom, since he, out of his courtesy and generosity, has promised, in compliance with my request, to go with me wherever I please to carry him; which shall be only where he may have a sight of Pandafilando of the Gloomy Aspect, that he may slay him, and restore to me what is so unjustly usurped from me: for all this is to come about with the greatest ease, according to the prophecy of the wise Tineo, my good father, who, moreover, left it written in letters Chaldean or Greek (for I cannot read them) that, if the knight of the prophecy, after he has cut off the giant's head, should have a mind to marry me, I should immediately submit to be his lawful wife, without any reply, and give him possession of my kingdom, together with my person.

¹ A dig at the famous Jesuit historian, Juan Mariana, who made the same geographical blunder as Dorothea.

What think you now, friend Sancho? quoth Don Quixote: do you not hear what passes; did not I tell you so? see whether we have not now a kingdom to command, and a queen to marry? I swear it is so, quoth Sancho: and put take him for a son o' a whore, who will not marry as soon as Señor Fernando's was and is cut. About it then: but majesty's a dainty bit; I wish all the dees in my bed were no more. And so saying he cut a couple of capers, with signs of very great joy: and presently laying bold on the reins of Don Quixote's mule, and making her stop he fell down upon his knees before her, beseeching her to give him her hand to kiss, in token that he acknowledged her for his queen and mistress. Which of the bystanders could forbear laughing, to see the madness of the matter, and the simplicity of the man? In short, Don Quixote held out her hand to him, and promised to make him a great lord in her kingdom, when he was should be so propitious, as to put her again in possession of it. Sancho returned her thanks in such expression, as to set the company again laughing.

This gentleman, continued Don Quixote, in my history is famous only to tell you, that, of all the adventures I thought with me of my kingdom, I have none left but this better agree with the long beard I put the rest were all drowned in a violent storm, which overtook us in sight of the port. [He and I got ashore on a couple of planks as it were by miracle; and indeed the whole progress of my life in misadventure, as you may have observed. And if I have succeeded in anything, or not been so sick as I ought to have been, let it be imputed to what God or the Lucifers said, at the beginning of my story, that counsel and extraordinary troubles deprive the sufferer of their memory. I will preserve mine, O Sir, and surely I will, and thus Quixote, under the greatest that I can bestow on your service, and on I swear a letter in the presence I have made you, and I swear to bear you company to the end of the world.

lady Dulcinea. How! never saw her, blasphemous traitor! said Don Quixote: have you not just brought me a message from her? I say, I did not see her so leisurely, said Sancho, as to take particular notice of her beauty, and her features, piece by piece: but take her altogether, she looks well enough. Now I excuse you, said Don Quixote, and pardon me the displeasure I have given you, for the first motions are not in our own power. I have found it so, answered Sancho, and so, in me, the desire of talking is always a first motion, and I cannot forbear uttering, for once at least, whatever comes to my tongue's end. For all that, quoth Don Quixote, take heed, Sancho, what it is you utter, for the pitcher goes so often to the well—I say no more. Well, then, answered Sancho,

swared Sancho : I warrant I shall get out as well as I got in. But I beseech your worship, dear sir, not to be so very revengeful for the future. Why do you press that, Sancho ? quoth Don Quixote. Because, replied Sancho, the blows you were pleased to bestow on me, even now, were rather on account of the quarrel the devil raised between us the other night, than for what I said against my lady Dulcinea, whom I love and reverence, like any relic (though she be not one), only as she belongs to your worship. No more of these discourses, Sancho, on your life, said Don Quixote ; for they offend me : I forgave you before, and you know the common saying, ' For a new sin a new penance.'

While they were thus talking, they saw coming along the same road, in which they were going, a man riding upon an ass ; and when he came near, he seemed to be a gipsy : but Sancho Panza, who, wherever he saw an ass, had his eyes and his soul fixed there, had scarce seen the man, when he knew him to be Gines de Passamonte, and, by the clue of the gipsy, found the bottom of his ass : for it was really Dapple, upon which Passamonte rode ; who, that he might not be known, and that he might sell the ass the better, had put himself into the garb of a gipsy, whose language, as well as several others, he could speak as readily, as if they were his own native tongues. Sancho saw and knew him ; and scarce had he seen and known him, when he cried out to him aloud : Ah, rogue Ginesillo, leave my darling, let go my life, rob me not of my repose, quit my ass, leave my delight ; fly, whoremonger ; get you gone, thief, and relinquish what is not your own. There needed not so many words, nor so much railing : for, at the first word, Gines nimbly dismounted, and, taking to his heels, as if it had been a race, was gone in an instant, and out of reach of them all. Sancho ran to his Dapple, and, embracing him, said : How hast thou done, my dearest Dapple, delight of my eyes, my sweet companion ? and then he kissed and caressed

him as if he had been a human creature. The sea held his peace, and suffered himself to be kissed and caressed by Sancho, without answering him one word. They all came up, and wished him joy of the finding his Dapple; especially Don Quixote, who assured him that he did not, for all this, revoke the order for the three colts. Sancho thanked him heartily.

While this passed, the priest said to Dorothea, that she had performed her part very ingeniously, as well in the contrivance of the story, as in its brevity, and the resemblance it bore to the narrations in books of chivalry. She said, she had often amused herself with reading such kind of books, but that she did not know the situation of provinces or of seaports, and therefore had said at a venture, that she landed at Oruna. I found it was so, said the priest, and therefore I immediately said what you heard, which set all to rights. But is it not strange to see how readily this unhappy gentleman believes all these inventions and lies, only because they resemble the style and manner of his foolish books? It is indeed, said Cardenio, and something so rare, and unseen before, that I much question, whether, if one had a mind to dress up a fiction like it, any genius could be found capable of succeeding in it. There is another thing remarkable in it, said the priest, which is, that, setting aside the follies this honest gentleman utters in everything relating to his madness, he can discourse very sensibly upon other points, and seems to have a clear and settled judgement in all things; insomuch that, if you do not touch him upon the subject of chivalries you would never suspect but that he had a sound understanding.

While the rest went on in this conversation, Don Quixote proceeded to his, and said to Sancho: Friend Pantia, let us forget what is past; and tell me now, all racour and animosity apart, where, how, and when, did you find Dulcinea? what was she doing? what did you say to her? what answer did she return? how did she look when she read my letter?

who transcribed it for you ? and whatever else in this case is worth knowing. Inquiring after, or being satisfied in, inform me of all, without adding or diminishing, to give me pleasure, or curtailing ought to deprive me of any satisfaction. Sir, answered Sancho, if I must tell you the truth, nobody transcribed the letter for me : for I carried no letter at all. It is as you say, quoth Don Quixote, for I found the pocket-book I had written it in, two days after your departure ; which troubled me exceedingly, not knowing what you would do, when you should find you had no letter ; and I still believed you would come back, as soon as you should miss it. So I should have done, answered Sancho, had I not got it by heart, when your worship read it me, and so perfectly, that I repeated it to a parish clerk, who wrote it down, as I dictated it, so exactly, that he said, though he had read many letters of excommunication, he had never seen or read so pretty a letter as that in all the days of his life. And have you it still by heart, Sancho, said Don Quixote. No, sir, answered Sancho : but after I had delivered it, seeing it was to be of no further use, I forgot it on purpose : and if I remember ought of it, it is that of ' the high and mighty lady ' (I mean sovereign) lady, and the excommunication, ' *thine until death, the Knight of the Sorrowful Figure* ' ; and between these two things, I put above three hundred souls and lives, and dear eyes.

CHAPTER XXXI

Of the relating conversation which passed between Don Quixote and his squire Sancho Panza, with other incidents.

ALL this does not displease me ; go on, said Don Quixote. You arrived ; and what was that queen of beauty doing ? Without doubt, you found her stringing pearls, or embroidering some device with threads of gold for this her captive knight. No, I did not, answered Sancho ; but I found her winnowing two bushels of wheat in a backyard of her house. Then make account, said Don Quixote, that the grains of that wheat were so many grains of pearl, when touched by her hands. And did you take notice, friend, whether the wheat was fine, or the ordinary sort ? It was neither, answered Sancho, but of the reddish kind. Be assured, however, quoth Don Quixote, that, when winnowed by her hands, it certainly made the finest manchet bread—but go on. When you gave her my letter, did she kiss it ? Did she put it upon her head ? Did she use any ceremony worthy of such a letter ? or what did she do ? When I was going to give it her, answered Sancho, she was very busy in winnowing a good sieve full of the worst ; and she said to me : Lay the letter, friend, upon the sack, for I cannot read it until I have done winnowing all that is here. Discreet lady ! said Don Quixote ; this was, to be sure, that she might read it, and entertain herself with it, at leisure. Proceed, Sancho : while she was thus employed, what discourse had she with you ? what did she inquire of you concerning me ? and what did you answer ? Make an end, tell it me all ; leave nothing at the bottom of the sack. She asked me nothing, said Sancho ; but I told her how your worship was doing penance, for her service, among these rocks, naked from the waist upwards, as if you were a savage, sleeping on the ground, not

eating bread on a napkin, nor combing your weeping and cursing your fortune. In saying cursed my fortune, you said amiss, quoth Don Quixote. I rather bless it, and shall bless it all the days of my life for having made me worthy to love so high a lady as Dulcinea del Toboso. So high indeed, as Sancho, that in good faith, she is a hand higher than I am. Why, how, Sancho, said Don Quixote, have you measured with her? I measured, answered Sancho: as I was helping her to reap wheat upon an ass, we stood so close, that I perceived she was taller than I by more than a foot. If it be so, replied Don Quixote, does she not keep company and set off this stature of her body with a thousand millions of graces of the mind?

But Sancho, conceal not one thing from me, you stood so near her, did you not perceive a certain, an aromatic fragrant, and that I know not what name to give it? I say a smell, as if you were in some curious glove. All I can say is, quoth Sancho, that I perceive what of a manly smell, which comes from her being in a dripping sweat with reaping. It could not be so, answered Don Quixote: you must either have had a cold, or have smelt your own self: for I have known the scent of that rose among the mountains of the valley, that liquid amber. All that answered Sancho: for the same smell of roses from me, as, methought, then came from Dulcinea, but where's the wonder, that I should be like another? Well then, continued Don Quixote, she has now done winnowing, and is sent to the mill. What did she do, when she read the letter? The letter, quoth Sancho, did not read, for she told me she could neither write, nor read; on the contrary, she took it to piece, and would not give it to anybody to read.

the love your worship bore her, and the extraordinary penance you were doing for her sake, was enough : lastly ; she bid me tell your worship that she kissed your hands, and that she remained with greater desire to see you than to write to you ; and therefore she humbly entreated, and commanded you, at sight hereof, to quit those brakes and bushes, and leave off those foolish extravagances, and set out immediately for Toboso, if some other business of greater importance did not intervene ; for she had a mighty mind to see your worship. She laughed heartily when I told her how you called yourself the Knight of the Sorrowful Figure. I asked her whether the Biscamer of t'other day had been there with her : she told me he had, and that he was a very honest fellow : I asked her also after the galley slaves ; but she told me she had not yet seen any of them. All goes well, as yet, said Don Quixote. But, tell me, what jewel did she give you at your departure for the news you had brought her of me ? For it is an usual and ancient custom among knights- and ladies-errant to bestow some rich jewel on the squire, damsel, or dwarf, who bring them news of their mistresses or servants, as a reward or acknowledgement for their welcome news. Very likely, quoth Sancho, and a very good custom it was ; but it must have been in days of yore, for nowadays the custom is to give only a piece of bread and cheese : for that was what my lady Dulcinea gave me, over the pales of the yard, when she dismissed me ; by the same token that the cheese was made of sheep's milk. She is extremely generous, said Don Quixote ; and if she did not give you a jewel of gold, it must be because she had not one about her ; but sleeves are good after Easter¹. I shall see her, and all shall be set to rights.

But, do you know, Sancho, what I am surprised at ? it is, that you must have gone and come through

¹ The equivalent of ' good things are never out of season ', or the Scotch proverb—' A Yule feast may be done at Fench '.

the air: for you have been little more than three days in going and coming, between this and Toboso, though it is more than thirty leagues from hence thither: from whence I conclude that the sage enchanter, who has the superintendence of my affairs, and is my friend (for such a one there is, and must of necessity be, otherwise I should be no true knight-errant). I say, this same enchanter must have assisted you in travelling, without your perceiving it: for there are sages, who will take you up a knight-errant sleeping in his bed: and, without his knowing how, or in what manner, he awakes the next day above a thousand leagues from the place where he fell asleep. And, were it not for this, the knights-errant could not succour one another in their dangers, as they now do at every turn. For a knight happens to be fighting, in the mountains of Armenia, with some dreadful monster, or fierce goblin, or some other knight, and has the worst of the combat, and is just upon the point of being killed; and, when he least expects it, there appears upon a cloud, or in a chariot of fire, another knight, his friend, who just before was in England, who succours him, and delivers him from death; and that night he finds himself in his own chamber, supping with a very good appetite, though there be the distance of two or three thousand leagues between the two countries. And all this is brought about by the industry and skill of those sage enchanters, who undertake the care of those valiant knights. So that, friend Sancho, I make no difficulty in believing that you went and came in so short a time, between this place and Toboso, since, as I have already said, some sage, our friend, must have expedited your journey without your being sensible of it. It may be so, quoth Sancho: for, in good faith, Rosinante went like any piper's son with quicksilver in his ears. With quicksilver? said Don Quixote, ay, with a legion of devils to boot; a sort of subtle elf, and make others travel, as fast as they about being tired.

But, setting this aside, what would you advise me to do now, as to what my lady commands me, about going to see her? for, though I know I am bound to obey her commands, I find myself at present under an impossibility of doing it, on account of the boon I have promised to grant the princess, who is now with us; and the laws of chivalry oblige me to comply with my word, rather than indulge my pleasure. On the one hand, the desire of seeing my lady persecutes and perplexes me: on the other, I am incited and called by my promised faith, and the glory I shall acquire in this enterprise. But what I propose to do, is to travel fast, and get quickly to the place where the giant is, and, presently after my arrival, to cut off his head, and settle the princess peaceably in her kingdom, and that instant to return and see that son that enlightens my senses; to whom I will make such an excuse, that she shall allow my delay was necessary; for she will perceive that all redounds to the increase of her glory and fame, since what I have won, do win, or shall win, by force of arms, in this life, proceeds wholly from the succour she affords me, and from my being here. Ah! quoth Sancho, how is your worship disordered in your head! Pray, tell me, sir, do you intend to take this journey for nothing? and will you let slip so considerable a match as this, when the dowry is a kingdom, which, as I have heard say, is above twenty thousand leagues in circumference, and abounding in all things necessary for the support of human life, and bigger than Portugal and Castile together? For the love of God, say no more, and take shame to yourself for what you have said already; and follow my advice, and pardon me, and be married out of hand at the first place where there is a priest; and, if there be none, here is our priest, who will do it cleverly. And pray take notice, I am of age to give advice, and what I now give is as fit as if it were cast in a mould for you, for a sparrow in the hand is worth more than a hawk on the wing; and he that may have good if he will, it is

his own fault if he chooses ill. Look you, Sancho, replied Don Quixote, if you advise me to marry, that by killing the giant, I may immediately become a king, and have it in my power to reward you by giving you what I promised you, I would have you to know, that, without marrying, I can easily gratify your desire: for I will covenant before I enter into the battle, that, upon my coming off victorious, without marrying the princess, I shall be entitled to a part of the kingdom to bestow it on whom I please: and when I have it, to whom do you think I should give it, but to yourself? That is clear, answered Sancho: but pray, sir, take care to choose it toward the sea, that, if I should not like living there, I may ship off my black subjects, and dispose of them as I said before. And trouble not yourself now to go and see my lady Dulcinea, but go and kill the giant, and let us make an end of this business; for, before God, I verily believe it will bring us much honour and profit. You are in the right, Sancho, said Don Quixote, and I take your advice as to going first with the princess, before I go to see Dulcinea. And be sure you say nothing to anybody, no, not to those who are in our company, of what we have been discoursing and conferring upon: for since Dulcinea is so reserved that she would not have her thoughts known, it is not fit that I, or any one else for me, should discover them. If it be so, quoth Sancho, why does your worship send all those you conquer by the might of your arm, to present themselves before my lady Dulcinea, this being to give it under your hand that you are in love with her? If these persons must fall on their knees before her, and declare they come from you to pay their obedience to her, how can your mutual inclinations be a secret? How dull and foolish you are! said Don Quixote. You perceive not, Sancho, that all this redounds the more to her exaltation. For you must know, that in this is our style of chivalry, it is a great honour for a lady to have many knights-errant, who serve her merely for her

ake, without expectation of any other reward than their manifold and good desires, than the honour being admitted into the number of her knights. I have heard it preached, quoth Sancho, that God is best loved with this kind of love, for Himself alone, without our being moved to it by the hope of reward, or the fear of punishment: though for my part, I am inclined to love and serve Him for what He is able to do for me. The devil take you for a bumpkin, said Don Quixote; you are ever and anon saying such odd things, that one would almost think you had died. And yet, by my faith, quoth Sancho, I cannot so much as read.

While they were thus talking, Master Nicholas called aloud to them to halt a little; for they had agreed to stop and drink at a small spring hard by. Don Quixote stopped, much to the satisfaction of Sancho, who began to be tired of telling so many lies, and was afraid his master should at last catch him tripping: for, though he knew Dulcinea was a farmer's daughter of Toboso, he had never seen her all his life. In the meanwhile Cardenio had put on the clothes which Dorothea wore when they found her; and, though they were none of the best, they were far beyond those he had put off. They all alighted near the fountain, and, with what the priest had furnished himself with at the inn, they somewhat appeased the violence of their hunger.

While they were thus employed a young lad happened to pass by, travelling along the road; who, looking very earnestly at those who were at the fountain, presently ran to Don Quixote, and embracing his legs, fell a-weeping in good earnest, and said: Oh! dear sir, does not your worship know me? Consider me well: I am Andrea, the lad whom you delivered from the oak to which I was tied. Don Quixote knew him again, and, taking him by the hand, he turned to the company and said, To commend you of what importance it is that there should be knights-errant in the world to redress the wrongs



CHAPTER XXXII

Which treats of what befall Don Quixote's whole company in the inn.

THE notable repast being ended, they saddled immediately, and, without anything happening to them worthy to be related, they arrived the next day at the inn, that dread and terror of Sancho Panza, who, though he would fain have declined going in, could not avoid it. The hostess, the host, their daughter, and Maritornes, seeing Don Quixote and Sancho coming, went out to meet them, with signs of much joy; and he received them with a grave deportment, and a nod of approbation, bidding them prepare him a better bed than they had done the time before: to which the hostess answered, that, provided he would pay better than the time before, she would get him a bed for a prince. Don Quixote said he would; and so they made him a tolerable one in the same large room where he had lain before: and he immediately threw himself down upon it; for he arrived very much shattered both in body and brawn. He was no sooner shut into his chamber, but the hostess fell upon the barber, and taking him by the beard, said: By my faith, you shall use my tail no longer for a beard: give me my tail again: for my husband's thing is towed up and down, that it is a shame; I mean the comb I used to stick in my good tail. The barber would not part with it, for all her tugging, until the fortunate bade him give it her; for there was no farther need of that artifice, but he might now discover himself, and appear in his own shape, and tell Don Quixote, that being robbed by those thieves the galley-slaves, he had fled to this inn; and, if he should ask for the princess's squire, they should tell him, she had dispatched him before with advice to her subjects, that she was coming, and

bringing with her their common deliverer. With this the barber willingly surrendered to the hostess the tail, together with all the other appurtenances she had lent them, in order to Don Quixote's enlargement. All the folks of the inn were surprised, both at the beauty of Dorothea, and the comely personage of the shepherd Canencia. The priest ordered them to get ready what the house afforded, and the host, in hopes of being better paid, soon served a pretty tolerable supper. All this while Don Quixote was asleep, and they agreed not to awake him: for at that time he had more occasion for sleep than victuals.

The discourse at supper, at which were present the inn-keeper, his wife, his daughter, and Mantecorres, and all the passengers, turned upon the strange madness of Don Quixote, and the condition in which they had found him. The hostess related to them what befell him with the carrier: and looking about to see whether Sancho was by, and not seeing him, she gave them a full account of his being tossed in a blanket, at which they were not a little diverted. And the priest happened to say, that the books of chivalry, which Don Quixote had read, had turned his brain, the inn-keeper said: I cannot conceive how that can be; for really, so far as I can understand, there is no choicer reading in the world; and I have by me three or four of them, with some manuscripts, which, in good truth, have kept me alive, and not me only, but many others beside. For, in the hardest time, many of the rascals come hither every day for shelter, during the winter heat; and there is always one or other among them that can read, who takes one of those books in hand, and about thirty of us place ourselves round him, and listen to him with as much pleasure that is possible a thousand hoary harper: at least I can say for myself, that, when I hear of those furious and terrible times, which the knights errant lay on, I have a mouth & mind to be doing as much, and could sit and hear them day and night. I wish you did quench the hostess; for I never have a quiet

moment in my house but when you are listening to the reading ; for then you are so besotted, that you forget to scold for that time. It is true, said Mari-tornee, and, in good faith, I too am very much delighted at hearing those things ; for they are very fine, especially when they tell us how such a lady, and her knight, lie embracing each other under an orange tree, and how a damsel stands upon the watch, dying with envy, and her heart going pit-a-pat. I say, all this is pure honey. And pray, mine, what is your opinion of these matters ? said the priest, addressing himself to the innkeeper's daughter. I do not know indeed, sir, answered the girl : I listen too ; and truly, though I do not understand it, I take some pleasure in hearing it : but I have no relish for those blows and slashes, which please my father so much ; what I chiefly like is the complaints the knights make when they are absent from their mistresses ; and really, sometimes, they make me weep, out of the pity I have for them. You would soon afford them relief, young gentlewoman, said Dorothea. If they wept for you ? I do not know what I should do, answered the girl ; only I know, that several of those ladies are so cruel, that their knights call them tigers and lions, and a thousand other ugly names. And, Jesu ! I cannot imagine what kind of folks they be, who are so hard hearted and unconscionable, that, rather than bestow a kind look on an honest gentleman, they will let him die, or run mad. And, for my part, I cannot see why all this coyne : if it is out of honesty, let them marry them ; for that is what the gentlemen would be at. Hold your tongue, honey, said the hostess, methinks you know a great deal of these matters ; and it does not become young maidens to know, or talk, so much. When this gentleman asked me a civil question, replied the girl, I could do no less, turn, than answer him.

It is mighty well, said the priest ; pray, landlord, bring me those books, for I have a mind to see them. With all my heart, answered the host ; and, going into his chamber, he brought out a bundle of books.

bag, with a padlock and chain to it, and opening it, he took out three large volumes, and some manuscript papers written in a very fair character. The first book he opened, he found to be *Don Cirongilio of Tharace*¹, the next *Felixmarte of Hyrcania*², and the third the *History of the Grand Captain Gonzalo Hernandez of Cordova*, with the *Life of Diego Garcia de Paredes*³. When the priest had read the titles of the two first, he turned about to the barber, and said: We want here our friend's housekeeper and niece. Not at all, answered the barber: for I myself can carry them to the yard, or to the chimney, where there is a very good fire. What, sir, would you burn my books? said the innkeeper. Only three two, said the priest, that of Don Cirongilio, and that of Felixmarte. What, then, are my books heretical, or phlegmetical, that you have a mind to burn them? Schismatical, you would say, friend, said the barber, and not phlegmetical. It is true, replied the innkeeper: but if you intend to burn any, let it be this of the Grand Captain, and this of Diego de Garcia: for I will sooner let you burn one of my children, than either of the others. Dear brother, said the priest, these two books are great harm, and full of extravagant and foolish conceits; and this of the Grand Captain is a true history, and contains the exploits of Gonzalo Hernandez of Cordova, who, for his many and brave actions, deserved to be called by all the world the Grand Captain: a name renowned and illustrious, and merited by him alone. As for Diego Garcia de Paredes, he was a gentleman of note, born in the town of Truxillo in Extremadura, a very brave soldier, and of such great natural strength, that he could stop a millwheel, in its greatest rapidity, with a single finger, and, being once posted with a two-handed sword at the entrance upon a bridge, he

¹ By Bernardo de Vega, and published at Seville in 1545.

² See the note to Chapter vi, p. 41.

³ Published at Saragossa in 1554.

repelled a prodigious army, and prevented their passage over it. And he performed other such things, that if, instead of being related by himself, with the modesty of a cavalier who is his own historian, they had been written by some other dispassionate and unprejudiced author, they would have eclipsed the actions of the Hectors, Achilleas, and Orlando. Persuade my grandmother to that, quoth the unkeeper; do but see what it is he wonders at—the stopping of a mill-wheel! Before God, your worship should have read what I have read, concerning Felixmarie of Hyrcania, who with one back-stroke cut asunder five giants in the middle, as if they had been so many bean-cods, of which the children make little puppet-friars. At another time he encountered a very great and powerful army, consisting of above a million and six hundred thousand soldiers, all armed from head to foot, and defeated them all, as if they had been a flock of sheep. But what will you say of the good Don Curoguis of Thrace, who was so stout and valiant, as you may see in the book, wherein is related that, as he was sailing on a river, a fiery serpent appeared above water; and he, as soon as he saw it, threw himself upon it, and getting astride upon its scaly shoulders, squeezed its throat with both his hands, with so much force, that the serpent, finding itself in danger of being choked, had no other remedy but to let itself sink to the bottom of the river, carrying along with him the knight, who would not quit his hold: and, when they were got to the bottom, he found himself in a fine palace, and in so pretty a garden that it was wonderful; and presently the serpent turned to a venerable old man, who said so many things to him, that the like was never heard. Therefore, pray say no more, sir; for, if you were but to hear all this, you would run mad with pleasure. A fig for the Grand Captain, and for that Diego Garcia you speak of.

Dorothea, hearing this, said softly to Cardenio: Our landlord wants but little to make the second part of

Don Quixote. I think so too, answered Cardenio for, according to the indications he gives, he takes all that is related in these books for gospel, and neither more nor less than matters of fact; and the barefooted friars themselves could not make him believe otherwise. Look you, brother, said the priest, there never was in the world such a man as Felixmartin of Hyrcania, nor Don Cirongilio of Thrace, nor any other knights, such as the books of chivalry mention; for all is but the contrivance and invention of idle wits, who composed them for the purpose of whiling away time, as you see your reapers do in reading them; for I vow and swear to you, there never were any such knights in the world, nor did such feats, or extravagant things, ever happen in it. To another dog with this bone, answered the host, as if I did not know how many make fire, or where my own shoe pinches: do not think, sir, to feed me with pap; for, before God I am no suckling. A good jest indeed, that your worship should endeavour to make me believe, that all the contents of these good books are lies and extravagances, being printed with the licence of the king's privy council, as if they were people that would allow the impression of such a pack of lies, battles, and enchantments, as are enough to make one distracted. I have already told you, friend, replied the priest, that it is done for the amusement of our idle thoughts: and as, in all well instituted commonwealths, the games of chess, tennis, and billiards are permitted for the entertainment of those who have nothing to do, and who ought not, or cannot work, for the same reason they permit such books to be written and printed, promising, as they will say, that nobody can be so ignorant as to take them for true histories. And if it were proper at this time, and my hearers required it, I could lay down such rules for composing books of chivalry, as should, perhaps, make them agreeable, and even useful to many persons. but I hope the time will come that I may communicate this design to those who can remedy it.

and, in the meanwhile, Sador Innkeeper, believe what I have told you, and here take your books, and settle the point, whether they contain truths or lies, as you please; and much good may you do with them, and God grant you do not halt on the same foot your guest Don Quixote does. Not so, answered the innkeeper, I shall not be so mad as to turn knight-errant; for I know very well that times are altered since those famous knights-errant wandered about the world.

Sancho came in about the middle of this conversation, and was much confounded, and very peevish at what he heard said, that knights-errant were not now in fashion, and that all books of chivalry were mere lies and fooleries; and he resolved with himself to wait the event of this expedition of his master's; and if it did not succeed as happily as he expected, he determined to leave him, and return home to his wife and children, and to his accustomed labour.

The innkeeper was carrying away the cloak-bag and the books; but the priest said to him: Pray stay, for I would see what papers those are that are written in so fair a character. The host took them out, and having given them to him to read, he found about eight sheets in manuscript, and at the beginning a large title, which was, *The Novel of the Curious Impertinent*. The priest read three or four lines to himself, and said: In truth I do not dislike the title of this novel, and I have a mind to read it all. To which the innkeeper answered: Your reverence may well venture to read it; for I assure you that some of my guests, who have read it, liked it mightily, and begged it of me with great earnestness; but I would not give it them, designing to restore it to the person who forgot and left behind him this cloak-bag, with these books and papers; for perhaps their owner may come this way again some time or other; and though I know I shall have a great want of the books, in faith I will restore them; for though I am an innkeeper, thank God I am a Christian. You are much in the right, friend, said the priest; nevertheless, if

the novel please me, you must give me leave to take a copy of it. With all my heart, answered the inn-keeper. While they two were thus talking, Cardenio had taken up the novel, and began to read it; and, being likewise pleased with it, he desired the priest to read it so as that they might all hear it. I will, said the priest, if it be not better to spend our time in sleeping than in reading. It will be as well for me, said Dorothea, to pass the time in listening to some story; for my spirits are not yet so composed as to give me leave to sleep, though it were needful. Well then, said the priest, I will read it, if it were but for curiosity; perhaps it may contain something that is entertaining. Master Nicholas and Sancho joined in the same request: on which the priest, perceiving that he should give them all pleasure, and receive some himself, said: Be all attentive then, for the novel begins in the following manner:

CHAPTER XXXIII

In which is recited The Novel of the Curious Impertinent.¹

IN Florence, a rich and famous city of Italy, in the province called Tuscany, lived Anselmo and Lothario, two gentlemen of fortune and quality, and such great friends that all who knew them styled them, by way of eminence and distinction, the Two Friends. They were both bachelors, young, of the same age, and of the same manners: all which was a sufficient foundation for their reciprocal friendship. It is true indeed that Anselmo was somewhat more inclined to amorous dalliance than Lothario, who was fond of country sports; but, upon occasion, Anselmo neglected his own pleasures, to pursue those of Lothario; and

¹ This story of the *Curious Impertinent* is expanded from the *Orlando Furioso*, xiii.

Lothario quitted him, to follow those of Anselmo : and thus their inclinations went hand in hand with such harmony, that no clock kept such exact time. Anselmo fell desperately in love with a beautiful young lady of condition in the same city, called Camilla, daughter of such good parents, and herself so good, that he resolved (with the approbation of his friend Lothario, without whom he did nothing) to demand her of her father in marriage, which he accordingly did. It was Lothario who carried the message ; and it was he who concluded the match, so much to the good liking of his friend, that, in a little time, he found himself in the possession of what he desired, and Camilla so satisfied with having obtained Anselmo for her husband, that she ceased not to give thanks to heaven, and to Lothario, by whose means such good fortune had befallen her. For some days after the wedding, days usually dedicated to mirth, Lothario frequented his friend Anselmo's house as he was wont to do, striving to honour, please, and entertain him to the utmost of his power : but the nuptial season being over, and compliments of congratulation at an end, Lothario began to retort the frequency of his visits to Anselmo, thinking, as all discreet men should, that one ought not to visit and frequent the houses of one's friends, when married, in the same manner as when they were bachelors. For, though true and real friendship neither can nor ought to be suspicious in anything, yet so nice is the honour of a married man, that it is thought it may suffer even by a brother, and much more by a friend ! Anselmo took notice of Lothario's remonstrance, and complained greatly of it, telling him, that, had he suspected that his being married would have been the occasion of their not conversing together as formerly, he would never have done it : and sure, by the entire harmony between them, while both bachelors, they had acquired no other a name as that of the Two Friends, he desired he would not suffer so honourable and so pleasing a title to be lost, by over-acting the cautious part ; and

of his friend, and contrived to retrench, cut short, and abridge the number of visiting-days agreed upon, lest the idle vulgar, and prying malicious eyes, should censure the free access of a young and rich cavalier, so well born, and of such accomplishments, as he could not but be conscious to himself he was master of, to the house of a lady so beautiful as Camilla; and though his integrity and worth might bridge the tongue of the censorious, yet he had no mind that his own honour, or that of his friend, should be in the least suspected; and therefore, on most of the days agreed upon, he busied and employed himself about such things as he pretended were indispensable. And thus the time passed on in complaints on the one hand, and excuses on the other.

Now it fell out one day, as they two were walking in a meadow without the city, Anselmo addressed Lothario in words to this effect: I know very well, friend Lothario, I can never be thankful enough to God for the blessings he has bestowed upon me, first in making me the son of such parents as mine were, and giving me with so liberal a hand what men call the goods of nature and fortune; and especially in having given me such a friend as yourself, and such a wife as Camilla; two jewels, which, if I value not as high as I ought, I value at least as high as I am able. Yet, notwithstanding all these advantages, which usually are sufficient to make men live contented, I am the most uneasy and dissatisfied man in the whole world; having been for some time past harassed and oppressed with a desire so strange, and so much out of the common tract of other men, that I wonder at myself, and blame and rebuke myself for it when I am alone, endeavouring to stifle and conceal it even from my own thoughts, and yet I have succeeded no better in my endeavours to stifle and conceal it, than if I had made it my business to publish it to all the world. And since, in short, it must one day break out, I would fain have it lodged in the archive of your breast; not doubting but that,

through your secrecy, and friendly application to relieve me, I shall soon be freed from the vexation it gives me, and that, by your diligence, my joy will rise to as high a pitch as my discontent has done by my own folly. Lothario was in great suspense at Anselmo's discourse, and unable to guess at what he aimed by so tedious a preparation and preamble; and though he revolved in his imagination what desire it could be that gave his friend so much disturbance, he still shot wide of the mark; and, to be quickly rid of the perplexity into which this suspense threw him, he said to him, that it was doing a notorious injury to their great friendship, to seek for roundabout ways to acquaint him with his most hidden thoughts, since he might depend upon him, either for advice or assistance in what concerned them. It is very true, answered Anselmo; and in this confidence I give you to understand, friend Lothario, that the thing which disquiets me is, a desire to know whether my wife Camilla be as good and as perfect as I imagine her to be; and I cannot be thoroughly informed of this truth, but by trying her in such a manner, that the proof may manifest the perfection of her goodness, as fire does that of gold. For it is my opinion, my friend, that a woman is honest only so far as she is, or is not courted and solicited: and that she alone is really chaste who has not yielded to the force of promises, presents, and tears, or the continual solicitations of importunate lovers. For what thanks, said he, to a woman for being virtuous, when nobody persuades her to be otherwise? what mighty matter if she be reserved and cautious, who has no opportunity given her of going astray and knows she has a husband who, the first time he catches her transgressing, will be sure to take away her life? The woman, therefore, who is honest out of fear, or for want of opportunity, I shall not hold in the same degree of esteem with her who, after solicitation and importunity, comes off with the crown of victory. So that for these reasons, and for many more I could assign in support of my opinion, my

desire is that my wife Camilla may pass through these trials, and be purified and refined in the fire of courtship and solicitation, and that by some person worthy of placing his desires on her: and if she comes off from this conflict, as I believe she will, with the pains of victory, I shall applaud my matchless fortune: I shall then have it to say, that I have attained the utmost of my wishes, and may safely boast, that the virtuous woman is fallen to my lot, of whom the wise man says, 'Who can find her?' And if the reverse of all this should happen, the satisfaction of being confirmed in my opinions will enable me to bear, without regret, the trouble so costly an experiment may reasonably give me. And as nothing you can urge against my design can be of any avail towards hindering me from putting it in execution, I would have you, my friend Lothario, dispose yourself to be the instrument of performing this work of my fancy: and I will give you opportunity to do it, and you shall want for no means that I can think necessary towards gaining upon a modest, virtuous, reserved, and disinterested woman. And, among other reasons which induce me to trust this nice affair to your management, one is, my being certain that, if Camilla should be overcome, you will not push the victory to the last extremity, but only acquiesce that for done which, for good reasons, ought not to be done, and thus I shall be wronged only in the intention, and the injury will remain hid to the virtue of your silence, which, in what concerns me, will, I am assured, be eternal as that of death. Therefore, if you would have me enjoy a life that deserves to be called such, you must immediately enter upon this amorous combat, not languidly and faintly, but with all the ferreor and diligence my design requires, and with the confidence our friendship assures me of.

This was what Anselmo said to Lothario: to all which he was so attentive, that, excepting what he is already mentioned to have said, he opened not his

lips until his friend had done: but now, perceiving that he was silent, after he had gazed at him earnestly for some time, as if he had been looking at something he had never seen before, and which occasioned him wonder and amazement, he said to him: I cannot persuade myself, friend Anselmo, but that what you have been saying to me is all in jest; for, had I thought you in earnest, I would not have suffered you to proceed so far; and, by not listening to you, I should have prevented your long harangue. I cannot but think, either that you do not know me, or that I do not know you. But, no: I well know that you are Anselmo, and you know that I am Lothario: the mischief is, that I think you are not the Anselmo you used to be, and you must imagine I am not that Lothario I ought to be; for neither is what you have said to me becoming that friend of mine, Anselmo; nor is what you require of me to be asked of that Lothario whom you know. For true friends ought to prove and use their friends, as the poet¹ expresses it, *usque ad aras*; as much as to say, they ought not to employ their friendship in matters against the law of God. If an heathen had this notion of friendship, how much more ought a Christian to have it, who knows that the divine friendship ought not to be forfeited for any human friendship whatever. And when a friend goes so far, as to set aside his duty to heaven, in compliance with the interests of his friend, it must not be for light and trivial matters, but only when the honour and life of his friend are at stake. Tell me then, Anselmo, which of these two are in danger, that I should venture to compliment you with doing a thing in itself so detestable as that you require of me? Neither, assuredly: on the contrary, if I understand you right, you would have me take pains to deprive you of honour and life, and, at the same time, myself too of both. For, if I must do that which will deprive you of your honour, it is plain

¹ Really Plutarch, who ascribes the phrase to Pericles.

I take away your life, since a man without honour is worse than if he were dead : and I bring the instrument, as you would have me to be, of doing you so much harm, shall I not bring dishonour upon myself, and, by consequence, rob myself of life ? Hear me, friend Anselmo, and have patience, and forbear answering until I have done urging what I have to say, as to what your desire exacts of me ; for there will be time enough for you to reply, and for me to hear you. With all my heart, said Anselmo ; say what you please.

Then Lothario went on, saying : Methinks, O Anselmo, you are at this time in the same disposition that the Moors are always in, whom you cannot convince of the error of their sect, by citations from Holy Scripture, nor by arguments drawn from reason, or founded upon articles of faith ; but you must produce examples that are plain, easy, intelligible, demonstrative, and undeniable, with such mathematical demonstrations as cannot be denied ; as when it is said : ' If from equal parts we take equal parts, those that remain are also equal '. And, when they do not comprehend this in words, as in reality they do not, you must show it to them with your hands, and set it before their very eyes ; and, after all, nothing can convince them of the truths of our holy religion. In this very way and method must I deal with you ; for this desire, which possesses you, is so extravagant and wide of all that has the least shadow of reason, that I look upon it as mis-spending time to endeavour to convince you of your folly ; for, at present, I can give it no better name ; and I am even tempted to leave you to your indiscretion, as a punishment of your preposterous desire : but the friendship I have for you will not let me deal so rigorously with you, nor will it consent that I should desert you in such manifest danger of undoing yourself. And, that you may clearly see that it is so, say, Anselmo, have you not told me, that I must solicit her that is reserved, persuade her that is virtuous, bribe her that

still something more to say upon this subject; which, I hope, will bring you to a full conviction of the great error you are going to commit.

Tell me, Anselmo, if heaven or good fortune had made you master and lawful possessor of a superlative fine diamond, of whose goodness and beauty all jewellers who had seen it were fully satisfied, and should unanimously declare that, in weight, goodness, and beauty, it came up to whatever the nature of such a stone is capable of, and you yourself should believe as much, as knowing nothing to the contrary: would it be right that you should take a fancy to lay this diamond between the anvil and the hammer, and by mere dint of blows try whether it was so hard, and so fine, as it was thought to be? and further, supposing this put in execution, and that the stone results so foolish a trial, would it acquire thereby any additional value or reputation? and, if it should break, as it might, would not all be lost? Yes, certainly, and make its owner to pass for a simple fellow in *everybody's* opinion. Make account then, friend Anselmo, that Camilla is an exquisitely fine diamond, both in your own opinion, and in that of other people, and that it is unreasonable to put her to the hazard of being broken, since though she should remain entire, she cannot rise in her value: and should she fail and not resist, consider in time what a condition you would be in without her, and how justly you might blame yourself for having been the cause both of her ruin and your own. There is no jewel in the world so valuable as a chaste and virtuous woman; and all the honour of women consists in the good opinion the world has of them: and since that of your wife is unquestionably good, why will you bring this truth into doubt? Consider, friend, that woman is an imperfect creature, and that one should not lay stumbling-blocks in her way to make her trip and fall, but rather remove them, and clear the way before her, that she may without hindrance advance towards her proper perfection, which consists in being virtuous. Nature is

inform us that the ermine is a little white creature with a fine fur, and that, when the hunters have a mind to catch it, they make use of this artifice: knowing the way it usually takes, or the places it haunts, they lay all the passes with dirt, and then frighten the creature with noise and drive it toward those places; and when the ermine comes to the dirt it stands still, suffering itself rather to be taken, than, by passing through the mire, destroy and sully its whiteness, which it values more than liberty or life. The virtuous and modest woman is an ermine, and the virtue of chastity is whiter and cleaner than snow; and he who would not have her lose, but rather guard and preserve it, must take quite a different method from that which is used with the ermine: for he must not lay in her way the mire of courtship and assiduity of importunate lovers, since perhaps, and without a perhaps, she may not have virtue and natural strength enough to enable her, of herself, to trample down and get clear over those impediments: it is necessary, therefore, to remove such things out of her way, and set before her pure and unspotted virtue, and the charms of an unblemished reputation. A good woman may also be compared to a mirror of crystal, shining and bright, but liable to be rubbed and dimmed by every breath that comes near it. The virtuous woman is to be treated in the same manner as relics are, to be adored, but not handled. The good woman is to be looked after and prized, like a fine garden full of roses and other flowers, the owner of which suffers nobody to walk among them, or touch anything, but only at a distance, and through iron rails, to enjoy its fragrance and beauty. Lastly, I will repeat to you some verses, which I remember to have heard in a modern comedy¹, and which seem very applicable to our present purpose. A prudent old man advises another, who is father of a young maiden, to look

¹ This play has not been identified. The lines are a gloss on the Spanish proverb quoted by Naber. *Es de vidrio la mujer.*

well after her, and lock her up; and, among of reasons, gives these following:

I

*If woman's glass, why should we try
Whether she can be broke, or no?
Great hazards in the trial lie,
Because perchance she may be so.*

II

*Who that is wise, such brittle ware
Would careless dash upon the floor,
Which, broken, nothing can repair,
Nor solder to its form restore?*

III

*In this opinion all are found,
And reason vouches what I say,
Wherever Danaë abound,
There golden showers will make their way.*

All that I have hitherto said, O Anselmo, relate to you: it is now fit I should say something ruling myself; and pardon me if I am prolix; as labyrinth into which you have run yourself, it of which you would have me extricate you, does no less. You look upon me as your friend yet, against all rules of friendship, would deprive of my honour: nor is this all; you would take away yours. That you will rob me of my plain: for, when Camilla finds that I make love to, as you desire I should, it is certain she will reckon me as a man void of honour, and base, untempt, and do a thing so contrary to what I owe myself, and to your friendship. That you will deprive you of yours, there is no doubt: Camilla, perceiving that I make addresses to her, will think I have discovered some mark of love in her, which has emboldened me to declare my guilty passion; and her looking upon her

as dishonoured, affects you, as being her husband. And hence arises what we so commonly find, that the husband of the adulterous wife, though he does not know it, nor has given his wife any reason for transgressing her duty, and though his misfortune be not owing to his own neglect, or want of care, is nevertheless called by a vilifying and opprobrious name, and those who are not unacquainted with his wife's incontinence, are apt to look upon him with an eye rather of contempt than of pity. But I will tell you the reason why the husband of a vicious wife is justly dishonoured, though he does not know that he is, nor has been at all in fault, or connived at, or given her occasion to become such: and be not weary of hearing me, since the whole will redound to your own advantage.

When God created our first parent in the terrestrial paradise (as the holy Scriptures inform us) he infused a sleep into Adam; and, while he slept, he took a rib out of his left side, of which he formed our mother Eve: and, when Adam awoke, and beheld her, he said: 'This is flesh of my flesh, and bone of my bone'. And God said: 'For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and they two shall be one flesh'. And at that time the holy sacrament of marriage was instituted, with such ties as death only can loose. And this marvellous sacrament is of such force and virtue that it makes two different persons to be but one flesh: nay, it doth more in the properly married; for though they have two souls, they have but one will. And hence it is, that, as the flesh of the wife is the very same with that of the husband, the blemishes or defects thereof are participated by the flesh of the husband, though, as is already said, he was not the occasion of them. For, as the whole body feels the pain of the foot, or of any other member, because they are all one flesh, and the head feels the smart of the ankle though it was not the cause of it: so the husband partakes of the wife's dishonour by being the selfsame thing with her. And as the honours and dishonours of the world all proceed from flesh



pled with what you owe to your friendship, not only in restoring me to life, but by persuading me not to be the cause of my own dishonour. And there is one reason especially, which obliges you to undertake this business, which is, that whereas I am determined, as I am, to put this experiment in practice, it behoves you not to let me disclose my treachery to another person, and so hazard that honour you are endeavouring to preserve: and though your own should lose ground in Camilla's opinion while you are making love to her, it is of little or no consequence, since, in a short time, when we have experienced in her the integrity we expect, you may then discover to her the pure truth of our contrivance: whereupon you will regain your former credit with her. And since you hazard so little, and may give me so much pleasure by the risk, do not decline the task, whatever inconveniences may appear to you in it, since, as I have already said, if you will but set about it, I shall give up the cause for determined.

Lothario, perceiving Anselmo's fixed resolution, and not knowing what other examples to produce, nor what further reasons to offer to dissuade him from his purpose; and finding he threatened to impart his extravagant desire to some other person, resolved, in order to avoid a greater evil, to gratify him and undertake what he desired; but with a full purpose and intention so to order the matter that, without giving Camilla any disturbance, Anselmo should rest satisfied: and therefore he returned for answer that he desired he would not communicate his design to any other person whatever, for he would take the business upon himself, and would begin it whenever he pleased. Anselmo embraced him with great tenderness and affection, thanking him for this offer as if he had done him some great favour; and it was agreed between them, that he should set about the work the very next day, when he would give him opportunity and leisure to talk with Camilla alone, and would also furnish him with money and jewels

to present her with. He advised him to muse, and write verses in her praise, and not care to be at the pains he would make him. Lothario consented to everything, but with intention very different from what Anselmo thought. Things thus settled they returned to house, where they found Camilla waiting with uneasiness and anxiety for her spouse, who was abroad longer that day than usual. Lothario some time retired to his own house, and remained in his, as contented as Lothario was who was at a loss what stratagem to invent to eat himself handsomely out of this banishment. But that night he bethought way how to deceive Anselmo, without Camilla: and the next day he came to his friend, and was kindly received by him, always entertained and treated him with will, knowing the affection her spouse bore him. Dinner being ended and the cloth taken away, Anselmo desired Lothario to stay with him, and went upon an urgent affair, which he would be back in about an hour and a half. Lothario prayed him not to go, and Lothario offered him company: but it signified nothing. On the contrary, he importuned Lothario to wait for him: for he had a matter of great importance to talk to him about. He also desired Lothario company until his return. Lothario knew so well how to counterfeit a necessity, though that necessity proceeded from his own folly, that no one could be deceived.

Anselmo went away, and Camilla remained by themselves at table, the rest being all gone to dinner. Thus Lothario self entered in the lute, as his friend had before him, able to conquer

first thing he did, was, to lay his elbow on the arm of the chair and his cheek on his hand, and, begging Camilla to pardon his ill-manners, he said he would willingly repose himself a little until Anselmo's return. Camilla answered, that he might repose himself more at ease on the couch than in the chair, and therefore desired him to walk in and lie down there. Lothario excused himself, and slept where he was until Anselmo's return: who, finding Camilla retired to her chamber, and Lothario asleep, believed that, as he had stayed so long, they had had time enough both to talk and to sleep; and he thought it long until Lothario awoke, that he might go out with him, and inquire after his success. All fell out as he wished. Lothario awoke, and presently they went out together, and Anselmo asked him concerning what he wanted to be informed of. Lothario answered that he did not think it proper to open too far the first time, and therefore all he had done was to tell her she was very handsome, and that the whole town rang of her wit and beauty; and this he thought a good introduction, as it might insinuate him into her good will, and dispose her to listen to him the next time with pleasure: in which he employed the same artifice, which the devil uses to deceive a person who is on his guard: who, being in reality an angel of darkness, transforms himself into one of light, and setting plausible appearances before him, at length discovers himself, and carries his point, if his deceit be not found out at the beginning. Anselmo was mightily pleased with all this, and said he would give him the like opportunity every day without going abroad; for he would so employ himself at home, that Camilla should never suspect his stratagem.

Now many days passed, and Lothario, though he spoke not a word to Camilla on the subject, told Anselmo that he had, and that he could never perceive in her the least sign of anything that was amiss, or even discover the least glimpse or shadow of hope to himself; on the contrary, that she threatened to

to present her with. He advised him to give her music, and write verses in her praise, and, if he did not care to be at the pains he would make them for him. Lothario consented to everything, but with an intention very different from what Anselmo imagined. Things thus settled they returned to Anselmo's house, where they found Camilla waiting with great uneasiness and anxiety for her spouse, who had stayed abroad longer that day than usual. Lothario after some time retired to his own house, and Anselmo remained in his, as contented as Lothario was pensive, who was at a loss what stratagem to invent to extricate himself handsomely out of this impertinent business. But that night he bethought himself of a way how to deceive Anselmo, without offending Camilla: and the next day he came to dine with his friend, and was kindly received by Camilla, who always entertained and treated him with much good will, knowing the affection her spouse had for him. Dinner being ended and the cloth taken away, Anselmo desired Lothario to stay with Camilla while he went upon an urgent affair, which he would dispatch and be back in about an hour and a half. Camilla prayed him not to go, and Lothario offered to bear him company: but it signified nothing with Anselmo; on the contrary, he importuned Lothario to stay and wait for him; for he had a matter of great importance to talk to him about. He also desired Camilla to bear Lothario company until his return. In short, he knew so well how to counterfeit a necessity for his absence, though that necessity proceeded only from his own folly, that no one could perceive it was feigned.

Anselmo went away, and Camilla and Lothario remained by themselves at table, the rest of the family being all gone to dinner. Thus Lothario found himself entered in the lists, as his friend had dreamed, with an enemy before him, able to conquer by her beauty alone a squadron of armed cavaliers: think then, whether Lothario had not cause to fear. But the

first thing he did, was, to lay his elbow on the arm of the chair and his cheek on his hand, and, begging Camilla to pardon his ill-manners, he said he would willingly repose himself a little until Anselmo's return. Camilla answered, that he might repose himself more at ease on the couch than in the chair, and therefore desired him to walk in and lie down there. Lothario excused himself, and slept where he was until Anselmo's return: who, finding Camilla retired to her chamber, and Lothario asleep, believed that, as he had stayed so long, they had had time enough both to talk and to sleep, and he thought it long until Lothario awoke, that he might go out with him, and inquire after his success. All fell out as he wished. Lothario awoke, and presently they went out together, and Anselmo asked him concerning what he wanted to be informed of. Lothario answered that he did not think it proper to open too far the first time, and therefore all he had done was to tell her she was very handsome, and that the whole town raved of her wit and beauty; and this he thought a good introduction, as it might incline him into her good will, and dispose her to listen to him the next time with pleasure: in which he employed the same artifice, which the devil uses to deceive a person who is on his guard, who, being in reality an angel of darkness, transforms himself into one of light, and setting plausible appearances before him, at length discovers himself, and carries his point, if he deceives he not found out at the beginning. Anselmo was mightily pleased with all this, and said he would give him the like opportunity every day without going abroad, for he would so employ himself at home that Camilla should never suspect his stratagem.

Now many days passed, and Lothario, though he spoke not a word to Camilla on the subject, told Anselmo that he had, and that he could never perceive in her the least sign of anything that was vain, or even discover the least glimpse or shadow of hope for himself; on the contrary, that she threatened to

first thing he did, was, to lay his elbow on the arm of the chair and his cheek on his hand, and, begging Camilla to pardon his ill-manners, he said he would willingly repose himself a little until Anselmo's return. Camilla answered, that he might repose himself more at ease on the couch than in the chair, and therefore desired him to walk in and lie down there. Lothario excused himself, and slept where he was until Anselmo's return: who, finding Camilla retired to her chamber, and Lothario asleep, believed that, as he had stayed so long, they had had time enough both to talk and to sleep, and he thought it long until Lothario awoke, that he might go out with him, and inquire after his success. All fell out as he wished. Lothario awoke, and presently they went out together, and Anselmo asked him concerning what he wanted to be informed of. Lothario answered that he did not think it proper to open too far the first time, and therefore all he had done was to tell her she was very handsome, and that the whole town rang of her wit and beauty, and that he thought a good introduction, as it might warmate him into her good will, and dispose her to listen to him the next time with pleasure: in which he employed the same artifice, which the devil uses to deceive a person who is on his guard: who, being in reality an angel of darkness, transforms himself into one of light, and setting plausible appearances before him, at length discovers himself, and carries his point, if his deceit be not found out at the beginning. Anselmo was mightily pleased with all this, and said he would give him the like opportunity every day without going abroad: for he would so employ himself at home that Camilla should never suspect his stratagem.

Now many days passed, and Lothario, though he spoke not a word to Camilla on the subject, told Anselmo that he had, and that he could never perceive in her the least sign of anything that was amiss, or even discover the least glimpse or shadow of hope for himself; on the contrary, that she threatened to

to be denied what is possible ; as a certain poet has better expressed it in these verses :

In death I life desire to see,
Health in disease, in tortures rest ;
In chains and prisons liberty,
And truth in a disloyal breast.

But adverse fate, and heav'n's decree,
In this to baffle me are joined,
That, since I ask what cannot be,
What can be I shall never find.

The next day Anselmo went to his friend's house in the country, telling Camilla that, during his absence, Lothario would come to take care of his house and dine with her, and desiring her to treat him as she would do his own person. Camilla, as a discreet and virtuous woman should, was troubled at the order her husband gave her, and represented to him, how improper it was, that anybody, in his absence, should take his place at his table ; and, if he did it, as doubting her ability to manage his family, she desired he would try her for this time, and he should see by experience that she was equal to trusts of greater consequence. Anselmo replied it was his pleasure it should be so, and that she had nothing to do but to acquiesce and be obedient. Camilla said, she would, though much against her inclination. Anselmo went away, and the next day Lothario came to his house, where he was received by Camilla with a kind and modest welcome. But she never exposed herself to be left alone with Lothario, being constantly attended by her own and maid-servants, especially by her own maid called Leonela, whom, as they had been brought up together from their infancy in her father's house, she loved very much, and, upon her marriage with Anselmo, had brought with her. Lothario said nothing to her the three first days, though he had opportunities when both was taken away, and the servants were gone : a hasty dinner : for so Camilla had directed :

and further, Leonela had orders to dine before her mistress and never to stir from her side; but she, having her thoughts intent upon other matters of her own pleasure, and wanting to employ those hours, and that opportunity, to her own purposes, did not always observe her mistress's orders, but often left them alone as if she had been expressly commanded so to do. Nevertheless, the modest presence of Camilla, the gravity of her countenance, and her composed behaviour, were such that they awed and bridled Lothario's tongue. But the influence of her virtue in silencing Lothario's tongue redounded to the greater prejudice of them both. For if his tongue lay still his thoughts were in motion; and he had leisure to contemplate, one by one, all those perfections of goodness and beauty of which Camilla was mistress, and which were sufficient to inspire love into a statue of marble, and how much more into a heart of flesh. Lothario gazed at her all the while he might have talked to her, and considered how worthy she was to be beloved: and this consideration began by little and little to undermine the regards he had for Anselmo: and, a thousand times, he thought of withdrawing from the city, and going where Anselmo should never see him, nor be Camilla, more: but the pleasure he took in beholding her had already thrown an obstacle in the way of his intention. He did violence to himself, and had frequent struggles within him, to get the better of the pleasure he received in gazing on Camilla. He blamed himself, when alone, for his folly, he called himself a false friend and a bad Christian. He reasoned upon, and made comparisons between his own conduct and that of Anselmo, and still concluded that Anselmo's folly and presumption were greater than his own inability: and if what he had in his thoughts were but as excusable before God as it was before men, he should fear no punishment for his fault. In fine, the beauty and goodness of Camilla, together with the opportunity which the thoughtless husband had put into

have been despised, my presents refused, and, when I shed some few feigned tears, she made a mere jest of them. In short, as Camilla is the sum of all beauty, she is also the repository in which modesty, good nature, and reserve, with all the virtues which can make a good woman praiseworthy and happy, are treasured up. Therefore, friend, take back your money; here it is, I had no occasion to make use of it, (for Camilla's integrity is not to be shaken by things so mean as presents and promises. Be satisfied, Anselmo, and make no further trials; and since you have safely passed the gulf of those doubts and suspicions we are apt to entertain of women, do not again expose yourself on the deep sea of new disquiets, nor make a fresh trial, with another pilot, of the goodness and strength of the vessel, which heaven has allotted you for your passage through the ocean of this world; but make account, that you are arrived safe in port, and secure yourself with the anchor of serious consideration, and lie by, until you are required to pay that duty from which no human rank is exempted.

Anselmo was entirely satisfied with Lothario's words, and believed them as if they had been delivered by some oracle. Nevertheless, he desired him not to give over the undertaking, though he carried it on merely out of curiosity and amusement, however he need not, for the future, ply her so close as he had done: all that he now desired of him, was, that he would write some verses in her praise under the name of Chloris, and he would give Camilla to understand that he was in love with a lady, to whom he had given that name, that he might celebrate her with the regard due to her modesty. and, if Lothario did not care to be at the trouble of writing the verses himself, he would do it for him. There will be no need of that, said Lothario: for the Muses are not so unpropitious to me, but that, now and then, they make a visit. Tell Camilla your thoughts of my counterfeit passion, and leave me to make the verses; which, if not so good as the subject deserves, shall, at least, be the

and all contributed to inflame him the more. In short, he thought it necessary, whilst he had the time and opportunity, which Anselmo's absence afforded him, to shorten the siege of this fortress. And therefore he attacked her pride with the praises of her beauty; for there is nothing which sooner reduces and levels the towering castles of the vanity of the fair sex, than vanity itself, when posted upon the tongue of flattery. In effect, he undermined the rock of her integrity with such engines, that, though she had been made of brass, she must have fallen to the ground. Lothario wept, entreated, flattered, and solicited with such earnestness and demonstrations of sincerity that he quite overthrew all Camilla's reserve, and at last triumphed over what he least expected, and most desired. She surrendered—*verra Camilla surrendered*: and what wonder, when even Lothario's friendship could not stand its ground? A plain example, showing us, that the passion of love is to be vanquished only by flying, and that we must not pretend to grapple with so powerful an enemy, nor divine succours are necessary to subdue such force, though human. Leonela alone was privy to her lady's frailty; for the two faithless friends, and new lovers, could not hide it from her. Lothario would not acquaint Camilla with Anselmo's project, nor with his having designedly given him the opportunity of arriving at that point, lest she should esteem his passion the less, or should think he had made love to her by chance, rather than out of choice.

A few days after, Anselmo returned home, and did not miss what he had lost, which was what he took least care of, and yet valued most. He presently went to make a visit to Lothario, and found him at home. They embraced each other, and the one inquired what news concerning his life or death. The news I have for you, O friend Anselmo, said Lothario, is, that you have a wife worthy to be the pattern and crown of all good women. The words I have said to her are given to the wind; my efforts

And when the sun with his returning light,
 Forth from the east his radiant journey goes,
 With accents such as sorrow only knows,
 My griefs to tell, is all my poor delight
 And when bright Phoebus, from his starry throne,
 Sends rays direct upon the parched soil,
 Still in the mournful tale I persevere.
 Returning night renews my sorrow's toil;
 And though from morn to night I weep and moan,
 Nor heaven nor Chloris my complainings hear.'

Camilla was very well pleased with the sonnet, but Anselmo more: he commended it, and said, the lady was extremely cruel, who made no return to so much truth. What then? replied Camilla, are we to take all that the enamoured poets tell us for truth? Not all they tell us as poets, answered Lothario, but as lovers; for though as poets they may exceed, as lovers they always fall short of the truth. There is no doubt of that, replied Anselmo, resolved to second and support the credit of everything Lothario said with Camilla, who was now become as indifferent to Anselmo's artifice, as she was in love with Lothario. Being therefore pleased with everything that was his, and besides taking it for granted, that all his desires and verses were addressed to her, and that she was the true Chloris, she desired him, if he could recollect any other sonnet or verses, to repeat them. I remember one, answered Lothario; but I believe it is not so good as the former, or to speak properly, less bad; as you shall judge; for it is this:

I die, if not believed, 'tis sure I die,
 For ere I cease to love and to adore,
 O fly, ungrateful law, your beauty's pow'r,
 Dead at your feet you shall behold me lie.

When to the regions of obscurity
 I hence am banish'd to enjoy no more
 Glory and life, you, in that luckless hour,
 Your image graven in my heart shall see.

* Orvanias introduced this sonnet again in his play, *Le Com de los Ciles y Salas de Ardena*.

best I can make. Thus agreed the impertinent and the treacherous friend. And Anselmo, being returned to his house, inquired of Camilla, what she wondered he had not already inquired, namely, the occasion of her writing the letter she had sent him. Camilla answered, that she then fancied Lothario looked at her a little more licentiously than when he was at home; but that now she was undeceived, and believed it to be but a mere imagination of her own; for Lothario had, of late, avoided seeing, and being alone with her. Anselmo replied, that she might be very secure from that suspicion; for, to his knowledge, Lothario was in love with a young lady of condition in the city, whom he celebrated under the name of Chloris; and, though it were not so, she had nothing to fear, considering Lothario's virtue, and the great friendship that subsisted between them. Had not Camilla been beforehand advertised by Lothario, that this story of his love for Chloris was all a fiction, and that he had told it Anselmo, that he might have an opportunity, now and then, of employing himself in the praises of Camilla herself, she had doubtless fallen into the desperate snare of jealousy: but, being prepared for it, it gave her no disturbance.

The next day, they three being together at table, Anselmo desired Lothario to recite some of the verses he had composed on his beloved Chloris; for, since Camilla did not know her, he might safely repeat what he pleased. Though she did know her, answered Lothario, I should have no reason to conceal what I have written; for, when a lover praises his mistress's beauty, and at the same time taxes her with cruelty, he casts no reproach upon her good name. But, be that as it will, I must tell you, that yesterday I made a sonnet on the ingratitude of Chloris; and it is this:

In the dead silence of the peaceful night,
When others' cares are hush'd in soft repose,
The sad account of my neglected woes
To conscious heaven and Chloris I recite.

And when the sun with his returning light,
 Forth from the east his radiant journey goes,
 With accents such as sorrow only knows,
 My grief to tell, is all my poor delight.

And when bright Phoebus, from his starry throat,
 Sends rays direct upon the parched soil,
 Still is the mournful tale I persevere.
 Returning night renews my sorrow's toil;
 And though from morn to night I weep and moan,
 Not heaven nor Chloris my complainings hear¹

Camilla was very well pleased with the sonnet, but Anselmo more: he commended it, and said, the lady was extremely cruel, who made no return to so much truth. What then? replied Camilla, are we to take all that the enamoured poets tell us for truth? Not all they tell us as poets, answered Lothario, but as lovers; for though as poets they may exceed, as lovers they always fall short of the truth. There is no doubt of that, replied Anselmo, resolved to second and support the credit of everything Lothario said with Camilla, who was now become as indifferent to Anselmo's artifice, as she was in love with Lothario. Being therefore pleased with everything that was his, and besides taking it for granted, that all his desires and verses were addressed to her, and that she was the true Chloris, she desired him, if he could recollect any other sonnet or verses, to repeat them. I remember one, answered Lothario; but I believe it is not so good as the former, or to speak properly, less bad; as you shall judge; for it is this:

I die, if not beloved, 'tis sure I die,
 For ere I cease to love and to adore,
 Or fly, ungrateful fair, your beauty's pow'r,
 Dead at your feet you shall behold me lie.

When to the regions of obscurity
 I hence am banish'd to enjoy no more
 Glory and wit, you, in that luckless hour,
 Your image graven in my heart shall see.

¹ Cervantes introduced this sonnet again in his play, *La Casa de los Cueros y Salones de Ardenas*.

best I can make. Thus agreed the impertinent and the treacherous friend. And Anselmo, being returned to his house, inquired of Camilla, what she wondered he had not already inquired, namely, the occasion of her writing the letter she had sent him. Camilla answered, that she then fancied Lothario looked at her a little more licentiously than when he was at home; but that now she was undeceived, and believed it to be but a mere imagination of her own; for Lothario had, of late, avoided seeing, and being alone with her. Anselmo replied, that she might be very secure from that suspicion; for, to his knowledge, Lothario was in love with a young lady of condition in the city, whom he celebrated under the name of Chloris; and, though it were not so, she had nothing to fear, considering Lothario's virtue, and the great friendship that subsisted between them. Had not Camilla been beforehand advertised by Lothario, that this story of his love for Chloris was all a fiction, and that he had told it Anselmo, that he might have an opportunity, now and then, of employing himself in the praises of Camilla herself, she had doubtless fallen into the desperate snare of jealousy: but, being prepared for it, it gave her no disturbance.

The next day, they three being together at table, Anselmo desired Lothario to recite some of the verses he had composed on his beloved Chloris, for, since Camilla did not know her, he might safely repeat what he pleased. Though she did know her, answered Lothario, I should have no reason to conceal what I have written; for, when a lover praises his mistress's beauty, and at the same time taxes her with cruelty, he casts no reproach upon her good name. But, be that as it will, I must tell you, that yesterday I made a sonnet on the ingratitude of Chloris; and it is this:

In the dead silence of the peaceful night,
When others' cares are hush'd in soft repose,
The sad account of my neglected woes
To conscious heaven and Chloris I recite.

And when the sun with his returning light,
Forth from the east his radiant journey goes,
With accents such as sorrow only knows,
My griefs to tell, is all my poor delight.

And when bright Phoebus, from his starry throne,
Sends rays direct upon the parched soul,
Still is the mournful tale I persevere.
Returning night renews my sorrow's toll;
And though from morn to night I weep and moan,
Nor heaven nor Chloris my complainings hear¹

Camilla was very well pleased with the sonnet, but Anselmo more: he commended it, and said, the lady was extremely cruel, who made no return to so much truth. What then? replied Camilla, are we to take all that the enamoured poets tell us for truth? Not all they tell us as poets, answered Lothario, but as lovers; for though as poets they may exceed, as lovers they always fall short of the truth. There is no doubt of that, replied Anselmo, resolved to second and support the credit of everything Lothario said with Camilla, who was now become as indifferent to Anselmo's artifice, as she was in love with Lothario. Being therefore pleased with everything that was his, and besides taking it for granted, that all his desires and wishes were addressed to her, and that she was the true Chloris, she desired him, if he could recollect any other sonnet or verses, to repeat them. I remember one, answered Lothario; but I believe it is not so good as the former, or to speak properly, less bad; as you shall judge; for it is this:

I die, if not beloved, 'tis sure I die,
For ere I cease to love and to adore,
Or fly, ungrateful law, your beauty's pow'r,
Dead at your feet you shall behold me lie.

When to the regions of obscurity
I hence am banish'd to enjoy no more
Glory and life, you, in that luckless hour,
Your image graven on my heart shall see.

¹ Certain Intro

La Cane de l'oe

best I can make. Thus agreed the impertinent and the treacherous friend. And Anselmo, being returned to his house, inquired of Camilla, what she wondered he had not already inquired, namely, the occasion of her writing the letter she had sent him. Camilla answered, that she then fancied Lothario looked at her a little more licentiously than when he was at home; but that now she was undeceived, and believed it to be but a mere imagination of her own; for Lothario had, of late, avoided seeing, and being alone with her. Anselmo replied, that she might be very secure from that suspicion: for, to his knowledge, Lothario was in love with a young lady of condition in the city, whom he celebrated under the name of Chloris; and, though it were not so, she had nothing to fear, considering Lothario's virtue, and the great friendship that subsisted between them. Had not Camilla been beforehand adverted by Lothario, that this story of his love for Chloris was all a fiction, and that he had told it Anselmo, that he might have an opportunity, now and then, of employing himself in the praises of Camilla herself, she had doubtless fallen into the desperate snare of jealousy: but, being prepared for it, it gave her no disturbance.

The next day, they three being together at table, Anselmo desired Lothario to recite some of the verses he had composed on his beloved Chloris; for, since Camilla did not know her, he might safely repeat what he pleased. Though she did know her, answered Lothario, I should have no reason to conceal what I have written; for, when a lover praises his mistress's beauty, and at the same time taxes her with cruelty, he casts no reproach upon her good name. But, be that as it will, I must tell you, that yesterday I made a sonnet on the ingratitude of Chloris: and it is this:

In the dead silence of the peaceful night,
When others' cares are hush'd in soft repose,
The sad account of my neglected woes
To conscious heaven and Chloris I recite.

the very case of Lothario, love having made my master's absence the instrument to oblige you to surrender to him, and it being absolutely necessary to finish, in that interval, what love had decreed, without giving Time himself any time to bring back Anselmo, and, by his presence, render the work imperfect? for love has no surer minister to execute his designs than opportunity; it is that he makes use of in all his exploits, especially in the beginnings. All this I am well acquainted with, and from experience rather than hearsay; and, one day or other, madam, I may let you see, that I also am a girl of flesh and blood. Besides, madam, you did not declare your passion, nor engage yourself so soon, but you had first seen, in his eyes, in his sighs, in his expressions, in his promises, and his presents, Lothario's whole soul; and in that, and all his accomplishments, how worthy Lothario was of your love. Then, since it is so, let not these scruples and maxims disturb you, but rest assured, that Lothario esteems you no less than you do him; and be contented and satisfied, that, since you are fallen into the snare of love, it is with a person of worth and character, and one who possesses not only the four SS¹, which they say, all true lovers ought to have, but the whole alphabet. Do but hear me, and you shall see how I have it by heart. He is, if I judge right, amiable, bountiful, constant, daring, enamoured, faithful, gallant, honourable, illustrious, kind, loyal, mild, noble, obliging, prudent, quiet, rich, and the SS, as they say; lastly, true, valiant, and wise: the X suits him not, because it is a harsh letter; the Y, he is young; the Z, zealous of your honour.

Camilla smiled at her maid's alphabet, and took her to be more conversant in love matters than she had hitherto owned; and indeed she now confessed to Camilla, that she had a love affair with a young

¹ *Sabio, solo, solícito, secreto, or sage, solitary, solicitous, secret.* Leonora's alphabet cannot, of course, be literally rendered from the Spanish.

That relic, with a lover's generous pride
 I treasure in my breast, the only soul
 Of comfort whilst thy rigour lets me
 Unhappy be, who steers his dangerous
 Through unfrequented seas, no star to
 Nor port his shatter'd vessel to receive

Anselmo commended this second sonnet as he had done the first ; and thus he went link after link to the chain, wherewith he fasten'd himself, and secured his own dishonour ; for as much as he had dishonoured his wife, so much as she dishonoured him most, he then sought to recover his honour was ascert. And thus, every ladder Camilla descended towards the ocean of disgrace, she ascended in her husband's honour towards the uppermost round of virtue and fame.

Now it happened one day that Camilla alone with her maid, said to her ; I am ashamed of Leonela, to think how little value I set upon my honour in not making it cost Lothario more time and entire possession of my inclinations, which he has so soon ; I fear he will look upon my surrendering as levity, without reflecting on the violence he used, which put it out of my power to resist him. Dear madam, answered Leonela, this troubles you ; for there is nothing in it ; it is only of a gift if it be good in itself, and worthy of not being learned by being soon given ; and therefore say, he who gives quickly, gives twice. No, quoth Camilla, that which costs little is not valued. This does not affect your case, Leonela ; for love, as I have heard say, sometimes flies and sometimes walks, runs with one person leisurely with another ; some he wounds, some he burns ; some he wounds, and others he kills in one and the same instant he begins and ends the career of his desire. He often is the cause of our fortune, and in the evening he

the very case of Lothario, love having made my master's absence the instrument to oblige you to surrender to him, and it being absolutely necessary to finish, in that interval, what love had decreed, without giving Time himself any time to bring back Anselmo, and, by his presence, render the work imperfect? for love has no surer minister to execute his designs than opportunity: it is that he makes use of to all his exploits, especially in the beginnings. All this I am well acquainted with, and from experience rather than hearsay; and, one day or other, madam, I may let you see, that I also am a girl of flesh and blood. Besides, madam, you did not declare your passion, nor engage yourself so soon, but you had first seen, in his eyes, in his sighs, in his expressions, in his promises, and his presents, Lothario's whole soul; and in that, and all his accomplishments, how worthy Lothario was of your love. Then, since it is so, let not these scruples and niceties disturb you, but rest assured, that Lothario esteems you no less than you do him; and live contented and satisfied, that, since you are fallen into the snare of love, it is with a person of worth and character, and one who possesses not only the four SS¹, which they say, all true lovers ought to have, but the whole alphabet. Do but hear me, and you shall see how I have it by heart. He is, if I judge right, amiable, beautiful, constant, daring, enamoured, libidinal, gallant, honourable, illustrious, kind, loyal, mild, noble, obliging, prudent, quiet, rich, and the SS, as they say: lusty, true, valiant, and wise: the X suits him not, because it is a harsh letter; the Y, he is young; the Z, zealous of your honour.

Camilla smiled at her maid's alphabet, and took her to be more conversant in love matters than she had hitherto owned; and indeed she now confessed to Camilla, that she had a love affair with a young

¹ *Sobrio, solo, solicio, secundo, or sage, solitary, sobelious, secret.* Leonora's alphabet cannot, of course, be literally rendered from the Spanish.

craftsmen of the same city. At which Camilla was much disturbed, fearing lest from that quarter her own honour might be in danger. And there she sifted her, to know whether her amour had gone farther than words. She, with little shame, and little loss, owned it had. For, it is certain, the ships of the mistress take off all shame from the servants, who, when they see their mistress make nothing of downright bawling, nor of known. Camilla could do no more but beg of her lover, and to manage her own with such that it might not come to the knowledge of her or of Lothario. Leonela answered, she would but she kept her word in such a manner as Camilla's fears that she might lose her reputation by her means. For the lowd and bold Leonela found that her mistress's conduct was same it used to be, had the assurance to and conceal her lover in the house, prevent her lady durst not speak of it, though she was. For this inconvenience, among others, of failings of mistresses, that they become shameless servants, and are necessitated to commit dishonesty and lewdness; as was the case with Camilla: for, though she saw, not once only, but many times, that Leonela was with her gallant in her house, she was so far from daring that she gave her opportunities of locking, did all she could to prevent his being with her husband. But all could not hinder Leonela seeing him once go out of the house at night, who, not knowing who he was, though she must be some apparition. But when he came off, muffling himself up, and concealing his face with care and caution, he changed one fool for another, which must have been the ruin of her. If Camilla had not remedied it. Lothario, finding that the man whom he had taken for a fool, was so unseasonable

came thither upon Leonela's account, that he did not so much as remember there was such a person as Leonela in the world. What he thought, was, that Camilla, as she had been easy and complying to him, was so to another also: for the wickedness of a bad woman carries this additional mischief along with it, that it weakens her credit even with the man to whose entreaties and persuasions she surrendered her honour; and he is ready to believe, upon the slightest grounds, that she yields to others even with greater facility.

All Lothario's good sense and prudent reasonings seem to have failed him upon this occasion: for, without making one proper, or even rational reflection, without more ado, grown impatient, and blinded with a jealous rage that gnawed his bowels, and dying to be revenged on Camilla, who had offended him in nothing, he went to Anselmo before he was up, and said to him: Know, Anselmo, that for several days past I have struggled with myself to keep from you what is no longer possible nor just to conceal. Know, that Camilla's fort is surrendered, and submitted to my will and pleasure; and if I have delayed discovering to you this truth, it was to satisfy myself whether it was any wanton desire in her, or whether she had a mind to try me, and to see whether the love I made to her, with your connivance, was in earnest. And I still believed, if she was what she ought to be, and what we both thought her, she would, before now, have given you an account of my solicitations. But, since I find she has not, I conclude she intends to keep the promise she has made me of giving me a meeting the next time you are absent from home, in the wardrobe (and, indeed, that was the place where Camilla used to entertain him). And, since the fault is not yet committed, excepting in thought only, I would not have you run precipitately to take revenge: for, perhaps, between this and the time of putting it in execution, Camilla may change her mind and repent. And therefore, as you have hitherto always followed my advice, in whole or in

part, follow and observe this I shall now give you, that without possibility of being mistaken, and upon maturest deliberation, you may satisfy yourself as to what is most fitting for you to do. Pretend an absence of three or four days, as you used to do at other times, and contrive to hide yourself in the wardrobe, where the tapestry and other moralities may serve to conceal you; and then you will see with your own eyes, and I with mine, what Camilla intends; and if it be wickedness, as is rather to be feared than expected, you may then, with secrecy and caution, be the avenger of your own injury.

Anselmo was amazed, confounded, and astonished at Lothario's words, which came upon him at a time when he least expected to hear them; for he already looked upon Camilla as victorious over Lothario's feigned assault, and began to enjoy the glory of the conquest. He stood a good while with his eyes fixed motionless on the ground, and at length said: Lothario, you have done what I expected from your friendship; I must follow your advice in everything; do what you will, and be as secret as so unlooked-for an event requires. Lothario promised him he would; and scarcely had he left him when he began to repent of all he had said, and was convinced he had acted foolishly, since he might have revenged himself on Camilla by a few cruel and less dishonourable methods. He cursed his want of sense, condemned his heedless resolution, and was at a loss how to undo what was done, or to get tolerably well out of the scrape. At last he resolved to discover all to Camilla; and, as he could not long want an opportunity of doing it, that very day he found her alone; and immediately on his coming in, she said: Know, dear Lothario, that I have an uneasiness at heart, which tortures me in such a manner, that methinks it is ready to burst it, and, indeed, it is a wonder that it does not; for Leonela's impudence is arrived to that degree, that she every night entertains a gallant in the house, who stays her until daylight, so much to the preju-

dies of my reputation, that it will leave room for censure to whoever shall see him go out at such unreasonable hours: and what gives me the most concern is, that I cannot chastise or so much as reprimand her; for her being in the secret of our correspondence puts a bridle into my mouth, and obliges me to conceal hers: and I am afraid of some unlucky event from this quarter.

At first, when Camilla said this, Lothario believed it a piece of cunning to deceive him, by persuading him that the man he saw go out was Leonora's gallant, and not Camilla's: but, perceiving that she wept, and afflicted herself, and begged his assistance in finding a remedy, he soon came into the belief of what she said; and so was filled with confusion and repentance for what he had done. He desired Camilla to make herself easy, for he would take an effectual course to restrain Leonora's insolence. He also told her what the furious rage of jealousy had instigated him to tell Anselmo, and how it was agreed that Anselmo should hide himself in the wardrobe, to be an eyewitness from thence of her disloyalty to him. He begged her to pardon this madness, and desired her advice how to remedy what was done, and extricate them out of so perplexed a labyrinth, as his rashness had involved them in. Camilla was astonished at hearing what Lothario had said, and, with much resentment, reproached him for the ill thoughts he had entertained of her; and with many and discreet reasons set before him the folly and inconsiderateness of the resolution he had taken. But, as women have naturally a more ready invention, either for good or bad purposes, than men, though it often fails them when they set themselves purposely to deliberate, Camilla instantly hit upon a way to remedy an affair seemingly incapable of all remedy. She bid Lothario see that Anselmo hid himself the next day where he had proposed; for by this very hiding she proposed to secure, for the future, their mutual enjoyment without fear of surprise; and, without letting him into the whole

part, follow and observe this I shall now give you, that without possibility of being mistaken, and upon maturest deliberation, you may satisfy yourself as to what is most fitting for you to do. Pretend an absence of three or four days, as you used to do at other times, and contrive to hide yourself in the wardrobe, where the tapestry and other movables may serve to conceal you; and then you will see with your own eyes, and I with mine, what Camilla intends; and if it be wickedness, as is rather to be feared than expected, you may then, with secrecy and caution, be the avenger of your own injury.

Anselmo was amazed, confounded, and astonished at Lothario's words, which came upon him at a time when he least expected to hear them; for he already looked upon Camilla as victorious over Lothario's feigned assaults, and began to enjoy the glory of the conquest. He stood a good while with his eyes fixed motionless on the ground, and at length said: Lothario, you have done what I expected from your friendship; I must follow your advice in everything; do what you will, and be as secret as so unlooked-for an event requires. Lothario promised him he would; and scarcely had he left him when he began to repent of all he had said, and was convicted he had acted foolishly, since he might have revenged himself on Camilla by a less cruel and less dishonourable method. He cursed his want of sense, condemned his heedless resolution, and was at a loss how to undo what was done, or to get tolerably well out of the scrape. At last he resolved to discover all to Camilla; and, as he could not long want an opportunity of doing it, that very day he found her alone; and immediately on his coming in, she said: Know, dear Lothario, that I have an uneasiness at heart, which tortures me in such a manner, that methinks it is ready to burst it, and, indeed, it is a wonder that it does not; for Leonela's impudence is arrived to that degree, that she every night entertains a gallant in the house, who stays with her until daylight, so much to the preju-

his wicked design in execution. But first my cruel, but honourable purpose shall be executed. Ah! dear madam, answered the cunning and well instructed Leonela, what is it you intend to do with this dagger? Is it to take away your own life, or Lothario's? whichever of the two you do will redound to the ruin of your credit and fame. It is better you should dissemble your wrong than to let this wicked man now into the house while we are alone. Consider, madam, we are weak women, and he a man, and resolute; and, as he comes blinded and big with his wicked purpose, he may perhaps, before you can execute yours, do what would be worse for you than taking away your life. A mischief take my master Anselmo for giving this impudent fellow such an ascendant in his house. But pray, madam, if you kill him, as I imagine you intend, what shall we do with him after he is dead? What, child? answered Camilla; why leave him here for Anselmo to bury him; for it is but just he should have the agreeable trouble of burying his own infamy. Call him without more ado, for all the time I lose in delaying to take due revenge for my wrong, methinks I offend against that loyalty I owe to my husband.

All this Anselmo listened to, and at every word Camilla spoke his sentiments changed. But when he understood that she intended to kill Lothario, he was inclined to prevent it, by coming out and discovering himself; but was withheld by the strong desire he had to see what would be the end of so brave and virtuous a resolution; purposing, however, to come out in time enough to prevent mischief. And now Camilla was taken with a strong fainting fit; and throwing herself upon a bed that was there, Leonela began to weep bitterly, and to say: Ah, woe is me! that I should be so unhappy as to see die here, between my arms, the flower of the world's virtue, the crown of good women, the pattern of chastity; with other such expressions, that nobody, who had heard her, but would have taken her for the most compassionate and faithful damsel in the universe, and

of her design, she only desired him, after Anselmo was posted, to be ready at Leonela's call, and that he should take care to answer to whatever she should say to him, just as he would do if he did not know that Anselmo was listening. Lothario pressed her to explain to him her whole design, that he might with the more safety and caution be upon his guard in all he thought necessary. No other guard, said Camilla, is necessary, but only to answer me directly to what I shall ask you. For she was not willing to let him into the secret of what she intended to do, lest he should not come into that design, which she thought so good, and should look out for some other not likely to prove so successful.

Lothario then left her; and the next day Anselmo, under pretence of going to his friend's villa, went from home, but turned presently back to hide himself, which he might conveniently enough do, for Camilla and Leonela were out of the way on purpose. Anselmo being now hid, with all that palpitation of heart which may be imagined in one who expected to see with his own eyes the bowels of his honour ripped up, and was upon the point of losing that supreme bliss he thought himself possessed of in his beloved Camilla; she and Leonela, being well assured that Anselmo was behind the hangings, came together into the wardrobe; and Camilla had scarce set her foot in it, when, fetching a deep sigh, she said: Ah, dear Leonela, would it not be better before I put that in execution, which I would keep secret from you, let you should endeavour to prevent it, that you should take Anselmo's dagger, and plunge it into this infamous breast? But do it not; for it is not carnal satisfaction I should bear the punishment of another's fault. I will first know what the bold and wanton eyes of Lothario saw in me, that could give him the assurance to interrupt so wicked a design, as that he has discovered to me, in contempt of his friend and of my honour. Fly to the window, Leonela, and call him, for, doubtless, he is waiting in the street in hopes of putting

his wicked design in execution. But first my cruel, but honourable purpose shall be executed. Ah! dear madam, answered the cunning and well-instructed Leonela, what is it you intend to do with this dagger? Is it to take away your own life, or Lothario's? whichever of the two you do will redound to the ruin of your credit and fame. It is better you should dissemble your wrong than to let this wicked man now into the house while we are alone. Consider, madam, we are weak women, and he a man, and resolute; and, as he comes blinded and big with his wicked purpose, he may perhaps, before you can execute yours, do what would be worse for you than taking away your life. A mischief take my master Anselmo for giving this impudent fellow such an attendant in his house. But pray, madam, if you kill him, as I imagine you intend, what shall we do with him after he is dead? What, child? answered Camilla; why leave him here for Anselmo to bury him; for it is but just he should have the agreeable trouble of burying his own infamy. Call him without more ado; for all the time I lose in delaying to take due revenge for my wrong, methinks I offend against that loyalty I owe to my husband.

All this Anselmo listened to, and at every word Camilla spoke his sentiments changed. But when he understood that she intended to kill Lothario, he was loath to prevent it, by coming out and discovering himself; but was withheld by the strong desire he had to see what would be the end of so brave and virtuous a resolution; purposing, however, to come out in time enough to prevent mischief. And now Camilla was taken with a strong fainting fit; and throwing herself upon a bed that was there, Leonela began to weep bitterly, and to say: Ah, woe is me! that I should be so unhappy as to see die here, between my arms, the flower of the world's virtue, the crown of good women, the pattern of chastity; with other such expressions, that nobody, who had heard her, but would have taken her for the most compassionate and faithful damsel in the universe, and

her lady for another persecuted Penelope. Camilla soon recovered from her swoon, and, when she was come to herself, she said: Why do you not go, Leonela, and call the most faithful friend of all friends that the sun ever saw, or the night covered? Be quick, run, fly; let not the fire of my rage evaporate and be spent by delay, and the just vengeance I expect pass off in empty threatenings and curses. I am going to call him, said Leonela; but, dear madam, you must first give me that dagger, but, when I am gone, you should do a thing which might give those who love you cause to weep all their lives long. Go, dear Leonela, and fear not, said Camilla; I will not do it, for though I am resolute, and, in your opinion sincere in defending my honour, I shall not be so to the degree that Lucretia was, of whom it is said that she killed herself without having committed any fault, and without first killing him who was the cause of her misfortune. Yea, I will die, if die I must; but it shall be after I have satiated my revenge on him who is the occasion of my being now here to bewail his insolence, which proceeded from no fault of mine.

Leonela wanted a great deal of entreaty before she would go and call Lothario; but at last she went, and, while she was away, Camilla, as if she was talking to herself, said: Good God! would it not have been more advisable to have dunned Lothario, as I have done many other times, than to give him room, as I have now done, to think me dishonest and naught, though it be only for the short time I defer the undeceiving him? without doubt it would have been better; but I shall not be revenged, nor my husband's honour satisfied, if he gets off so clean, and so smoothly, from an attempt to which his wicked thoughts have led him. No! let the traitor pay with his life for what he enterprises with so lascivious a desire. Let the world know (if perchance it comes to know it) that Camilla not only preserved her loyalty to her husband, but revenged him on the person who dared

to wrong him. But, after all, it would perhaps be better to give an account of the whole matter to Anselmo; but I have already hinted it to him in the letter I wrote him into the country; and I fancy his neglecting to remedy the mischief I pointed out to him, must be owing to pure good nature, and a confidence in Lothario which would not let him believe that the least thought, to the prejudice of his honour, could be lodged in the breast of so faithful a friend: nor did I myself believe it, for many days, nor should ever have given credit to it, if his weakness had not risen so high, and his avowed presents, large promises, and continual tears, put it past all dispute. But why do I talk thus? does a brave resolution stand in need of counsel? No, certainly. Traitor, avenged! come vengeance! let the false one come, let him enter, let him die, and then befall what will. Unspotted I entered into the power of him whom heaven allotted me for my husband, and unspotted I will leave him, though belied all over in my own chaste blood and the impure gore of the falsest friend that friendship ever saw. And saying this she walked up and down the room with the drawn dagger in her hand, taking such irregular and huge strides, and with such gestures, that one would have thought her beside herself, and have taken her, not for a soft and delicate woman, but for some desperate ruffian.

Anselmo observed all from behind the arras, where he had hid himself, and was amazed at all, and already thought what he had seen and heard sufficient to balance still greater suspicions, and began to wish that Lothario might not come, for fear of some sudden disaster. And being now upon the point of discovering himself, and coming out to embrace and undeceive his wife, he was prevented by seeing Leonela return with Lothario by the hand; and, as soon as Camilla saw him, she drew with the dagger a long line between her and him, and said: Take notice, Lothario, of what I say to you: if you shall dare to pass this line you see here, or but come up to it, the moment

I see you attempt it, I will pierce my breast with this dagger I hold in my hand: but before you answer me a word to this, hear a few more I have to say to you, and then answer me as you please. In the first place, Lothario, I desire you to tell me, whether you know Anselmo my husband, and in what estimation you hold him? and, in the next place, I would be informed whether you know me? Answer me to this, and be under no concern, nor study for an answer; for they are no difficult questions I ask you. Lothario was not so ignorant, but that from the instant Camilla bid him hide Anselmo, he guessed what she intended to do, and accordingly humoured her design so well, that they were able, between them, to make the counterfeit pass for something more than truth; and therefore he answered Camilla in this manner: I did not imagine, fair Camilla, that you called me to answer to things so wide of the purpose for which I came hither. If you do it to delay me the promised favour why did you not adjourn it to a still further day for the nearer the prospect of possession is, the more eager we are to enjoy the desired good. But, the you may not say I do not answer to your questions I reply, that I know your husband Anselmo, and that we have known each other from our tender years: of our friendship I will say nothing, that I may not be a witness against myself of the wrong which love, that powerful excuse for greater faults, has made me do him. You too I know, and prize you as highly as he does: for, were it not so, I should not for his excellence, have acted so contrary to my duty as a gentleman, and so much against the holy laws of true friendship, which I have now broken and violated, through the tyranny of that enemy, love. If you acknowledge so much, replied Camilla, mortal enemy of all that justly deserves to be loved, with what face dare you appear before her, whom you know to be the mirror in which Anselmo looks, and [in] which you might have seen upon what slight grounds you injure?

! But ah! unhappy me! I now begin to find

what it was that made you forget yourself: it was, doubtless, some indiscretion of mine: for I will not call it immodesty, since it proceeded not from design, but from some one of those inadvertencies which women frequently fall into whenever, when there is nobody present before whom they think they need be upon the reserve. But tell me, O traitor, when did I ever answer your addresses with any word or sign, that could give you the least shadow of hope, that you should ever accomplish your infamous desire? when were not your amorous expressions repulsed and rebuked with rigour and severity? when were your many promises and greater presents believed or accepted? but knowing that no one can persevere long in an affair of love, unless it be kept alive by some hope, I take upon myself the blame of your impertinence; since without doubt, some inadvertency of mine has nourished your hope so long, and therefore I will chastise, and inflict that punishment on myself, which your offence deserves. And, to convince you, that, being so severe to myself, I could not possibly be otherwise to you, I had a mind you should come hither to be a witness to the sacrifice I intend to make to the offended honour of my worthy husband, injured by you with the greatest deliberation imaginable, and by me too through my carelessness in not detecting the villainy (if I gave you any) of countenancing and authorizing your wicked intentions. I say again that the suspicion I have, that some inadvertency of mine has occasioned such brentious thoughts in you, is what disturbs me the most, and what I most desire to punish with my own hands: for should some other executioner do it, my crime, perhaps, would be more public. Yes, I will die, but I will die killing, and carry with me one, who shall entirely satisfy the thirst of that revenge I expect, and partly enjoy already, as I shall have before my eyes, to what place soever I go, the vengeance of impartial justice strictly executed on him who has reduced me to this desperate condition.

At these words, she flew upon Lothario, with the drawn dagger, so swiftly, and with such incredible violence, and with such seeming earnestness to stab him to the heart, that he was almost in doubt himself whether those efforts were feigned or real; and he was forced to make use of all his dexterity and strength to prevent his being wounded by Camilla, who played the counterfeit so to the life, that, to give this strange imposture a colour of truth she resolved to stain it with her own blood. For, perceiving, or pretending, that she could not wound Lothario, she said: *Since fortune denies a complete satisfaction to my just desires, it shall not, however, be in its power to defeat that satisfaction entirely: and so struggling to free her dagger-hand, held by Lothario, she got loose, and directing the point to a part where it might give but a slight wound, she stabbed herself above the breast, near the left shoulder, and presently fell to the ground as in a swoon. Leonela and Lothario stood in suspense, and astonished at this accident, and were in doubt what to think of it, especially when they saw Camilla lying on the floor, and bathed in her own blood. Lothario ran hastily, frightened, and breathless to draw out the dagger; but perceiving the slightness of the wound, the fear he had been in vanished, and he admired afresh the sagacity, prudence, and great ingenuity of the fair Camilla. And now, to act his part, he began to make a long and sorrowful lamentation over the body of Camilla, as if she were dead, imprecating heavy curses, not only on himself, but on him who had been the cause of bringing him to that pass, and, knowing that his friend Anselmo overheard him, he said such things, that whoever had heard them would have pitied him more than they would have done Camilla herself, though they had judged her to be really dead. Leonela took her in her arms, and laid her on the bed, beseeching Lothario to procure somebody to dress Camilla's wound secretly. She also desired his advice and opinion what they should say to Anselmo about it, if he should chance*

to come home before it was healed. He answered, that they might say what they pleased; that he was not in a condition of giving any advice worth following: he bid her endeavour to staunch the blood; and, as for himself, he would go where he should never be seen more. And so, with a show of much sorrow and concern, he left the house, and when he found himself alone, and in a place where nobody saw him, he ceased not to cross himself in admiration at the cunning of Camilla, and the equitable behaviour of Leonela. He considered what a thorough assurance Anselmo must have of his wife's being a second Portia, and wanted to be with him, that they might rejoice together at the imposture and the truth, the most artfully disguised that can be imagined.

Leonela, as she was bidden, staunched her mistress's blood, which was just as much as might serve to colour her stratagem; and washing the wound with a little wine, she bound it up the best she could, saying such things while she was dressing it, as were alone sufficient to make Anselmo believe that he had in Camilla an image of chastity. To the words Leonela said, Camilla added others, calling herself coward and poor spirited, in that she wanted the resolution, at a time when she stood most in need, to deprive herself of that life she so much abhorred. She asked her maid's advice whether she should give an account of what had happened to her beloved spouse, or no. Leonela persuaded her to say nothing about it, since it would lay him under a necessity of revenging himself on Lothario, which he could not do without great danger to himself; and a good woman was obliged to avoid all occasions of involving her husband in a quarrel, and should rather prevent all such as much as she possibly could. Camilla replied she approved of her opinion, and would follow it; but that by all means they must contrive what to say to Anselmo about the wound which he must needs see. To which Leonela answered, that, for her part, she knew not how to tell a lie, though but in jest. Then, pray

hide it from him: and as he might depend upon it there was nothing to be feared, he desired that thenceforward he would rejoice and be merry with him, since, through his diligence, and by his means, he found himself raised to the highest pitch of happiness he could wish to arrive at; and, for himself, he said, he would make it his pastime and amusement to write verses in praise of Camilla, to perpetuate her memory to all future ages. Lothario applauded his good resolution, and said, that he too would lend a helping hand towards raising so illustrious an edifice.

Anselmo now remained the man of (all) the world the most agreeably deceived. He led home by the hand the instrument, as he thought, of his glory, but in reality the ruin of his fame. Camilla received Lothario with a countenance seemingly shy, but with inward gladness of heart. This imposture lasted some time, until, a few months after, fortune turned her wheel, and the iniquity, until then so artfully concealed, came to light, and his impertinent curiosity cost poor Anselmo his life.

CHAPTER XXXV

The conclusion of the novel of the Curious Impertinent, with the dreadful battle between Don Quixote and certain wine-skins.

THERE remained but little more of the novel to be read, when from the room, where Don Quixote lay, Sancho Panza came running out all in a fright, crying aloud: Run, sire, quickly, and succour my master, who is over head and ears in the toughest and closest battle my eyes have ever beheld. As God shall save me, he has given the giant, that enemy of the princess Micomicona, such a stroke, that he has cut off his head close to his shoulders, as if it had been a turnip. What say you, brother? quoth the priest (leaving off

reading the remainder of the novel), are you in your senses, Sancho? How the devil can this be, seeing the giant is two thousand leagues off? At that instant they heard a great noise in the room, and Don Quixote calling aloud: Stay, cowardly thief, robber, rogue; for here I have you, and your scimitar shall avail you nothing. And it seemed as if he gave several backs and slashes against the walls. Do not stand listening, quoth Sancho; but go in and part the fray, or aid my master: though by this time there will be no occasion; for doubtless the giant is already dead, and giving an account to God of his past wicked life; for I saw the blood run about the floor, and the head cut off, and fallen on one side, and as big as a great wine-skin. I will be hanged, quoth the innkeeper, at this juncture, if Don Quixote, or Don Devil, has not given a gash to some of the wine-skins that stand at his bed's-head, and the wine he has let out must be what this honest fellow takes for blood; and, so saying, he went into the room, and the whole company after him; and they found Don Quixote in the strangest situation in the world. He was in his shirt, which was not quite long enough before to cover his thighs, and was six inches shorter behind; his legs were very long and lean, full of hair, and not over clean; he had on his head a little red cap, somewhat greasy, which belonged to the innkeeper. About his left arm he had twisted the bed blanket (to which Sancho owed a grudge, and he very well knew why), and in his right hand he held his drawn sword, with which he was laying about him on all sides, and uttering words as if he had really been fighting with some giant; and the best of it was, his eyes were shut; for he was asleep, and dreaming that he was engaged in battle with the giant; for his imagination was so taken up with the adventure he had undertaken, that it made him dream he was already arrived at the kingdom of Marabron, and already engaged in fight with his enemy; and, fancying he was slaying the giant down, he had given the skin as many cuts

that the whole room was adrift with wine. The innkeeper, perceiving it, fell into such a rage, that he set upon Don Quixote, and, with his clenched fists, began to give him so many cuffs, that if Cardenio and the priest had not taken him off, he would have put an end to the war of the giant; and yet notwithstanding all this, the poor gentleman did not awake until the barber brought a large bucket of cold water from the well, and doused it all over his body at a dash; whereat Don Quixote awoke, but not so thoroughly as to be sensible of the pickle he was in. Dorothea, perceiving how scantily and stupidly he was arrayed, would not go in to see the fight between her champion and her adversary. Sancho was searching all about the floor for the head of the giant; and not finding it, he said: Well, I see plainly, that everything about this house is enchantment: for, the time before, in this very same place where I now am, I had several punches and thumps given me, without knowing from whence they came, or seeing anybody; and now the head is vanished, which I saw cut off with my own eyes, and the blood spouting from the body like any fountain. What blood, and what fountain? thou enemy to God and his saints! said the innkeeper: dost thou not see, thief, that the blood and the fountain are nothing but these skins pierced and ripped open, and the red wine floating about the room? I wish I may see his soul floating in hell that pierced them! I know nothing, said Sancho; only that I should be so unfortunate, that, for want of finding this head, my carcase will melt away like salt in water. Now Sancho awoke, was madder than his master asleep; so devoted was he with the promises he had made him. The innkeeper lost all patience to see the squire's ploys, and the knight's wicked handwork; and he swore they should not escape, as they did the time before, without paying; and that, this bout, the privileges of his chivalry should not exempt him from discharging both reckonings, even to the patches of the torn skins.

The priest held Don Quixote by the hands; who, imagining he had finished the adventure, and that he was in the presence of the princess Micomicona, fell on his knees before the priest, and said: High and renowned lady, well may your grandeur from this day forward live more secure, now that this ill-born creature can do you no hurt; and I also, from this day forward, am freed from the promise I gave you, since by the assistance of the most high God, and through the favour of her by whom I live and breathe, I have so happily accomplished it. Did not I tell you so? quoth Sancho, hearing this; so that I was not drunk; see, if my master has not already put the giant in pickle: here are the bulls¹; my earldom is safe. Who could forbear laughing at the absurdities of both master and man? they all laughed except the inn-keeper, who cursed himself to the devil. But at length, the barber, Cardenio, and the priest, with much ado, threw Don Quixote on the bed, who fell fast asleep, with signs of very great fatigue. They left him to sleep on, and went out to the inn door, to comfort Sancho for not finding the giant's head, though they had most to do to pacify the innkeeper, who was out of his wits for the murder of his wine-skins. The hostess muttered, and said: In an unlucky minute, and in an evil hour, came this knight-errant into my house: O that my eyes had never seen him! he has been a dear guest to me. The last time he went away with a night's reckoning, for supper, bed, straw, and barley, for himself, and for his squire, for a horse and an ass, telling me, forsooth, that he was a knight adventurer (and adventures befall him, and all the adventurers in the world!) and that therefore he was not obliged to pay anything; for so it was written in the registers of knight-errantry; and now again, on his account too, comes this other gentleman, and carries off my tail, and returns it me with two-

¹ A proverb, probably originating with some related spectator, seriously doubtful as to the arrival of the bulls in time for the bull-fight.

pennyworth of damage, all the hair off, so that it can serve no more for my husband's purpose. And, after all, to rip open my skins, and let out my wine ' would I could see his blood so let out. But let him not think to escape, for by the bones of my father, and the soul of my mother, they shall pay me down upon the nail every farthing, or may I never be called by my own name, nor be my own father's daughter. The hostess said all this and more, in great wrath; and honest Maritornes, her maid, seconded her. The daughter held her peace, but now and then smiled. The priest quieted all, promising to make them the best reparation he could for their loss, as well in the wine-skins as the wine, and especially for the damage done to the tail, which they valued so much. Dorothea comforted Sancho Panza, telling him, that whenever it should really appear, that his master had cut off the giant's head, she promised when she was peacefully seated on her throne, to bestow on him the best random in her dominions. Herewith Sancho was comforted, and assured the princess, she might depend upon it, that he had seen the giant's head, by the same token that it had a beard which reached down to the girdle; and if it was not to be found, it was because everything passed in that house by way of enchantment, as he had experienced the last time he lodged there. Dorothea said she believed so, and bid him be in no pain; for all would be well, and succeed to his heart's desire. All being now pacified, the priest had a mind to read the remainder of the novel, for he saw it wanted but little. Cardenio, Dorothea, and the rest entreated him so to do; and he, willing to please all the company, and himself among the rest, went on with the story as follows:

Now so it was, that Anselmo, through the satisfaction he took in the supposed virtue of Camilla, lived with all the content and security in the world; and Camilla purposely looked shy on Lothario, that Anselmo might think she rather hated than loved him:

he should hear anything against Camilla, of whose virtue he was so satisfied and secure; and so leaving the room, he locked Leonela in, telling her she should not stir from thence, until she had told him what she had to say to him. He went immediately to Camilla, and related to her all that had passed with her waiting-woman, and the promise she had given him to acquaint him with things of the utmost importance. It is needless to say, whether Camilla was disturbed or not: so great was the consternation she was in, that, verily believing (as indeed it was very likely) that Leonela would tell Anselmo all she knew of her disloyalty, she had not the courage to wait until she saw whether her suspicion was well or ill grounded: and that very night, when she found Anselmo was asleep, taking with her all her best jewels, and some money, without being perceived by anybody, she left her house, and went to Lothario's, to whom she recounted what had passed, desiring him to conduct her to some place of safety, or to go off with her, where they might live secure from Anselmo. Camilla put Lothario into such confusion, that he knew not how to answer her a word, much less to resolve what was to be done. At length, he betthought himself of carrying Camilla to a convent, the prioress of which was his sister. Camilla consented, and Lothario conveyed her thither with all the haste the case required, and left her in the monastery; and he too presently left the city, without acquainting anybody with his absence.

When it was daybreak, Anselmo, without missing Camilla from his side (so impatient was he to know what Leonela had to tell him), got up, and went to the chamber where he had left her locked in. He opened the door, and went in, but found no Leonela there: he only found the sheets tied to the window, an evident sign that by them she had slid down, and was gone off. He presently returned, full of concern, to acquaint Camilla with it: and, not finding her in bed, nor anywhere in the house, he stood astonished. He inquired of the servants for her, but no one could

gave him any tidings. It accidentally happened, as he was searching for Camilla, that he found her cabinet open, and most of her jewels gone; and this gave him the first suspicion of his disaster, and that Leonela was not the cause of his misfortune. And so, just as he then was but half-dressed, he went sad and pensive, to give an account of his disaster to his friend Lothario; but not finding him, and his servants telling him that their master went away that night, and took all the money he had with him, he was ready to run mad. And, to complete all, when he came back to his house, he found not one of all his servants, man nor maid, but the house left alone and deserted. He knew not what to think, say, or do, and, by little and little, his wits began to fail him. He considered, and saw himself, in an instant, deprived of wife, friend, and servants; abandoned as he thought by the heaven that covered him, but, above all, robbed of his honour, since, in missing Camilla, he saw his own ruin. After some thought, he resolved to go to his friend's country house, where he had been, when he gave the opportunity for plotting this unhappy business. He locked the doors of his house, got on horseback, and set forward with great oppression of spirits: and scarcely had he gone half way, when, overwhelmed by his melancholy thoughts, he was forced to alight, and tie his horse to a tree, at the foot whereof he dropped down, breathing out bitter and mournful sighs, and stayed there until almost night; about which time, he saw a man coming on horseback from the city; and, having saluted him, he inquired what news there was in Florence? The stranger, replied the citizen, that has been heard these many days; for it is publicly talked, that last night Lothario, that great friend of Anselmo the Rich, who lived at St. John's, carried off Camilla, wife to Anselmo, and that he is also missing. All this was told by a maidservant of Camilla's, whom the governor caught in the night letting herself down by a sheet from a window of Anselmo's house. In short, I do

not know the particulars; all I know is, that the whole town is in astonishment at this accident: for no one could have expected any such thing, considering the great and entire friendship between them, which, it is said, was so remarkable, that they were styled the Two Friends. Pray, is it known, said Anselmo, which way Lothario and Camilla have taken? It is not, replied the citizen, though the governor has ordered diligent search to be made after them. God be with you, said Anselmo. And with you also, said the citizen, and went his way.

This dismal news reduced Anselmo almost to the losing, not only of his wife, but his life. He got up as well as he could, and arrived at his friend's house, who had not yet heard of his misfortune; but seeing him come in pale, spiritless, and faint, he concluded he was oppressed by some heavy affliction. Anselmo begged him to lead him immediately to a chamber, and to let him have pen, ink, and paper. They did so, and left him alone on the bed, locking the door, as he desired. And now, finding himself alone, he so overcharged his imagination with his misfortunes, that he plainly perceived he was drawing near his end, and therefore resolved to leave behind him some account of the cause of his strange death: and beginning to write, before he had set down all he had intended, his breath failed him, and he yielded up his life into the hands of that sorrow, which was increased by his impetuous sickness. The master of the house, finding it grew late, and that Anselmo did not call, determined to go in to him, to know whether his indisposition increased, and found him with his face downwards, half of his body in bed, and half leaning on the table, with the paper he had written open, and his hand still holding the pen. His friend having first called to him, went and took him by the hand; and finding he did not answer him, and that he was cold, he perceived that he was dead. He was very much surprised and troubled, and called the family to be witnesses of the sad mishap that had

befallen Anselmo: afterwards he read the paper, which he knew to be written with Anselmo's own hand, wherein were these words:

ANSELMO'S PAPER.

'A foolish and impertinent desire has deprived me of life. If the news of my death reaches Camilla's ears, let her know I forgive her; for she was not obliged to do miracles, nor was I under a necessity of desiring she should: and, since I was the contriver of my own dishonour, there is no reason why——'

Thus far Anselmo wrote; by which it appeared, that, at this point, without being able to finish the sentence, he gave up the ghost. The next day his friend sent his relations an account of his death; who had already heard of his misfortune, and of Camilla's retiring to the convent, where she was almost in a condition of bearing her husband company in that inevitable journey; not through the news of his death, but of her lover absenting himself. It is said, that, though she was now a widow, she would neither quit the convent, nor take the veil, until, not many days after, news being come of Lothario's being killed in a battle, fought about that time between *Blasius de Lautrec*, and the Great Captain Gonzalo Hernandez of Cordova, in the kingdom of Naples¹, whither the too-late repenting friend had made his retreat, she then took the religious habit, and soon after gave up her life into the rigorous hands of grief and melancholy. This was the end of them all, an end sprung from an extravagant rashness at the beginning.

I like this novel very well, said the priest; but I cannot persuade myself it is a true story: and if it be a fiction, the author has erred against probability: for it cannot be imagined, there can be any husband so

¹ A chronological slip: the Great Captain left Italy with Ferdinand in the summer of 1507, and was never employed again: Lautrec commanded the French army in Italy twenty years later.

senseless, as to desire to make so dangerous an experiment, as Anselmo did: had this case been supposed between a gallant and his mistress, it might pass; but, between husband and wife, there is something impossible in it - however, I am not displeased with the manner of telling it.

CHAPTER XXXVI

Which treats of other uncommon accidents, that happened at the inn.

WHILE these things passed, the host, who stood at the inn-door, said: Here comes a goodly company of guests: if they stop here, we will sing *Gaudeamus*. What folks are they? said Cardenio. Four men, answered the host, on horseback & *is gineis*¹, with lances and targets, and black masks on their faces; and with them a woman on a side-saddle, dressed in white, and her face likewise covered: and two lads besides on foot. Are they near at hand? demanded the priest. So near, replied the innkeeper, that they are already at the door. Dorothea, hearing this, veiled her face: and Cardenio went into Don Quixote's chamber; and scarcely had they done so, when the persons the host mentioned entered the yard; and the four horsemen, who, by their appearance, seemed to be persons of distinction, having alighted, went to help down the lady, who came on the side-saddle: and one of them, taking her in his arms, set her down in a chair, which stood at the door of the room, into which Cardenio had withdrawn. In all this time, neither she, nor they, had taken off their masks, or spoken one word: only the lady, at sitting down in the chair, fetched a deep sigh, and let fall her arms, like one sick, and ready to faint away. The

¹ Arab fashion, with high castle and short stirrups.

servants on foot took the horses to the stable. The priest, seeing all this, and desirous to know who they were in that odd guise, and that kept such silence, went where the lads were, and inquired of one of them; who answered him: In truth, señor, I cannot inform you who these gentlefolks are; I can only tell you, they must be people of considerable quality, especially he who took the lady down in his arms: I say this, because all the rest pay him such respect, and do nothing but what he orders and directs. And the lady, pray, who is she? demanded the priest. Neither can I tell that, replied the lackey: for I have not once seen her face during the whole journey; I have indeed often heard her sigh, and utter such groans, that one would think any one of them enough to break her heart: and it is no wonder we know no more than what we have told you; for it is not above two days since my comrade and I came to serve them; for, having met us upon the road, they asked and persuaded us to go with them as far as Andalusia, promising to pay us very well. And have you heard any of them called by their names? asked the priest. No, indeed, answered the lad; for they all travel with so much silence that you would wonder; and you hear nothing among them but the sighs and sobs of the poor lady, which move us to pity her; and whithersoever it is she is going, we believe it must be against her will; and, by what we can gather from her habit, she must be a nun, or going to be one, which seems most probable; and, perhaps, because the being one does not proceed from her choice, she goes thus heavily. Very likely, quoth the priest; and, leaving them, he returned to the room where he had left Dorothea: who, hearing the lady in the mask sigh, moved by a natural compassion, went to her, and said: What is the matter, dear madam? If it be anything that we women can assist you in, speak; for, on my part, I am ready to serve you with great goodwill. To all this the affected lady returned no answer; and, though Dorothea urged her still more,

she persisted in her silence, until the cavalier in the mask, who the servant said was superior to the rest, came up, and said to Dorothea: Trouble not yourself, madam, to offer anything to this woman; for it is her way not to be thankful for any service done her; nor endeavour to get an answer from her, unless you would hear some lie from her mouth. No, said she, who had hitherto held her peace; on the contrary, it is for being so sincere, and so averse from lying and deceit, that I am now reduced to such hard fortune: and of this you may be a witness yourself, since it is my truth alone which makes you act so false and treacherous a part.

Cardenio heard these words plainly and distinctly, being very near to her who spoke them; for Don Quixote's chamber-door only was between, and as soon as he heard them, he cried out aloud: Good God! what is this I hear? what voice is this, which has reached my ears? The lady, all in surprise, turned her head at these exclamations; and, not seeing who uttered them, she got up, and was going into the room; which the cavalier perceiving, he stopped her, and would not suffer her to stir a step. With this perturbation, and her sudden rising, her mask fell off, and she discovered a beauty incomparable, and a countenance miraculous, though pale and full of horror: for she rolled her eyes round as far as she could see, examining every place with so much eagerness, that she seemed distracted; at which Dorothea, and the rest, without knowing why she did so, were moved to great compassion. The cavalier held her fast by the shoulders; and, his hands being thus employed, he could not keep on his mask, which was falling off, as indeed at last it did; and Dorothea, who had clasped the lady in her arms, lifting up her eyes, discovered that the person who also held her, was her husband, Don Fernando: and scarcely had she perceived it was he, when, fetching from the bottom of her heart a deep and dismal Oh! she fell backwards in a swoon; and, had not the barbers,

who stood close by, caught her in his arms, she would have fallen to the ground. The priest ran immediately and took off her veil, to throw water in her face; and no sooner had he uncovered it, but Don Fernando (for it was he who held the other in his arms) knew her, and stood like one dead at the sight of her: never theless, he did not let go Lucinda, who was the lady that was struggling so hard to get from him; for she knew Cardenio's voice in his exclamations, and he knew hers. Cardenio heard also the groan, which Dorothea gave when she fainted away; and believing it came from his Lucinda, he ran out of the room in a fright, and the first he saw was Don Fernando holding Lucinda close in his arms. Don Fernando presently knew Cardenio; and all three, Lucinda, Cardenio, and Dorothea, were struck dumb, hardly knowing what had happened to them. They all stood silent, and gazing on one another, Dorothea on Don Fernando, Don Fernando on Cardenio, Cardenio on Lucinda, and Lucinda on Cardenio. But the first who broke silence was Lucinda, who addressed herself to Don Fernando in this manner: Suffer me, Señor Don Fernando, as you are a gentleman, since you will not do it upon any other account, suffer me to clime to that wall, of which I am the ivy; to that prop, from which neither your importunities, your threats, your promises, nor your presents, were able to separate me. Observe how heaven, by unusual, and to us hidden ways, has brought me into the presence of my true husband; and well you know, by a thousand dear-bought experiences, that death alone can efface him out of my memory. Then (since all further attempts are vain) let this open declaration convert your love into rage, your goodwill into despite, and thereby put an end to my life; for if I lose it in the presence of my dear husband, I shall reckon it well disposed of; and, perhaps, my death may convince him of the fidelity I have preserved for him to my last moment.

By this time Dorothea was come to herself, and had listened to all that Lucinda said, whereby she

Discovered who she was: but, seeing that Don Fernando did not yet let her go from between his arms, nor make any answer to what she said, she got up as well as she could, and went and knelt down at his feet, and, pouring forth an abundance of lovely and piteous tears, she began to say thus:—

If, my dear lord, the rays of that sun you hold now schpced between your arms had not dazzled and obscured your eyes, you must have seen, that she who lies prostrate at your feet is the unhappy (so long as you are pleased to have it so) and unfortunate Dorothea. I am that humble country girl, whom you, through goodness or love, did deign to raise to the honour of calling herself yours. I am she, who, confined within the bounds of modesty, lived a contented life, untill, to the voice of your importunities, and seemingly sincere and real passion, she opened the gates of her reserve, and delivered up to you the keys of her liberty: a gift by you so ill requited, as appears by my being driven into the circumstances in which you find me, and forced to see you in the posture you are in now. Notwithstanding all this, I would not have you imagine that I am brought hither by any dishonest motives, but only by those of grief and concern, to see myself neglected and forsaken by you. You would have me be yours, and would have it in such a manner, that though now you would not have it be so, it is not possible you should cease to be mine. Consider, my lord, that the matchless affection I have for you may balance the beauty and nobility of her, for whom I am abandoned. You cannot be the fair Lucinda's, because you are mine, nor can she be yours, because she is Cardenio's. And it is easier, if you take it right, to reduce your inclination to love her, who adores you, than to bring her to love, who abhors you. You importuned my indifference; you solicited my integrity; you were not ignorant of my condition; you know very well in what manner I gave myself up entirely to your will; you have no room to pretend any deceit: and if this

be so, as it really is, and if you are as much a Christian as a gentleman, why do you, by so many evasions delay making me as happy at last as you did at first? And if you will not acknowledge me for what I am, your true and lawful wife, at least admit me for your slave: for, so I be under your power, I shall account myself happy and very fortunate. Do not, by forsaking and abandoning me, give the world occasion to censure and disgrace me. Do not so sorely afflict my aged parents, whose constant and faithful services, as good vassals to yours, do not deserve it. And if you fancy your blood is debased by mixing it with mine, consider, there is little or no nobility in the world but what has run in the same channel, and that what is derived from women is not essential in illustrious descents: besides, true nobility consists in virtues; and if you forfeit that by denying me what is so justly my due, I shall then remain with greater advantages of nobility than you. In short, sir, I shall only add, that, whether you will or no, I am your wife: witness your words, which, if you value yourself on that account, on which you undervalue me, ought not to be false: witness your handwriting; and witness heaven, which you invoked to bear testimony to what you promised me. And though all this should fail, your conscience will not fail to whisper [to] you in the midst of your joys, justifying this truth I have told you, and disturbing your greatest pleasures and satisfactions.

Three and other reasons did the afflicted Dorothea urge so feelingly, and with so many tears, that all who accompanied Don Fernando, and all who were present besides, sympathized with her. Don Fernando listened to her without answering a word, until she had put an end to what she had to say, and a beginning to so many sighs and sobe, that it must have been a heart of brass with the signs of so much sorrow could not soften. Lucinda gazed at her with no less pity for her affliction than admiration at her wit and beauty; and, though she had a mind to go in

her, and endeavour to comfort her, she was prevented by Don Fernando's still holding her fast in his arms, who, full of confusion and astonishment, after he had attentively beheld Dorothea for a good while, opened his arms, and, leaving Lucinda free, said. You have conquered, fair Dorothea, you have conquered; for there is no withstanding so many united truths.

Lucinda was so faint, when Don Fernando let her go, that she was just falling to the ground. But Cardenio, who was near her, and had placed himself behind Don Fernando, that he might not know him, now laying aside all fear, and at all adventures, ran to support Lucinda; and, catching her between his arms, he said: If it please pitying heaven, that now at last you should have some rest, my dear, faithful, and constant mistress, I believe you can find it nowhere more secure than in these arms, which now receive you, and did receive you heretofore, when fortune was pleased to allow me to call you mine. At these expressions Lucinda fixed her eyes on Cardenio, and having begun first to know him by his voice, and being now assured by sight that it was him, almost broke herself, and without any regard to the forms of decency, she threw her arms about his neck, and joining her face to his, she said to him. You, my dear Cardenio, you are the true owner of this your slave, though fortune were yet more adverse, and though my life, which depends upon yours, were threatened yet more than it is.

A strange sight this was to Don Fernando, and all the bystanders, who were astonished at so unexpected an event. Dorothea fancied that Don Fernando changed colour, and looked as if he had a mind to revenge himself on Cardenio, for she saw him put his hand toward his sword, and no sooner did she perceive it, but she ran immediately, and embracing his knees, and kissing them, she held him so fast that he could not stir; and, her tears striking down without intermission, she said to him: What is it you

sword, they would account their deaths most happy : and that, in a case which could not be remedied, the highest wisdom would be, by losing and overcoming himself, to show a greatness of mind, in suffering that couple, by his mere goodwill, to enjoy that happiness which heaven had already granted them : he desired him also to turn his eye on the beauty of Dorothea, and see how few, if any could equal, much less exceed her : and that to her beauty he would add her humility, and the extreme love she had for him ; but especially that he would remember, that, if he valued himself on being a gentleman, and a Christian, he could do no less than perform the promise he had given her, and that, in so doing, he would please God, and do what was right in the eyes of all wise men, who know and understand, that it is the prerogative of beauty, though in a mean subject, if it be accompanied with modesty, to be able to raise and equal itself to any height, without any disparagement to him who raises and equals it to himself, and that in complying with the strong dictates of appetite, there is nothing blameworthy, provided there be no sin in the action. In short, to these they all added such and so many powerful arguments, that the generous heart of Don Fernando, being nourished with noble blood, was softened, and suffered itself to be overcome by that truth, which, if he had had a mind, he could not have resisted. and the proof he gave of surrendering himself, and submitting to what was proposed, was, to stoop down, and embrace Dorothea, saying to her, Rise, dear madam ; for it is not fit she should kneel at my feet, who is mistress of my soul : and if hitherto I have given no proof of what I say, perhaps it has been so ordered by heaven, that by finding in you the constancy of your affection to me, I may know how to esteem you as you deserve. What I beg of you is, not to reproach me with my past unkind behaviour and great neglect of you : for the very same cause and motive that induced me to take you for mine influenced me to endeavour not to be

your: and, to show you the truth of what I say, turn and behold the eyes of the now satisfied Lucinda, and in them you will see an excuse for all my errors: and since she has found and attained to what she desired, and I have found in you all I want, let her live secure and contented many happy years with her Cardenio; and I will beseech heaven that I may do the like with my dear Dorothea. And saying thus, he embraced her again, and joined his face to hers, with such tenderness of passion, that he had much ado to prevent his tears from giving undoubted signs of his love and repentance. It was not so with Lucinda and Cardenio, and almost all the rest of the company present; for they began to shed so many tears, some for joy on their own account, and some on the account of others, that one would have thought some heavy and dismal disaster had befallen them all. Even Sancho Panza wept, though he owned afterwards, that, for his part, he wept only to see that Dorothea was not, as he imagined, the queen Micomicona, from whom he expected so many favours.

The joint wonder and weeping lasted for some time; and then Cardenio and Lucinda went and knelt before Don Fernando, thanking him for the favour he had done them, in such terms of respect, that Don Fernando knew not what to answer; and so he raised them up, and embraced them with much courtesy and many demonstrations of affection. Then he desired Dorothea to tell him how she came to that place so far from home? she repeated in few and discreet words all she had before related to Cardenio; with which Don Fernando and his company were so pleased, that they wished the story had lasted much longer, such was the grace with which Dorothea recounted her misfortunes. And when she had made an end, Don Fernando related what had befallen him in the city, after his finding the paper in Lucinda's bosom, wherein she declared that she was wife to Cardenio, and could not be his. He said that he had a mind to have killed her, and should have done it, if

her parents had not hindered him ; upon which he left the house, enraged and ashamed, with a resolution of revenging himself at a more convenient time ; that, the following day, he heard that Lucinda was coming from her father's house, without anybody's knowing whither she was gone ; in fine, that, at the end of some months, he came to know that she was in a convent, purposing to remain there all her days, unless she could spend them with Cardenio ; and that, as soon as he knew it, choosing those three gentlemen for his companions, he went to the place where she was, but did not speak to her, fearing, if she knew he was there, the monastery would be better guarded ; and so waiting for a day, when the porter's lodge was open, he left two to secure the door, and he with the other entered into the convent in search of Lucinda, whom they found in the cloisters talking to a nun ; and snatching her away, without giving her time for anything, they came with her to a place where they accommodated themselves with whatever was needful for the carrying her off ; all which they could very easily do, the monastery being in the fields, a good way out of the town. He said, that, when Lucinda saw herself in his power, she swooned away, and that when she came to herself, she did nothing but weep, and sigh, without speaking one word : and that in this manner, accompanied with silence and tears, they arrived at that inn, which to him was arriving at heaven, where all earthly misfortunes have an end.

CHAPTER XXXVII

Merlin is continued the history of the famous Infanta Micomicona, with other pleasant adventures.

SANCHEO heard all this with no small grief of mind, seeing that the hope of his preferment was disappearing and vanishing into smoke; and that the fair princess Micomicona was turned into Dorothea, and the giant into Don Fernando, while his master lay in a sound sleep without troubling his head about what passed. Dorothea could not be sure whether the happiness she enjoyed was not a dream. Cardenio was in the same doubt; and Lotinda knew not what to think. Don Fernando gave thanks to heaven for the blessing bestowed on him, in bringing him out of that perplexed labyrinth, in which he was upon the brink of losing his honour and his soul. In short, all that were in the inn were pleased at the happy conclusion of such intricate and hopeless affairs. The priest, like a man of sense, placed everything in its true light, and congratulated every one upon their share of the good that had befallen them. But she who rejoiced most, and was most delighted, was the hostess, Cardenio, and the priest having promised to pay her with interest for all the damages sustained upon Don Quixote's account. Sancho, as has been said, was the only afflicted, unhappy, and sorrowful person; and so, with dismal looks, he went in to his master, who was then awake, to whom he said: Your worship may well sleep your fill, Señor Sorrowful Figure, without troubling yourself about killing any giant or restoring the princess to her kingdom: for all is done and over already. I verily believe it, answered Don Quixote, for I have had the most monstrous and dreadful battle with the giant, that ever I believe I shall have in the days of my life; and with one back-stroke I turned his head to the ground, and so great was the quantity of blood that gushed from it, that the streams

along the ground, as if it had been water. As if it had been red wine, your worship might better say, answered Sancho; for I would have you to know, if you do not know it already, that the dead giant is a pierced skin: and the blood, eighteen gallons of red wine contained in its belly: and the head cut off is—the whore that bore me, and the devil take all for me. What is it you say, fool? replied Don Quixote: are you in your senses? Pray, get up, sir, quoth Sancho, and you will see what a fine spot of work you have made, and what a reckoning we have to pay, and you will see the queen converted into a private lady called Dorothea, with other accidents, which, if you take them right, will astonish you. I shall wonder at nothing of all this, replied Don Quixote, for, if you remember well, the last time we were here, I told you, that all things in this place went by enchantment, and it would be no wonder if it should be so now. I should believe so too, answered Sancho, if my being tossed in the blanket had been a matter of this nature; but it was downright real and true: and I saw, that the innkeeper, who was here this very day, held a corner of the blanket, and casted me towards heaven with notable alacrity and vigour, and with as much laughter as force; and whenever it happens that we know persons, in my opinion, though simple and aunner, there is no enchantment at all, but much message and much mischief. Well, God will remedy it, quoth Don Quixote; give me my clothes, that I may go and see the accidents and transformations you talk of.

Sancho reached him his apparel; and, while he was dressing, the priest gave Don Fernando and the rest an account of Don Quixote's madness, and of the artifice they had made use of to get him from the Poor Rocks, to which he imagined himself banished, through his lady's dandam. He related also to them almost all the adventures which Sancho had recounted; at which they did not a little wonder and laugh, thinking, as everybody did, that it was the strangest kind of mad-

ness that ever entered into an extravagant imagination. The priest said further, that, since Madame Dorothea's good fortune would not permit her to go on with their design, it was necessary to invent and find out some other way of getting him home to his village. Cardenio offered to assist in carrying on the project, and proposed that Lucinda should personate Dorothea. No, said Don Fernando, it must not be so; for I will have Dorothea herself go on with her contrivance: and as it is not far from hence to this good gentleman's village, I shall be glad to contribute to his cure. It is not above two days' journey, said the priest. Though it were farther, said Don Fernando, I would undertake it with pleasure, to accomplish so good a work.

By this time Don Quixote sallied forth, completely armed with his whole furniture; Mambrino's helmet, though bruised and battered, on his head, his target braced on, and resting on his sapin or lance. The strange appearance he made greatly surprised Don Fernando and his company, especially when they perceived his tawny and withered lantern-jaws, his ill-matched armour, and the stiffness of his measured pace: and they stood silent to hear what he would say, when, with much gravity and solemnity, fixing his eyes on the fair Dorothea, he said: I am informed, fair lady, by this my squire, that your grandfather is annihilated, and your very being demolished, and that from a queen and great lady, which you were wont to be, you are metamorphosed into a private maiden. If thus has been done by order of the necromantic king your father, out of fear lest I should not afford you the necessary aid due and, I say, he neither knows, nor ever did know, one half of his trade, and that he is but little versed in histories of knight-errantry: for had he read and considered them as attentively, and as much at his leisure, as I have read and considered them, he would have found at every turn, how other knights, of a great deal less fame than myself, have achieved matters much more difficult, it being no such mighty business to kill a pitiful giant, be he never

so arrogant; for not many hours are past since I had a bout with one myself, and—I say no more, lest I should be thought to lie: but time, the revealer of all things, will tell it, when we least think of it. It was with a couple of wine skins, and not a giant, quoth the innkeeper: but Don Fernando commanded him to hold his peace, and in no wise to interrupt Don Quixote's discourse, who went on, saying: I say, in fine, high and disinterested lady, that, if for the cause aforesaid, your father has made this metamorphosis in your person, I would have you give no heed to it at all: for there is no danger upon earth, through which my sword shall not force a way, and, by bringing down the head of your enemy to the ground, place the crown of your kingdom upon your own in a few days.

Don Quixote said no more, but awaited the princess's answer; who, knowing Don Fernando's inclination, that she should carry on the deceit, until Don Quixote was brought home to his house, with much grace and gravity, answered him: Whoever told you, valourous Knight of the Sorrowful Figure, that I was changed and altered from what I was, did not tell you the truth: for I am the same to-day that I was yesterday: it is true indeed, some fortunate accidents, that have befallen me, to my heart's desire, have made some alteration in me for the better: yet, for all that, I do not cease to be what I was before, and to have the same thoughts I always had of employing the powers of your redoubted and invincible arm. So that, dear sir, if your accustomed bounty, restore to the father who begot me his honour, and esteem him to be a wise and prudent man, since by his skill he found out so easy and certain a way to remedy my misfortune: for I verily believe, had it not been for you, sir, I should never have lighted on the happiness I now enjoy: and to this I speak the very truth, as most of these gentlemen here present can testify. What remains is, that to-morrow morning we set forward on our journey; for to-day we could not go far, and for the rest of the good success

with at home. And since it is so, if you please to take share with us (pointing to Lucinda), perhaps, in the course of your journey, you may have met with worse entertainment. The veiled lady returned her no answer, but only, rising from her seat, and laying her hands across on her breast, bowed her head and body in token that she thanked her. By her silence they concluded she must be a Moor, and could not speak the Christian language.

By this time her companion, who had hitherto been employed about something else, came in, and seeing that they were all standing about the woman that came with him, and that, whatever they said to her, she continued silent, he said: Ladies, this young woman understands scarce anything of our language, nor can she speak any other than that of her own country; and therefore it is, that she has not answered to anything you may have asked her. Nothing has been asked her, answered Lucinda, but only whether she would accept of our company for this night, and take part of our lodging, where she shall be accommodated, and entertained, as well as the place will afford, and with that good will which is due to all strangers that are in need of it, and especially from us to her, as she is of our own sex. Dear madam, answered the stranger, I kiss your hands for her and for myself, and highly prize, as I ought, the favour offered us, which, at such a time, and from such persons as you appear to be, must be owned to be very great. Pray tell me, señor, said Dorothea, is this lady a Christian or a Moor? for her habit and her silence make us think she is what we wish she were not. She is a Moor, answered the stranger, in her attire and in her body; but in her soul she is already very much a Christian, having a very strong desire to become one. She is not yet baptized then? answered Lucinda. There has been no time for that yet, answered the stranger, since she left Algiers, her native country and place of abode, and she has not hitherto been in any danger of death so imminent, as

to make it necessary to have her baptized, before she be instructed in all the ceremonies our holy mother the church rejoins; but I hope, if it please God, she shall soon be baptized, with the decency becoming her quality, which is above what either her habit or mine seem to denote.

This discourse gave all who heard him a desire to know who the Moor and the stranger were; but nobody would ask them just then, seeing it was more proper, at that time, to let them take some rest, than to be inquiring into their lives. Dorothea took her by the hand, and led her to sit down by her, desiring her to uncover her face. She looked at the stranger, as if she asked him what they said, and what she should do. He told her in Arabic that they desired she would uncover her face, and that he would have her do so: accordingly she did, and discovered a face so beautiful, that Dorothea thought her handsomer than Lucinda, and Lucinda than Dorothea; and all the bystanders saw, that, if any beauty could be compared with theirs, it must be that of the Moor, nay, some of them thought she surpassed them in some things. And, as beauty has the prerogative and power to reconcile minds, and attract inclinations, they all presently fell to carolling and making much of the beautiful Moor. Don Fernando asked of the stranger the Moor's name, who answered, *Lela Zoraida*, and as soon as she heard this, understanding what they had inquired of the Christian, she said hastily, with a sprightly but concerned air, No, not *Zoraida*; *Maria, Maria*, letting them know her name was *Maria*, and not *Zoraida*. Those words, and the great earnestness with which she pronounced them, extorted more than one tear from those who heard her, especially from the women, who are naturally tender-hearted and compassionate. Lucinda embraced her very affectionately, saying to her: *Yea, yea, Maria, Maria*; to whom the Moor answered: *Yea, yea, Maria, Zoraida* marriage; as much as to say, not *Zoraida*.

By this time it was four in the afternoon, and, by order of Don Fernando and his company, the inn-keeper had taken care to provide a collation for them, the best it was possible for him to get: which being now ready, they all sat down at a long table, like those in halls, there being neither a round, nor a square one, in the house. They gave the upper-end and principal seat (though he would have declined it) to Don Quixote, who would needs have the lady Micomicona sit next him, as being her champion. Then sat down Lucinda and Zoraida, and opposite to them Don Fernando and Cardenio, and then the stranger and the rest of the gentlemen; and next to the ladies sat the priest and the barber: and thus they banqueted much to their satisfaction; and it gave them an additional pleasure to hear Don Quixote, who, moved by such another spirit, as that which had moved him to talk so much when he supped with the goatherds, instead of eating, spoke as follows:

In truth, gentlemen, if it be well considered, great and unheard-of things do they see, who profess the order of knight-errantry. If any one thinks otherwise, let me ask him, what man living, that should now enter at this castle gate, and see us sitting in this manner, could judge or believe us to be the persons we really are? Who could say, that this lady, sitting here by my side, is that great queen that we all know her to be, and that I am that Knight of the Sorrowful Figure, so blazoned abroad by the mouth of fame? There is no doubt, but that this art and profession exceeds all that have ever been invented by men; and so much the more honourable is it, by how much it is exposed to more dangers. Away with those who say, that letters have the advantage over arms! I will tell them, be they who they will, that they know not what they say. For the reason they usually give, and which they lay the greatest stress upon, is, that the labours of the brain exceed those of the body, and that arms are exercised by the body alone; as if the use of them were the business of porters,

for which nothing is necessary but downright strength ; or as if in this, which we who profess it call chivalry, were not included the acts of fortitude, which require a very good understanding to execute them ; or as if the mind of the warrior, who has an army, or the defence of a besieged city, committed to his charge, does not labour with his understanding as well as his body. If not, let us see how, by mere bodily strength, he will be able to penetrate into the designs of the enemy, to form stratagema, overcome difficulties, and prevent dangers which threaten : for all these things are acts of the understanding, in which the body has no share at all. It being so then, that arms employ the mind as well as letters, let us next see whose mind labours most, the scholar's or the warrior's. And this may be determined by the scope and ultimate end of each : for that intention is to be the most esteemed, which has the noblest end for its object. Now the end and design of letters (I do not now speak of divinity, which has for its aim the raising and conducting souls to heaven ; for to an end so endless as this no other can be compared), I speak of human learning, whose end, I say, is to regulate distributive justice, and give to every man his due : to know good laws, and cause them to be strictly observed, an end most certainly generous and exalted, and worthy of high commendation ; but not equal to that which is annexed to the profession of arms, whose object and end is peace, the greatest blessing men can wish for in this life. Accordingly, the first good news the world and men received, was what the angels brought, on that night which was our day, when they sung in the clouds : ' Glory be to God on high, and on earth peace, and good will towards men ' : and the salutation, which the best master of earth or heaven taught his followers and disciples, was that when they entered into any house, they should say, ' Peace be to this house ' : and many other times he said : ' My peace I give unto you, my peace I leave with you, peace be amongst you '. A jewel and legacy worthy of coming from such a

hand ! a jewel, without which there can be no happiness either in earth or in heaven ! This peace is the true end of war ; for to say arms or war, is the same thing. Granting therefore this truth, that the end of war is peace, and that in this it has the advantage of the end proposed by letters, let us come now to the bodily labours of the scholar, and to those of the professor of arms ; and let us see which are the greatest.

Don Quixote went on with his discourse in such a manner, and in such proper expressions, that none of those who heard him at that time could take him for a madman. On the contrary, most of his hearers being gentlemen, to whom the use of arms properly belongs, they listened to him with pleasure, and he continued saying :

I say then, that the hardships of the scholar are these : in the first place, poverty ; not that they are all poor, but I would put the case in the strongest manner possible : and when I have said that he endures poverty, methinks no more need be said to show his misery ; for he who is poor is destitute of every good thing : he endures poverty in all its parts, sometimes in hunger and cold, and sometimes in nakedness, and sometimes in all these together. But notwithstanding all this, it is not so great, but that still he eats, though somewhat later than usual, or of the rich man's scraps and leftovers, or, which is the scholar's greatest misery, by what is called among them going *sopping*.* Neither do they always want a fire-side or chimney corner of some other person, which, if it does not quite warm them, at least abates their extreme cold. and lastly, at night, they sleep somewhere under cover. I will not mention other ills, such as want of shirts, and an plenty of *alone*, the thickness and threadbareness of their clothes, nor that laying about them with so much exertion and pleasure, when good fortune sets a

* Waiting outside a cemetery-gate to share the soup given to the poor.

plentiful table in their way. By this way that I have described, rough and difficult, here stumbling, there falling, now rising, then falling again, they arrive to the degree they desire, which being attained, we have seen many, who, having passed these Syrtes, these Scyllas, these Charybdeas, buoyed up as it were by a favourable fortune, I say, we have seen them from a chair command and govern the world; their hunger converted into satiety, their pinching cold into refreshing coolness, their nakedness into embroidery, and their sleeping on a mat to reposing in holland and damask; a reward justly merited by their virtue. But their hardships, opposed to and compared with those of the warrior, fall far short of them, as I shall presently show.

CHAPTER XXXVIII

The continuation of Don Quixote's curious discourse upon arms and letters.

DON QUIXOTE, continuing his discourse, said: Since in speaking of the scholar, we began with his poverty, and its several branches, let us see whether the soldier be richer. And we shall find that poverty itself is not poorer; for he depends on his wretched pay, which comes late, or perhaps never, or else on what he can pilfer, with great peril of his life and conscience. And sometimes his nakedness is such, that his slashed buff doublet serves him both for finery and shirt; and in the midst of winter, being in the open field, he has nothing to warm him but the breath of his mouth, which, issuing from an empty place, must needs come out cold, against all the rules of nature. But let us wait until night, and see whether his bed will make amends for these inconveniencies: and that, if it be not his own fault, will never offend in point of narrowness; for he may measure out as many feet of

to prow, in the midst of the wide sea; which being locked and grappled together, there is no more room left for the soldier than the two-foot plank at the breakhead: and though he sees as many threatening ministers of death before him, as there are pieces of artillery and small arms pointed at him from the opposite side, not the length of a lance from his body; and though he knows, that the first ship of his foot will send him to visit the profound depths of Neptune's bosom; notwithstanding all this, with an undaunted heart, carried on by honour that inspires him, he exposes himself as a mark to all their fire, and endeavours, by that narrow pass, to force his way into the enemy's vessel: and what is most to be admired is, that scarce is one fallen, whence he cannot arise until the end of the world, when another takes his place; and if he also fall into the sea, which lies in wait for him like an enemy, another and another succeeds without any intermission between their deaths, an instance of bravery and intrepidity the greatest that is to be met with in all the extremities of war. A blessing on those happy ages, strangers to the dreadful fury of those devilish instruments of artillery, whose inventor, I verily believe, is now in hell receiving the reward of his diabolical invention; by means of which it is in the power of a cowardly and base hand to take away the life of the bravest cavalier, and to which is owed, that without knowing how, or from whence, in the midst of that resolution and bravery, which inflames and animates gallant spirits, comes a chance ball, shot off by one, who, perhaps, God and man frightened at the very dash in the pan, and in an instant cure short and puts an end to the thoughts and life of him who deserved to have lived for many ages. And therefore, when I consider this, I could almost say, I repent of having undertaken this profession of knight-errantry, in so detestable an age as this in which we live; for though no danger can daunt me, still it gives me much concern, to think that powder and lead may chance to deprive me of the opportunity of becoming famous

and renowned, by the valour of my arm and edge of my sword, over the face of the whole earth. But heaven's will be done. I have this satisfaction, that I shall acquire so much the greater fame, if I succeed, by how much the perils, to which I expose myself, are greater than those, to which the knights-errant of past ages were exposed.

Don Quixote made this long harangue while the rest were eating, forgetting to reach a bit to his mouth, though Sancho Panza ever and anon desired him to mind his victuals, telling him, he would have time enough afterwards to talk as much as he pleased. Those who heard him were moved with fresh compassion, to see a man, who to everybody's thinking had so good an understanding, and could talk so well upon every other subject, so egregiously want it, whenever the discourse happened to turn upon his unlucky and cursed chivalry. The priest told him, there was great reason in all he had said in favour of arms, and that he, though a scholar and a graduate, was of his opinion.

The collation being over, and the cloth taken away, while the hostess, her daughter, and Maritornes were preparing the chamber where Don Quixote de la Mancha lay, to which it was ordered that the ladies should be lodged by themselves that night, Don Fernando desired the stranger to relate to them the history of his life, since it could not but be extraordinary and entertaining, if they might judge by his coming in company with Zoraida. To which the stranger answered, that he would very willingly do what they desired, and that he only feared the story would not prove such as might afford them the pleasure he wished; however, rather than not comply with their request, he would relate it. The priest and all the rest thanked him, and entreated him to begin. And he, finding himself courted by so many, said: There is no need of entreaties, gentlemen, where you may command: and therefore, pray be attentive, and you will hear a true story, not to be equalled, perhaps, by

think that I do not love you, it is sufficient that I am not master enough of myself to forbear dispensing your inheritance. But, that from henceforth you may see, that I love you like a father, and have no mind to ruin you like a step-father, I design to do a thing by you, which I have had in my thoughts this good while, and weighed with mature deliberation. You are all now of an age to choose for yourselves a settlement in the world, or at least to pitch upon some way of life, which may be for your honour and profit when you are grown up. Now, what I have resolved upon is, to divide what I possess into four parts: three I will give to you, share and share alike, without making any difference; and the fourth I will reserve, to subsist upon for the remaining days of my life. But when each has the share that belongs to him in his own power, I would have him follow one of these ways I shall propose. We have a proverb here in Spain, in my opinion a very true one, as most proverbs are, being short sentences drawn from long and wise experience; and it is this: 'the church, the sea, or the court'; as if one should say more plainly, whoever would thrive and be rich, let him either get into the church, or go to sea and exercise the art of merchandising, or serve the king in his court; for it is a saying, that, 'the king's bit is better than the lord's bounty'. I say that, because it is my will, that one of you follow letters, another merchandize, and the third serve the king in his wars, for it is difficult to get admission into his household; and, though the wars do not procure a man much wealth, they usually procure him much esteem and reputation. Within eight days I will give you each your share in money, without wronging you of a farthing, as you will see in effect. Tell me now whether you will follow my opinion and advice in what I have proposed; and then he bade me, being the eldest, to answer. After I had desired him not to part with what he had, but to spend whatever he pleased, we being young enough to shift for ourselves, I concluded with assuring him

I would do as he desired, and take to the army, there to serve God and the king. My second brother complied likewise, and chose to go to the Indies, turning his portion into merchandise. The youngest, and I believe the wisest, said, he would take to the church, and finish his studies at Salamanca.

As soon as we had agreed, and chose our several professions, my father embraced us all, and with the dispatch he had promised, put his design in execution, giving to each his share, which, as I remember, was three thousand ducats; for an uncle of ours bought the whole estate, and paid for it in ready money, that it might not be alienated from the main branch of the family. In one and the self-same day, we all took leave of our good father, and it then seeming to me inhuman to leave my father so old, and with so little to subsist on, I prevailed upon him to take two thousand ducats out of my three, the remainder being sufficient to equip me with what was necessary for a soldier. My two brothers, incited by my example, returned him each a thousand ducats; so that my father now had four thousand in ready money, and three thousand more, which was the value of the land that fell to his share, and which he would not sell. To be short, we took our leave of him, and of our aforesaid uncle, not without much concern and tears on all sides, they charging us to acquaint them with our success, whether prosperous or adverse, as often as we had opportunity. We promised so to do; and they having embraced us, and given us their blessing, one of us took the road to Salamanca, the other to Seville, and I to Alicante, where I heard of a Genoese ship that loaded wool there for Genoa. It is now two and twenty years since I first left my father's house, and in all that time, though I have written several letters, I have had no news either of him, or of my brothers. As to what has befallen me in the course of that time, I will briefly relate it.

I embarked at Alicante, and had a good passage to Genoa: from thence I went to Milan, where I sur-

armed myself with arms, and some military snery, and from thence determined to go into the service in Piedmont: and being upon the road to Alexandria della Paglia, I was informed that the great Duke de Alva was passing into Flanders with an army. Hereupon I changed my mind, went with him, and served under him in all his engagements. I was present at the death of the Counts Egmont and Hono. I got an ensign's commission in the company of a famous captain of Guadalajara, called Diego de Urbina¹. And soon after my arrival in Flanders, news came of the league concluded between Pope Pius V of happy memory, and Spain, against the common enemy, the Turk, who about the same time had taken with his fleet the famous island of Cyprus, which was before subject to the Venetians, a sad and unfortunate loss! It was known for certain, that the most serene Don John of Austria, natural brother of our good King Philip, was appointed generalissimo of this league, and great preparations for war were everywhere talked of. All which incited a vehement desire in me to be present in the battle that was expected: and though I had reason to believe, and had some promises, and almost assurances, that, on the first occasion that offered, I should be promoted to the rank of a captain, I resolved to quit all, and go, as I did, into Italy. And my good fortune would have it, that Don John of Austria was just then come to Genoa, and was going to Naples to join the Venetian fleet, as he afterwards did at Messina. In short, I was present at that glorious action, being already made a captain of foot, to which honourable post I was advanced, rather by my good fortune, than by my deserts. But that day which was so fortunate to Christendom (for all nations were then undeceived of their error in believing that the Turks were invincible by sea); on that day, I say, in which the Ottomans pride and haughtiness were broken; among so many happy persons as there

¹ Cervantes served as a private in Urbina's company, which formed part of Diego de Meneada's regiment.

were (for sure the Christians, who died there, had better fortune than the survivors and conquerors), I alone remained unfortunate, since, instead of, what I might have expected had it been in the time of the Romans, some naval crown, I found myself, the night following that famous day, with chains on my feet, and manacles on my hands. Which happened thus:

Uchali¹, king of Algiers, a bold and successful corsair, having boarded and taken the captain-galley of Malta, three knights only being left alive in her, and those desperately wounded; the captain-galley of John Andrea Doria² came up to her relief, on board of which I was with my company; and, doing my duty upon this occasion, I leaped into the enemy's galley, which, getting off suddenly from ours, my soldiers could not follow me; and so I was left alone among my enemies, whom I could not resist, being so many: in short, I was carried off prisoner, and sorely wounded. And, as you must have heard, gentlemen, that Uchali escaped with his whole squadron, by that means I remained a captive in his power, being the only sad person, when so many were joyful; and a slave, when so many were freed; for fifteen thousand Christians, who were at the oar in the Turkish galley, did that day recover their long-wished-for liberty. They carried me to Constantinople, where the Grand Señor Selim made my master general of the sea, for having done his duty in the fight, and having brought off, as a proof of his valour, the flag of the Order of Malta. The year following, which was seventy-two, I was at Navarino, rowing in the captain-galley with the three lanterns³; and there I saw and observed the opportunity that was then lost of taking the whole

¹ Alack Ali.

² Giovanni Andrea Doria: the fragments of a statue erected to him are preserved in the church of San Matteo at Genoa.

³ The distinctive sign of the admiral's vessel.

Turkish navy in port. For all the [marines]¹ and Janissaries on board took it for granted they should be attacked in the very harbour, and had their baggage and their panamaques (or shoes) in readiness for running away immediately by land, without staying for an engagement: such terror had our navy struck into them. Not heaven ordered it otherwise, not through any fault or neglect of the general, who commanded our men, but for the sins of Christendom, and because God permits and ordains, that there should always be some scourges to chastise us. In short, Uchali got into Modon, an island near Navarino, and, putting his men on shore, he fortified the entrance of the port, and lay still until the season of the year forced Don John to return home. In his campaign, the galley, called the *Prize*, whose captain was a son of the famous corsair Barbarossa, was taken by the captain-galley of Naples, called the *Skr-wolf*, commanded by that thunderbolt of war, that father of the soldiers, that fortunate and invincible captain, Don Álvaro de Bazan, marquis of Santa Cruz. And I cannot forbear relating what happened at the taking of the *Prize*.

The son of Barbarossa was so cruel, and treated his slaves so ill, that, as soon as they who were at the oar saw that the *Skr-wolf* was ready to board and take them, they all at once let fall their oars, and, laying hold on their captain, who stood near the poop², calling out to them to row hard, and passing him along from bank to bank, and from the poop to the prow, they gave him such blows, that he had passed but little beyond the mast before his soul was passed to hell: such was the cruelty wherewith he treated them, and the hatred they bore to him.

We returned to Constantinople, and the year following, which was seventy-three, it was known there

¹ I have corrected the translator's mistake in rendering *levantes* by "Levantine."

² *Enteuford*: there is no precise equivalent in English.

that Don John had taken Tunis, and that King-
 dom from the Turks, and put Muley Hamet in possession
 thereof, cutting off the hopes that Muley Hamet had
 of returning again there, who was one of the cruellest
 and yet bravest Moors, that ever was in the world.
 The Grand Turk felt this loss very sensibly, and
 putting in practice that sagacity, which is inherent
 in the Ottoman family, he clapped up a peace with
 the Venetians, who desired it more than he: and the
 year following, being that of seventy-four, he attacked
 the fortress of (the) Goleta¹, and the fort which Don
 John had left half finished near Tunis. During all these
 transactions I was still at the oar, without any hope
 of redemption: at least I did not expect to be re-
 deemed; for I was determined not to write an account
 of my misfortune to my father. In short, the Goleta
 was lost, and the fort also: before which place the
 Turks had seventy-five thousand men in pay, besides
 above four hundred thousand Moors and Arabs from
 all parts of Africa: and this vast multitude was
 furnished with such quantities of ammunition, and
 such large warlike stores, together with so many
 pioneers, that, each man bringing only a handful of
 earth, they might therewith have covered both the
 Goleta and the fort. The Goleta, until then thought
 impregnable, was first taken, not through the default
 of the besieged, who did all that men could do, but
 because experience had now shown, how easily treachery
 might be raised in that desert sand; for though the
 water used to be within two spans of the surface, the
 Turks now met with none within two yards; and so
 by the help of a great number of sacks of sand, they
 raised their works so high as to overlook and command
 the fortifications: and so levelling from a cavalier,
 they put it out of the power of the besieged to make
 any defence. It was the general opinion, that our
 troops ought not to have shut themselves up in the
 Goleta, but have met the enemy in the open field, at
 the place of debarkment: but they who talk thus

¹ *Le Golets* = the "gullet" (of the lagoon).

speak at random, and like men little experienced in affairs of this kind. For if there were scarce seven thousand soldiers in the Goleta and in the fort, how could so small a number, though ever so resolute, both take the field and garrison the forts against such a multitude as that of the enemy * and how can a place be maintained, which is not relieved, and especially when besieged by an army that is both numerous and obstinate, and besides in their own country ? But many were of opinion, and I was of the number, that heaven did a particular grace and favour to Spain, in suffering the destruction of that forge and refuge of all iniquity, that devourer, that sponge, and that moth of infinite sums of money, idly spent there, to no other purpose than to preserve the memory of its having been a conquest of the invincible emperor Charles the Fifth ; as if it were necessary to the making that memory eternal, as it will be, that those stones should keep it up. The fort also was taken at last : but the Turks were forced to purchase it inch by inch ; for the soldiers who defended it fought with such bravery and resolution, that they killed above twenty-five thousand of the enemy in two-and-twenty general assaults. And of three hundred that were left alive, not one was taken prisoner un-wounded ; an evident proof of their courage and bravery, and of the vigorous defence they had made. A little fort also, or tower, in the middle of the lake, commanded by Don John Zanguera, a cavalier of Valencia, and a famous soldier, surrendered upon terms. They took prisoner Don Pedro Partocarrero, general of [the] Goleta, who did all that was possible for the defence of his fortress, and took the loss of it so much to heart, that he died for grief on the way to Constantinople, whither they were carrying him prisoner. They took also the commander of the fort, called Gabrio Cerebellon, a Milanese gentleman, a great engineer and a most valiant soldier. Several persons of distinction lost their lives in these two garrisons ; among whom was Pagano Doria, Knight

of Malta, a gentleman of great generosity, as appears by his exceeding liberality to his brother, the famous John Andrea Doria: and what made his death the more lamented was, his dying by the hands of some African Arabs, who, upon seeing that the fort was lost, offered to convey him, disguised as a Moor, to Tabarca, a small haven or settlement, which the Genoese have on that coast for the coral-fishing. These Arabs cut off his head, and carried it to the general of the Turkish fleet, who made good upon them our Castilian proverb, that, 'though we love the treason, we hate the traitor'; for it is said, the general ordered, that those, who brought him the present, should be instantly hanged, because they had not brought him alive. Among the Christians who were taken in the fort was one Don Pedro de Aguilar, a native of some town in Andalusia, who had been an ensign in the garrison, a good soldier, and a man of excellent parts; in particular, he had a happy talent in poetry¹. I mention this, because his fortune brought him to be alive to the same patron with me, and we served in the same galley and at the same oar: and before we parted from that port, this cavalier made two sonnets, by way of epitaph, one upon [the] Goleta, and the other upon the fort. And indeed I have a mind to repeat them; for I have them by heart, and I believe they will rather be entertaining than disagreeable to you.

At the instant the captive named Don Pedro de Aguilar, Don Fernando looked at his companions, and all three smiled; and when he mentioned the sonnets, one of them said: Pray, sir, before you go any further I beseech you to tell me what became of that Don Pedro de Aguilar you talk of? All I know, answered the captive, is, that, after he had been two years at Constantinople, he escaped in the habit of an Armat, with a Greek spy, and I cannot tell whether he

¹ A manuscript containing memoirs ascribed to this Aguilar was discovered in England, and was printed in 1873.

recovered his liberty; though I believe he did: for, about a year after, I saw the Greek in Constantinople, but had not an opportunity of asking him the success of that journey. He returned to Spain, said the gentleman; for that Don Pedro is my brother, and is now in our town, in health, and rich, is married, and has three children. Thanks be to God, said the captive, for the blessings bestowed on him, for in my opinion, there is not on earth a satisfaction equal to that of recovering one's liberty. Besides, replied the gentleman, I have by heart the sonnets my brother made. Then, pray, sir, repeat them, said the captive; for you will be able to do it better than I can. With all my heart, answered the gentleman: that upon Coleta was thus:

CHAPTER XL

In which is continued the history of the captive.

SONNET

O happy souls, by death at length set free
From the dark prison of mortality,
By glorious deeds, whose memory never dies,
From earth's dim spot exalted to the skies!
What fury stood in every eye confess'd!
What generous ardour fired each manly breast!
Whilst slaughter'd heaps disdain'd the sandy shore,
And the tinged ocean blush'd with hostile gore.
Overpower'd by numbers, gloriously ye fell:
Death only could such matchless courage quell.
Whilst dying thus ye triumph o'er your foes,
Its fame the world, its glory heaven bestows!

You have it right, said the captive. That on the fort, said the gentleman, if I do not forget, was as follows:

SONNET

From 'midst these walls, whose ruins spread around,
And scatter'd clouds that heap th'ensanguin'd ground,

in other offices. This kind of captives find it very difficult to recover their liberty; for, as they belong to the public, and have no particular master, there is nobody for them to treat with about their ransom, though they should have it ready. To these baths, as I have said, private persons sometimes carry their slaves, especially when their ransom is agreed upon; for there they keep them without work, and in safety, until their ransom comes. The king's slaves also, who are to be ransomed, do not go out to work with the rest of the crew, unless it be when their ransom is long in coming; for then, to make them wait for it with greater impatience, they are made to work, and go for wood with the rest; which is no small toil and pain. As they knew I had been a captain, I was set upon ransom; and though I assured them I wanted both interest and money, it did not hinder me from being put among the gentlemen, and those who were to be ransomed. They put a chain on me, rather as a sign of ransom than to secure me; and so I passed my life in that bath, with many other gentlemen and persons of condition, distinguished and accounted as ransomable. And though hunger and nakedness often, and indeed generally afflicted us, nothing troubled us so much as to see, at every turn, the unparalleled and excessive cruelty with which our master used the Christians. Each day he hanged one, impaled another, and cut off the ears of a third; and that upon the least provocation, and sometimes none at all, less much that the very Turks were sensible he did it for the mere pleasure of doing it, and to gratify his murderous and inhuman disposition. One Spanish soldier only, called such an one *De Saavedra**, happened to be in his good graces; and though he did this, which will remain in the memory of those people for many years, and all towards obtaining his liberty, he never gave him a blow, nor ordered one to be given him, nor ever gave him so much as a hard word: so for the least of many things he did, we all feared him.

* Cervantes himself.

These thousand arms of warriors, dead in fight,
 In better reg' we took their happy fight
 Long ere in conquest I have they bravely stood
 As I have seen their conquering blood;
 I, by superior force, compelled to yield,
 I now see they galled us the well-fought field.
 'Twas fatal soil has ever been the tomb
 Of valiant heroes, buried in its womb;
 Not heaven before but it was our aid,
 Not more glorious were the skies to gaid.

The monks were not deluded, and the report
 pleased with the news they told him of his court
 went on with his story, saying

The Callets and the first being delivered up, the Tur
 gave orders to demolish the Callets: as for the fort
 was in such a condition that there was nothing
 to be demolished. And to do the work more speedi
 and with less labour, they undermined it in the
 places. It is true, they could not blow up what seems
 to be least strong, the old walls, but whatever re
 mained of the new fortification, made by the engine
 Fratin¹, came very easily down. In short, the Tur
 returned to Constantinople victorious and triumphant,
 and within a few months died my master the famous
 Uchali, whom people called Uchali Fartax, that is to
 say, in the Turkish language, 'the scabby renegade';
 for he was so; and it is customary among the Turks
 to nickname people from some personal defect, or
 give them a name from some good quality belonging
 to them. And the reason is, because there are but
 four surnames of families which contend for nobility
 with the Ottoman, and the rest, as I have said, take
 names and surnames either from the blemishes of the
 body, or the virtues of the mind. This leper had been
 at the oar fourteen years, being a slave of the Grand
 Señor's: and, at about thirty-four years of age, being
 enraged at a blow given him by a Turk while he was
 at the oar, to have it in his power to be revenged on

¹ *Fratin* = little monk, the nickname of Quixote
 Palcaro.

him, he renounced his religion. And so great was his valour, that, without rising by those base methods by which the minions of the Grand Señor usually rose, he came to be king of Algiers, and afterwards general of the sea, which is the third command in that empire. He was born in Calabria, and was a good moral man, and treated his slaves with great humanity. He had three thousand of them, and they were divided after his death, as he had ordered by his last will, one half to the Grand Señor, who is every man's heir in part, sharing equally with the children of the deceased, and the other among his renegades. I fell to the lot of a Venetian renegade, who, having been cabin-boy in a ship, was taken by Uchah, and was so beloved by him, that he became one of his most favourite boys. He was one of the cruellest renegades that ever was seen: his name was Asenaga¹. He grew very rich, and became king of Algiers; and with him I came from Constantinople, a little comforted by being so near Spain: not that I intended to write an account to anybody of my unfortunate circumstances, but as hopes fortune would be more favourable to me in Algiers than it had been in Constantinople, where I had tried a thousand ways of seeking my escape, but none rightly timed nor successful: and in Algiers I purposed to try other means of compensating what I desired: for the hope of recovering my liberty never entirely abandoned me; and whenever what I devised, contrived, and put in execution, did not answer my design, I presently, without desponding, searched out and formed to myself fresh hopes to sustain me, though they were slight and inconsiderable.

Thus I made a shift to support life, shut up in a prison or house, which the Turks call a bath, where they keep their Christian captives locked up, as well those who belong to the king as some of those belonging to private persons, and those also whom they call of the *Almazem*, that is to say, 'captives of the council,' who serve the city in its public works, and

¹ A mistake of the author's for Hassan Pasha.

of Malta, a gentleman of great generosity, as appeared by his screaming liberality to his brother, the famous John Andrew Doria; and what made his death the more lamented was, his dying by the hands of some African Arabs, who, upon seeing that the fort was lost, offered to convey him, disguised as a Moor, to Tabarra, a small haven or settlement, which the Genoese have on that coast for the coral fishing. These Arabs cut off his head, and carried it to the general of the Turkish fleet, who made great upon them for Christian proverb, that, 'though we love the treason, we hate the traitor'; for it would, the general ordered that those, who brought him the person, should be instantly hanged, because they had not brought *him* alive. Among the Christians who were taken in the fort was one Don Pedro de Aguilar, a native of some town in Andalusia, who had been an ensign in the garrison, a good soldier, and a man of excellent parts; in particular, he had a happy talent in poetry¹. I mention this, because his fortune brought him to be slave to the same patron with me, and we served in the same galley and at the same oar. and before we parted from that port, this cavalier made two sonnets by way of epitaph, one upon (the) Goleta, and the other upon the fort. And indeed I have a mind to repeat them; for I have them by heart, and I believe they will rather be entertaining than disagreeable to you.

At the instant the captive named Don Pedro de Aguilar, Don Fernando looked at his companions, and all three smiled: and when he mentioned the sonnets one of them said: Pray, sir, before you go any further I beseech you to tell me what became of that Don Pedro de Aguilar you talk of? All I know, answered the captive, is, that, after he had been two years at Constantinople, he escaped in the habit of an druse, with a Greek spy, and I cannot tell whether he

¹ A manuscript containing memoirs ascribed to Don Aguilar was discovered in England, and was printed in 1875.

certainly; but it is because of the disturbance my presence would give her, when she has a mind to put her evil inclinations in practice. And think not that she is moved to change her religion because she thinks yours is preferable to ours: no; but because she knows, that *Libertinism* is more allowed in your country than in ours. And, turning to Zoraida (I and another Christian, holding him fast by both arms, lest he should commit some outrage) he said: O, infamous girl, and ill-advised maiden! wretched goest thou blindfold and precipitate, in the power of these dogs, our natural enemies? Cursed be the hour, wherein I begat thee: and cursed be the indulgence and luxury in which I brought thee up! But, perceiving he was not likely to give over in haste, I hurried him ashore, and from thence he continued his execrations and wailings, praying to Mahomet that he would beseech God to destroy, confound, and make an end of us: and when, being under sail, we could no longer hear his words, we saw his actions; which were, tearing his beard, plucking off his hair, and rolling himself on the ground: and once he raised his voice so high, that we could hear him say: Come back, beloved daughter, come back to shore: for I forgive thee all; let those men keep the money they already have; and do thou come back, and comfort thy desolate father, who must lose his life in this desert land, if thou forsakest him. All this Zoraida heard; all this she felt, and bewailed; but could not speak, nor answer him a word only, May it please Allah, my dear father, that *Lela Marica*, who has been the cause of my turning Christian, may comfort you in your affliction. Allah well knows, that I could do no otherwise than I have done, and that these Christians are not indebted to me for any particular goodwill to them, since, though I had had no mind to have gone with them, but rather to have stayed at home, it was impossible; for my mind would not let me be at rest, until I performed this work, which to me seems as good, as you, my dearest father, think it bad. Thus

certainly ; but it is because of the disturbance my presence would give her, when she has a mind to put her evil inclinations in practice. And think not that she is moved to change her religion because she thinks yours is preferable to ours : no ; but because she knows, that Libertism is more allowed in your country than in ours. And, turning to Zoraida (I and another Christian, holding him fast by both arms, lest he should commit some outrage) he said : O, infamous girl, and ill-advised maiden ! whether goest thou blindfold and precipitate, in the power of these dogs, our natural enemies ! Cursed be the hour, wherein I begat thee : and cursed be the indulgence and luxury in which I brought thee up ! But, perceiving he was not likely to give over in haste, I hurried him ashore, and from thence he continued his execrations and wailings, praying to Nabomet that he would beseech God to destroy, confound, and make an end of us ; and when, being under sail, we could no longer hear his words, we saw his actions ; which were, tearing his beard, plucking off his hair, and rolling himself on the ground : and once he raised his voice so high, that we could hear him say : Come back, beloved daughter, come back to shore, for I forgive thee all ; let those men keep the money they already have ; and do thou come back, and comfort thy disconsolate father, who must lose his life in this desert land, if thou forsakest him. All this Zoraida heard ; all this she felt, and bewailed ; but could not speak, nor answer him a word only, May it please Allah, my dear father, that Lela Maria, who has been the cause of my turning Christian, may comfort you in your affliction. Allah well knows, that I could do no otherwise than I have done, and that these Christians are not indebted to me for any particular goodwill to them, since, though I had had no mind to have gone with them, but rather to have stayed at home, it was impossible ; for my mind would not let me be at rest, until I performed this work, which to me seems as good as you, my dearest father, think it bad. This



we could see, neither habitation, nor person, nor path, nor road, could we discover at all. However we determined to go farther into the country, thinking it impossible but we must soon see somebody, to inform us where we were. But what troubled me most, was to see Zoraida travel on foot through those craggy places; for, though I sometimes took her on my shoulders, my weariness fatigued her more than her own resting relieved her: and therefore she would not suffer me to take that pains any more: and so went on with very great patience and signs of joy, I still leading her by the hand.

We had gone in this manner somewhat less than a quarter of a league, when the sound of a little bell reached our ears, a certain signal that some flocks were near us; and all of us looking out attentively to see whether any appeared, we discovered a young shepherd at the foot of a cork-tree, in great tranquillity and repose, shaping a stick with his hands. We called out to him, and he lifted up his head, got up nimbly on his feet; and, as we came to understand afterwards, the first, who presented themselves to his sight, being the renegado and Zoraida, he seeing them in Moorish habits, thought all the Moors in Barbary were upon him; and making towards the wood before him with incredible speed, he cried out as loud as ever he could, Moors! the Moors are landed: Moors! Moors! arm, arm! We, hearing this outcry, were confounded, and knew not what to do: but, considering that the shepherd's outcries must needs alarm the country, and that the militia of the coast would presently come to see what was the matter, we agreed, that the renegado should strip off his Turkish habit, and put on a jerkun or slave's cassock, which one of us immediately gave him, though he who lent it remained only in his shirt and breeches. And so, recommending ourselves to God, we went on, the same way we saw the shepherd take, expecting every moment when the coastguard would be upon us; nor were we deceived in our apprehensions: for, in less than two hours, as we came

heard the news of our coming from some who went before. They did not come to see captives freed, or Moors made slaves; for the people of that coast are accustomed to see both the one and the other; but they came to gaze at the beauty of Zoraida, which was at that time in its full perfection; for what with the fatigue of walking, and the joy of being in Christendom, without the fear of being lost, such colours showed themselves in her face, that if my affection did not thus deceive me, I will venture to say, there never was in the world a more beautiful creature, at least none that I had ever seen.

We went directly to the church, to give God thanks for the mercy we had received, and Zoraida, at first entering, said there were faces there very like that of *Lela Marien*. We told her they were pictures of her, and the renegade explained to her the best he could what they signified, that she might adore them, just as if every one of them were really that very *Lela Marien*, who had spoke to her. She, who has good sense, and a clear and ready apprehension, presently understood what was told her concerning the images. After this they carried us, and lodged us in different houses of the town, but the Christian, who came with us, took the renegade, Zoraida, and me, to the house of his parents, who were in pretty good circumstances, and treated us with as much kindness as they did their own son. We stayed in *Velet* six days, at the end of which the renegade, having informed himself of what was proper for him to do, repaired to the city of *Granada*, there to be readmitted, by means of the Holy Inquisition, into the bosom of our holy mother the church. The rest of the freed captives went every one which way he pleased: as for Zoraida and myself, we remained behind, with those crowns only which the courtesy of the Frenchman had bestowed on Zoraida; with part of which I bought this beast she rides on; and *Antherio* I have served her as a father and gentleman valet, and not as a husband. We are going with a

judges to one of my father's friends, as whether either of my friends have had better fortune than myself: through contemplating that heaven has given me I could not think heaven could have had all in me, which I should have desired to be high & free. The pleasure with which I could have the most passionate parents agree with it, and the desire the more to express of becoming a Christian, so much and so great, that I was in admiration, and look upon myself as bound to serve God all the time of my life. But the delight I take in seeing my father here, and his sons, in witnessing their growth and almost destroyed by my own knowing children I shall find my course in my own country whereas he shall be here, and whether time and death have not made such alterations in the form and time of my father and brothers, that, if they are no more I shall hardly find anybody that knows me.

This, gentlemen, is my history: whether it be as entertaining and amiable as you find are to judge. For my own part I can say, I would willingly have related it still more accurately, though the fear of tiring you has made me omit several circumstances, which were to my private soul.

CHAPTER XLII

Which treats of what further happened in the sea, and of many other things worthy to be known.

Here the captive ended his story: to whom Don Fernando said: Truly, captain, the manner of your relating this strange adventure has been such, as equals the surprising novelty of the event itself. The whole is extraordinary, uncommon, and full of accidents, which astonish and surprise those who hear them. And so great is the pleasure we have received in listening to it, that though the story should have held until to-morrow, we should have wished it were to

begin again. And, upon saying this, Cardenio and the rest of the company offered him all the service in their power, with such expressions of kindness and sincerity, that the captain was extremely well satisfied of their goodwill. Don Fernando in particular offered him, that, if he would return with him, he would prevail with the marquis his brother, to stand godfather at Zoraida's baptism, and that, for his own part, he would accommodate him in such a manner, that he might appear in his own country with the dignity and distinction due to his person. The captive thanked him most courteously, but would not accept of any of his generous offers.

By this time night was come on : and, about dusk, a coach arrived at the inn, with some men on horseback. They asked for a lodging. The hostess answered, there was not an inch of room in the whole inn, but what was taken up. Though it be so, said one of the men on horseback, there must be room made for my lord judge here in the coach. At this name the hostess was troubled, and said : Sir, the truth is, I have no bed ; but if his worship my lord judge brings one with him, as I believe he must, let him enter in God's name ; for I and my husband will quit our own chamber to accommodate his honour. Then let it be so, quoth the squire. But by this time there had already alighted out of the coach a man, who by his garb presently discovered the office and dignity he bore : for the long gown and tacked-up sleeves he had on showed him to be a judge, as his servant had said. He led by the hand a young lady, seemingly about fifteen years of age, in a riding dress, so genteel, so beautiful, and so gay, that her presence struck them all with admiration, inasmuch that, had they not seen Dorothea, Lucinda, and Zoraida, who were in the inn, they would have believed that such another beautiful damsel could hardly have been found. Don Quixote was present at the coming in of the judge and the young lady ; and so, as soon as he saw him, he said : Your worship may

The captive, who, from the very moment he saw the judge, felt his heart beat, and had a suspicion that the gentleman was his brother, asked one of the servants that came with him, what his name might be, and if he knew what country he was of? The servant answered, that he was called the Licentiate John Perez de Viedma, and that he had heard say, he was born in a town in the mountains of Leon. With this account, and with what he had seen, he was entirely confirmed in the opinion that this was that brother of his, who, by advice of his father, had applied himself to learning: and overjoyed and pleased herewith, he called unto Don Fernando, Cardeno, and the priest, and told them what had passed, assuring them that the judge was his brother. The servant had also told him, that he was going to the Indies in quality of judge of the courts of Mexico. He understood also that the young lady was his daughter, and that her mother died in childbed of her, and that the judge was become very rich by her dowry, which came to him by his having thus child by her. He asked their advice, what way he should take to discover himself, or how he should first know, whether, after the discovery, his brother, seeing him so poor, would be ashamed to own him, or would receive him with bowels of affection. Leave it to me to make the experiment, said the priest, and the rather, because there is no reason to doubt, señor captain, but that you will be very well rewarded: for the worth and prudence, which appear in your brother's looks, give no signs of his being arrogant or wilfully forgetful, or of his not knowing how to make due allowances for the accidents of fortune. Nevertheless, said the captain, I would fain make myself known to him by some roundabout way, and not suddenly and at unawares. I tell you, answered the priest, I will manage it after such a manner, that all parties shall be satisfied.

By this time supper was ready, and they all sat down at table, excepting the captive, and the ladies, who supped by themselves in their chamber. In the

midst of supper, the priest said: My lord judge, I had a comrade of your name in Constantinople, where I was a slave some years; which comrade was one of the bravest soldiers and captains in all the Spanish infantry: but as unfortunate as he was resolute and brave. And pray, sir, what was this captain's name I said the judge. He was called, answered the priest, Roy Perez de Viedma, and he was born in a village in the mountains of Leon. He related to me a circumstance, which happened between his father, himself, and his two brethren, which, had it come from a person of less veracity than himself, I should have taken for a tale, such as old women tell by a fire-side in winter. For he told me, his father had divided his estate equally between himself and his three sons, and had given them certain precepts better than those of Cato. And I can assure you, that the choice he made to follow the wars succeeded so well, that, in a few years, by his valour and bravery, without other help than that of his great virtue, he rose to be a captain of foot, and saw himself in the road of becoming a colonel very soon. But fortune proved adverse; for where he might have expected to have her favour, he lost it, together with his liberty, in that glorious action, whereby so many recovered theirs.—I mean in the battle of Lepanto. Mine I lost in [the] Goleta; and afterwards, by different adventures, we became comrades in Constantinople. From thence he came to Algiers, where, to my knowledge, one of the strangest adventures in the world befell him. The priest then went on, and recounted to him very briefly what had passed between his brother and Zoraida. To all which the judge was so attentive, that never any judge was more so. The priest went no further than that point, where the French stripped the Christians that came in the bark, and the poverty and necessity wherein his comrade and the beautiful Moor were left: pretending that he knew not what became of them afterwards, whether they arrived in Spain, or were carried by the Frenchmen to France.

The captain stood at some distance, listening to all the priest said, and observed all the emotions of his brother; who, perceiving the priest had ended his story, fetching a deep sigh, and his eyes standing with water, said: O sir, you know not how nearly I am affected by the news you tell me; so nearly that I am constrained to show it by these tears, which flow from my eyes, in spite of all my discretion and reserve! That gallant captain you mention is my elder brother, who being of a stronger constitution, and of more elevated thoughts, than I, or my younger brother, chose the honourable and worthy profession of arms; which was one of the three ways proposed to us by our father, as your comrade told you, when you thought he was telling you a fable. I applied myself to learning, which, by God's blessing on my industry, has raised me to the station you see me in. My younger brother is in Peru, so rich, that, with what he has sent to my father and me, he has made large amends for what he took away with him, and besides has enabled my father to indulge his natural disposition to liberality. I also have been enabled to prosecute my studies with more decorum and authority, until I arrived at the rank to which I am now advanced. My father is still alive, but dying with desire to hear of his eldest son, and begging of God with incessant prayers, that death may not close his eyes, until he has once again beheld his son alive. And I wonder extremely, considering his discretion, how, in so many troubles and afflictions, or in his prosperous successes, he could neglect giving his father some account of himself; for had he, or any of us, known his case, he needed not to have waited for the miracle of the east to have obtained his ransom. But what at present gives me the most concern, is to think whether those Frenchmen have set him at liberty, or killed him, to conceal their robbery. This thought will make me continue my voyage, not with that satisfaction I began it, but rather with melancholy and sadness. O my dear brother! did I but know where you now

arr, I would go and find you, to deliver you from your troubles, though at the expense of my own repose. Oh! who shall carry the news to our aged father that you are alive? Though you were in the deepest dungeon of Barbary, his wealth, my brother's, and mine, would fetch you thence. O beautiful and bountiful Zoraida; who can repay the kindness you have done my brother? Who shall be so happy as to be present at your regeneration by baptism, and at your nuptials, which would give us all so much delight? These and the like expressions the judge uttered, so full of compassion at the news he had received of his brother, that all who heard him bore him company in demonstrations of a tender concern for his sorrow.

The priest then, finding he had gained his point according to the captain's wish, would not hold them any longer in suspense; and so, rising from table, and going in where Zoraida was, he took her by the hand, and behind her came Lucinda, Dorothea, and the judge's daughter. The captain stood expecting what the priest would do; who, taking him also by the other hand, with both of them together went into the room where the judge and the rest of the company were, and said: My lord judge, cease your tears, and let your wish be crowned with all the happiness you can desire, since you have before your eyes your good brother, and your good sister-in-law. He whom you behold is Captain Viedma, and this the beautiful Moor, who did him so much good. The Frenchmen I told you of reduced them to the poverty you see, to give you an opportunity of showing the liberality of your generous breast. The captain ran to embrace his brother, who set both his hands against the captain's breast, to look at him a little more steadily; but, when he thoroughly knew him, he embraced him so closely, shedding such melting tears of joy, that most of those present bore him company in weeping. The words both the brothers uttered to each other, and the concern they showed, can, I believe, hardly

be conceived, much less written. Now they gave each other a brief account of their adventures: now they demonstrated the height of brotherly affection; now the judge embraced Zoraida, offering her all he had: now he made his daughter embrace her, now the beautiful Christian and most beautiful Moor renewed the tears of all the company. Now Don Quixote stood attentive, without speaking a word, pondering upon these strange events, and ascribing them all to chimeras of knight-errantry. Now it was agreed that the captain and Zoraida should return with their brother to Seville, and acquaint their father with his being found and at liberty, that the old man might contrive to be present at the baptism and nuptials of Zoraida, it being impossible for the judge to discontinue his journey, having received news of the *flota's* departure from Seville for New Spain in a month's time, and as it would be a great inconvenience to him to lose his passage. In *fine*, they were all satisfied, and rejoiced at the captive's success; and two parts of the night being wellnigh spent, they agreed to retire, and repose themselves during the remainder. Don Quixote offered his service to guard the castle, lest some giant, or other miscreant-errant, for lucre of the treasure of beauty enclosed there, should make some attempt and attack them. They who knew him, returned him thanks, and gave the judge an account of his strange frenzy, with which he was not a little diverted. Sancho Panza alone was out of all patience at the company's sitting up so late: and after all he was better accommodated than any of them, throwing himself upon the accoutrements of his ass, which will cost him so dear, as you shall be told by and by. The ladies being now retired to their chamber, and the rest accommodated as well as they could, Don Quixote called out of the inn to stand sentinel at the castle gate, as he had promised.

It fell out, then, that a little before day, there reached the ladies' ears a voice so tunable and sweet, that it forced them all to listen attentively: especially

and stopped both her ears with her hands, that she might not hear him; at which Dorothea could not but admire very much; and being attentive to what was sung, she found it was to this purpose:

SONG

Sweet hope, thee difficulties fly,
To thee disheart'ning fears give way
Not e'en thy death impending sigh,
Thy dauntless courage can dismay.

No requests bless, no laurels crown
The lazy general's feeble arm,
Who sinks repaid in bed of down,
Whilst ease and sloth his senses charm.

Love sells his precious glories dear,
And vast the purchase of his joys;
Nor ought he set such treasures rare
At the low price of vulgar toys.

Since perseverance gains the prize,
And cowards still successful prove,
Born on the wings of hope I'll rise,
Nor fear to reach the heaven of love.

Here the voice ceased, and Doda Clara began to sigh afresh: all which fired Dorothea's curiosity to know the cause of so sweet a song, and so sad a plaint; and therefore she again asked her, what it was she would have said a while ago. Then Clara, lest Lucinda should hear her, embracing Dorothea, put her mouth so close to Dorothea's ear that she might speak securely without being overheard, and said to her: The singer, dear madam, is son of a gentleman of the kingdom of Aragon, lord of two towns, who lived opposite to my father's house at court. And though my father kept his windows with canvas in the winter, and lattices in summer, I know not how it happened, that this young gentleman, who then went to school, saw me; nor can I tell whether it was at church or elsewhere; but, in short, he fell in love with me, and gave me to

understand his passion from the windows of his house, by so many signs, and so many tears, that I was forced to believe, and even to love him, without knowing what I desired. Among other signs, which he used to make, one was, to join one hand with the other, signifying his desire to marry me : and though I should have been very glad it might have been so, yet, being alone and without a mother, I knew not whom to communicate the affair to : and therefore I let it rest, without granting him any other favour, than, when his father and mine were both abroad, to lift up the canvas, or lattice window, and gave him a full view of me : at which he would be so transported that one would think he would run stark mad. Now the time of my father's departure drew near, which he heard, but not from me : for I never had an opportunity to tell him. He fell sick, as far as I could learn, of grief, so that, on the day we came away I could not see him to bid him farewell, though it were but with my eyes. But, after we had travelled two days, at going into an inn in a village a day's journey from hence, I saw him at the door in the habit of a mulrteer, so naturally dressed, that, had I not carried his image so deeply imprinted in my soul, it had been impossible for me to know him. I knew him, and was both surprised and overjoyed. He stole looks at me, unobserved by my father, whom he carefully avoids when he crosses the way before me, either on the road or at our inn. And knowing what he is, and considering that he comes on foot, and takes such pains for love of me, I die with concern, and continually set my eyes where he sets his feet. I cannot imagine what he proposes to himself, nor how he could escape from his father, who loves him passionately, having no other heir, and he being so very very deserving, as you will perceive when you see him. I can assure you besides, that all he says is of his own invention ; for I have heard say, he is a very great scholar and a poet. And now, every time I see him, or hear him say, I tremble all over and am in a fright, lest my

pastime, by overhearing some of his extravagant speeches.

Now you must know, that the inn had no window towards the field, only a kind of spike-hole to the straw-loft, by which they took in or threw out their straw. At this hole, then, this pair of demi-lances planted themselves, and perceived that Don Quixote was on horseback, leaning forward on his lance, and uttering every now and then such mournful and profound sighs, that one would think each of them sufficient to tear away his very soul. They heard him also say, in a soft, soothing, and amorous tone: O my dear Lady Dulcinea del Toboso, perfection of all beauty, sum total of discretion, treasury of wit and good humour, and pledge of modesty; lastly, the idea and exemplar of all that is profitable, decent, or delightful in the world! and what may your ladyship be now doing? art thou, peradventure, thinking of thy captive knight, who voluntarily exposes himself to so many perils, merely for thy sake? O thou transformed luminary, bring me tidings of her: perhaps thou art now gazing at her, envious of her beauty as she is walking through some gallery of her sumptuous palace, or leaning over some balcony, considering how, without offence to her modesty and grandeur, she may assuage the torment thus poor afflicted heart of mine endures for her sake; or perhaps considering what glory to bestow on my sufferings, what rest on my cares, and lastly, what life on my death, and what reward on my services. And thou, sun, who by this time must be hastening to harness thy steeds, to come abroad early and visit thy mistress, I entreat thee, as soon as thou seest her, salute her in my name: but beware, when thou seest and salutes her, that thou dost not kiss her face; for I shall be more jealous of thee than thou wast of that swift ingrate, who made thee sweat, and run so fast over the plains of Thersaly, or along the banks of Peneus (for I do not well remember ever which of them thou rankest at that time), so jealous and so enamoured.

partime, by overhearing some of his extravagant speeches.

Now you must know, that the inn had no window towards the field, only a kind of spike-hole to the straw-loft, by which they took in or threw out their straw. At this hole, then, this pair of demi-lancers planted themselves, and perceived that Don Quixote was on horseback, leaning forward on his lance, and stirring every now and then such mournful and profound sighs, that one would think each of them sufficient to tear away his very soul. They heard him also say, in a soft, soothing, and amorous tone: O my dear Lady Dulcinea del Toboso, perfection of all beauty, sum total of discretion, treasury of wit and good humour, and pledge of modesty, lastly, the idea and exemplar of all that is profitable, decent, or delightful in the world! and what may your ladyship be now doing? art thou, peradventure, thinking of thy captive knight, who voluntarily exposes himself to so many perils, merely for thy sake? O thou transformed luminary, bring me tidings of her: perhaps thou art now gazing at her, ravished of her beauty as she is walking through some gallery of her sumptuous palace, or leaning over some balcony, considering how, without offence to her modesty and grandeur, she may assuage the torment this poor afflicted heart of mine endures for her sake; or perhaps considering what glory to bestow on my sufferings, what rest on my cares, and lastly, what life on my death, and what reward on my services. And thou, sun, who by this time must be hastening to harness thy steeds, to come abroad early and visit thy mistress, I entreat thee, as soon as thou seest her, salute her in my name: but beware, when thou seest and salutes her, that thou dost not kiss her face. for I shall be more jealous of thee than thou wast of that swift ingrate, who made thee sweat, and ran so fast over the plains of Thersady, or along the banks of Frarna (for I do not well remember over which of them thou rankest at that time), so jealous and so enamoured.

Thus far Don Quixote had proceeded in his piteous soliloquy, when the innkeeper's daughter began to call softly to him, and to say : Sir, pray come a little this way, if you please. At which signal and voice Don Quixote turned about his head, and perceived by the light of the moon, which then shone very bright, that somebody called him from the spike-hole, which to him seemed a window with gilded bars, fit for rich castles, such as he fancied the inn to be : and instantly it came again into his mad imagination, as it had done before, that the fair damsel, daughter of the lord of the castle, being irresistibly in love with him, was come to solicit him again : and with this thought, that he might not appear discourteous and ungrateful, he turned Roundabout about, and came up to the hole : and as soon as he saw the two wenches, he said : I pity you, fair lady, for having placed your amorous inclinations where it is impossible for you to meet with a suitable return, such as your great worth and beauty deserve ; yet ought you not to blame this unfortunate enamoured knight, whom love has made incapable of engaging his affections to any other than to her, whom, the moment he laid his eyes on her, he made absolute mistress of his soul. Pardon me, good lady, and retire to your chamber ; and do not, by a farther discovery of your desires, force me to seem still more ungrateful : and if, through the passion you have for me, you can find anything else in me to satisfy you, provided it be not downright love, pray command it ; for I swear to you, by that absent sweet enemy of mine, to bestow it upon you immediately, though you should ask me for a lock of Medusa's hair, which was all snakes, or even the sunbeams enclosed in a vial. Sir, quoth Maritornes, my lady wants nothing of all this. What is it then your lady wants, discreet damsel ? answered Don Quixote. Only one of your beautiful hands, quoth Maritornes, whereby partly to satisfy that longing, which brought her to this window, so much to the peril of her honour, that, if her lord and

father should come to know it, the least alike he would whip off would be one of her ears. I would fain see that, answered Don Quixote: he had best have a care what he does, unless he has a mind to come to the most disastrous end that ever father did in the world, for having laid violent hands on the delicate members of his beloved daughter. Maritornes made no doubt but Don Quixote would give his hand as they had desired; and so, resolving with herself what she would do, she went down into the stable, from whence she took the halter of Sancho Panza's ass, and returned very speedily to her spike-hole just as Don Quixote had got upon Rosinante's saddle to reach the gilded window, where he imagined the enamoured damsel stood: and, at giving her his hand, he said: Take, madam, this hand, or rather this chastiser of the evil-doers of the world: take, I say, the hand, which no woman's hand ever touched before, not even here, who has the entire right of my whole body. I do not give it you to kiss, but only that you may behold the contexture of its nerves, the firm knitting of its muscles, the largeness and spaciousness of its veins, whence you may gather what must be the strength of that arm which has such a hand. We shall soon see that, quoth Maritornes; and making a running knot on the halter, she clapped it on his wrist, and, descending from the hole, she tied the other end of it very fast to the staple of the door of the hay-loft. Don Quixote, feeling the harshness of the rope about his wrist, said: You seem rather to nay than grasp my hand: pray, do not treat it so roughly, since that is not to blame for the injury my inclination does you; nor is it right to discharge the whole of your displeasure on so small a part: consider, that lovers do not take revenge at this cruel rate. But nobody heard a word of all this discourse; for, as soon as Maritornes had tied Don Quixote up, they both went away, ready to die with laughing, and left him fastened in such a manner that it was impossible for him to get loose.

perhaps, some company of strolling players be within, who frequently wear those crowns and sceptres you talk of: otherwise I do not believe, that in so small and paltry an inn, and where all is so silent, there can be lodged persons worthy to wear crowns and wield sceptres. You know little of the world, replied Don Quixote, if you are ignorant of the accidents which usually happen in knight-errantry. The guests' comrades were tired with the dialogue between him and Don Quixote, and so they knocked again with greater violence, and in such a manner, that the inn-keeper awaked, and all the rest of the people that were in the inn; and the host got up to ask who knocked.

Now it fell out, that one of the four strangers' horses came to smell at Ronnante, who, melancholy and sad, his ears hanging down, bore up his dutiful master without stirring; but being, in short, of flesh, though he seemed to be of wood, he could not but be sensible of it, and smell him again that came so kindly to caress him: and scarcely had he started a step, when Don Quixote's feet slipped, and, tumbling from the saddle, he had fallen to the ground, had he not hung by the arm: which put him to so much torture, that he feared his wrist was coming off, or his arm tearing from his body; yet he hung so near the ground, that he could just reach it with the tip of his toes, which turned to his prejudice; for, feeling how little he wanted to get his feet to the ground, he strove and stretched as much as he could to reach it quite: like those, who are tortured by the strappado, who, being placed at touch or end touch, are themselves the cause of increasing their own pain, by their eagerness to extend themselves, deceived by the hope, that, if they stretch never a little farther, they shall reach the ground.

CHAPTER XLIV

A continuation of the unheard-of adventures of the inn

In short, Don Quixote roared out so terribly, that the host in a fright opened the inn door hastily, to see who it was that made those outcries, nor were the strangers less surprised. Maritornes, who was also waked by the same noise, imagining what it was, went to the straw-loft, and, without anybody's seeing her, untied the halter, which held up Don Quixote, who straight fell to the ground in sight of the innkeeper and the travellers: who, coming up to him, asked him what ailed him, that he so cried out? He without answering a word, slipped the rope from off his wrist, and raising himself upon his feet, mounted Rucifante, braced his target, couched his lance, and taking a good compass about the field, came up at a half-gallop, saying: Whoever shall dare to affirm, that I was fairly enchanted, provided my sovereign lady the princess Micomicona give me leave, I say, he lies, and I challenge him to single combat. The new-comers were amazed at Don Quixote's words; but the innkeeper removed their wonder by telling them who Don Quixote was, and that they should not mind him, for he was beside himself. They then inquired of the host whether there was not in the house a youth of about fifteen years old, habited like a muleteer, with such and such marks, describing the same clothes that Doña Clara's lover had on. The host answered, there were so many people in the inn, that he had not taken particular notice of any such. But one of them, copying the coach the judge came in, said: Without doubt he must be here; for this is the coach it is said he follows: let one of us stay at the door, and the rest go in to look for him; and it would not be amiss for one of us to ride round about the inn, that he

did not speak so low but Doña Clara overheard him: at which she was in such an agony, that, had not Dorothea caught hold of her, she had sunk down to the ground. Cardenio desired Dorothea to go back with Doña Clara to their chamber, while he would endeavour to set matters to rights. Now all the four, who came in quest of Don Louis, were in the inn, and had surrounded him, pressing him to return immediately to comfort his father, without delaying a moment. He answered, that he could in no wise do so, until he had accomplished a business wherein his life, his honour, and his soul, were concerned. The servants urged him, saying they would by no means go back without him, and that they were resolved to carry him whether he would or no. That you shall not do, replied Don Louis, except you kill me; and whichever way you carry me, it will be without life. Most of the people that were in the inn were got together, to hear the contention, particularly Cardenio, Don Fernando and his companions, the judge, the priest, the barber, and Don Quixote, who saw that there was no further need of continuing upon the castle-guard. Cardenio, already knowing the young man's story, asked the men, who were for carrying him away, why they would take away the youth against his will? Because, replied one of the men, we would save the life of his father, who is in danger of losing it by this gentleman's absence. The Don Louis said: There is no need of giving an account of my affairs here; I am free and will go back if I please; and if not, none of you shall move me. But reason will serve you, answered the barber, and though it should not prevail upon you, I shall persuade you to do what we came about, and what we are obliged to. Hold said the judge, let us leave him the business as to the business. Do not let him be long in making a good judgment, answered the priest, but let him have his time, and let him be as long as he pleases. So it was agreed that he should be allowed himself some time to consider, and that

decent garb, as your honour may see. Then the judge observed him more attentively, and, knowing and embracing him, said: What childish frolic is this, Señor Don Louis? or what powerful cause has moved you to come in this manner, and this dress, so little becoming your quality? The tears came into the young gentleman's eyes, and he could not answer a word. The judge bid the servants be quiet, for all would be well; and taking Don Louis by the hand, he went aside with him, and asked him, why he came in that manner?

While the judge was asking this and some other questions, they heard a great outcry at the door of the inn, and the occasion was, that two guests, who had lodged there that night, seeing all the folks busy about knowing what the four men searched for, had attempted to go off without paying their reckoning. But the host, who minded his own business more than other people's, laid hold of them as they were going out of the door, and demanded his money, giving them such hard words for their evil intention, that he provoked them to return him an answer with their fists; which they did so readily, that the poor wakeper was forced to call out for help. The hostess and her daughter, seeing nobody so disengaged, and so proper to succour him, as Don Quixote, the daughter said to him: Sir knight, I beseech you, by the valour God has given you, come and help my poor father, whom a couple of wicked fellows are beating to a mummy. To whom Don Quixote answered, very humbly, and with much phlegm: Fair maiden, your petition cannot be granted at present, because I am preoccupied from intermeddling in any other adventure, until I have accomplished one I have already engaged my word for: but what I can do for your service is, what I will now tell you: run, and bid your father maintain the fight the best he can, and in no wise suffer himself to be vanquished, while I go and ask permission of the princess Micomicona to relieve him in his distress: which if she grants me,

rest assured I will bring him out of it. As I am a sinner, quoth Maritornes, who was then by, before your worship can obtain the license you talk of, my master may be gone into the other world. Permit me, madam, to obtain the license I speak of, answered Don Quixote: for if so be I have it, no matter though he be in the other world; for from thence would I fetch him back, in spite of the other world itself, should it dare to contradict or oppose me; or at least I will take such ample revenge on those, who shall have sent him thither, that you shall be more than moderately satisfied. And, without saying a word more, he went and knelt down before Dorothea, beseeching her, in knightly and errant-like expressions, that her grandeur would vouchsafe to give him leave to go and succour the governor of that castle, who was in grievous distress. The princess gave it him very graciously; and he presently, bracing on his target, and drawing his sword, ran to the inn door, where the two guests were still lugging and worrying the poor host; but when he came he stopped short and stood irresolute, though Maritornes and the hostess asked him why he delayed succouring their master and husband. I delay, quoth Don Quixote, because it is not lawful for me to draw my sword against squire-like folks: but call hither my squire Sancho; for to him this defence and revenge does most properly belong. This passed at the door of the inn, where the boxing and cuffing went about briskly, to the innkeeper's cost, and the rage of Maritornes, the hostess, and her daughter, who were ready to run distracted to behold the cowardice of Don Quixote, and the injury then doing to their master, husband, and father.

But let us leave him there awhile; for he will not want somebody or other to relieve him; or, if not, let him suffer and be silent, who is so foolhardy as to engage in what is above his strength; and let us turn fifty paces back, to see what Don Louis replied to the judge, whom we left apart asking the cause of

his coming on foot, and so meanly apparelled. To whom the youth, squeezing him hard by both hands, as if some great affliction was wringing his heart, and pouring down tears in great abundance, said: All I can say, dear sir, is that, from the moment heaven was pleased by means of our neighbourhood to give us a sight of Doña Clara, your daughter, from that very instant I made her sovereign mistress of my affections: and if you, my true lord and father, do not oppose it, this very day she shall be my wife. For her I left my father's house, and for her I put myself into this dress, to follow her whithersoever she went, as the arrow to the mark, or the mariner to the north star. As yet she knows no more of my passion, than what she may have perceived from now and then seeing at a distance my eyes full of tears. You know, my lord, the wealthiness and nobility of my family, and that I am sole heir: if you think these motives sufficient for you to venture the making me entirely happy, receive me immediately for your son: for, though my father, biased by other views of his own, should not approve of this happiness I have found for myself, time may work some favourable change, and alter his mind. Here the enamoured youth was silent, and the judge remained in suspense, no less surprised at the manner and ingenuity of Don Louis in discovering his passion, than confounded and at a loss what measures to take in so sudden and unexpected an affair: and therefore he returned no other answer, but only bade him be easy for the present, and not let his servants go back that day, that there might be time to consider what was most expedient to be done. Don Louis kissed his hands by force, and even bathed them with tears, enough to soften a heart of marble, and much more that of the judge, who, being a man of sense, soon saw how advantageous and honourable this match would be for his daughter: though, if possible, he would have effected it with the consent of Don Louis's father, who, he knew, had pretensions to a title for his son.

By this time the innkeeper and his guests had made peace, more through the persuasion and arguments of Don Quixote than his threats, and had paid him all he demanded; and the servants of Don Louis were waiting until the judge should have ended his discourse, and their master determined what he would do; when the devil, who sleeps not, so ordered it, that, at that very instant, came into the inn the barber, from whom Don Quixote had taken Mambrino's helmet, and Sancho Panza the ass-furniture, which he trucked for his own: which barber, leading his beast to the stable, espied Sancho Panza, who was mending something about the pannel; and, as soon as he saw him, he knew him, and made bold to attack him, saying: Ah! mister thief, here I got you! give me my basin and my pannel, with all the furniture you robbed me of. Sancho, finding himself attacked so unexpectedly, and hearing the opprobrious language given him, with one hand held fast the pannel, and with the other gave the barber such a down, that he bathed his mouth in blood. But for all that the barber did not let go his hold: on the contrary, he raised his voice in such a manner, that all the folks of the inn ran together at the noise and scuffle; and he cried out: Help, in the king's name, and in the name of justice: for this rogue and highway-robber would murder me for endeavouring to recover my own goods. You lie, answered Sancho, I am no highway-robber: my master Don Quixote won these spoils in fair war. Don Quixote was now present and not a little pleased to see how well his squire performed both on the defensive and offensive, and from thenceforward took him for a man of mettle, and resolved in his mind to dub him a knight the first opportunity that offered, thinking the order of chivalry would be very well bestowed upon him.

Now, among other things, which the barber said during the skirmish, Gentlemen, quoth he, this pannel is as certainly mine as the death I owe to God, and I know it as well as if it were a child of my own

body, and yonder stands my ass in the stable, who will not suffer me to be: pray do but try it, and if it does not fit him to a hair, let me be infamous: and moreover, by the same token, the very day they took this from me, they robbed me likewise of a new brass basin, never handled, that was worth a crown. Here Don Quixote could not forbear answering; and thrusting himself between the two combatants, and percing them, and making them lay down the pannel on the ground in public view, until the truth should be decided, he said: Sirs, you shall presently see clearly and manifestly the error this honest squire is in, in calling that a basin, which was, is, and ever shall be, Mambrino's helmet: I won it in fair war, so am its right and lawful possessor. As to the pannel, I intermeddle not: what I can say of that matter is, that my squire Sancho asked my leave to take the trappings of this conquered coward's horse, to adorn his own withal: I gave him leave; he took them, and, if from horse-trappings they are metamorphosed into an ass's pannel, I can give no other reason for it, but that common one, that these kind of transformations are frequent in adventures of chivalry: for confirmation of which, rub, son Sancho, and fetch hither the helmet, which this honest man will needs have to be a basin. In faith, sir, quoth Sancho, if we have no other proof of our cause but what your worship mentions, Mambrino's helmet will prove as errant a basin, as this honest man's trappings are a pick-saddle. Do what I bid you, replied Don Quixote; for sure all things in this castle cannot be governed by enchantment. Sancho went for the basin and brought it; and as soon as Don Quixote saw it, he took it in his hands and said: Behold, gentlemen, with what face can this squire pretend this to be a basin, and not the helmet I have mentioned? I swear by the order of knighthood, which I profess, this helmet is the very same I took from him, without addition or diminution. There is no doubt of that, quoth Sancho; for, from the time my master won it

THE BARBER'S BOON.

I will at once surmise Jimenez's belief
in a man's soul, and also minister
to his, in his own way.

"Now, gentlemen, says the barber, what is your
part in a man's soul, precisely speaking; for they
say it is not the soul but a habit!
An answer that settles the matter, said Don
Alonso; I will make you know, if he be a knight,
and so you will, if a squire, that he has and he
has a thousand souls (the barber, who was
known at the time and well acquainted with Don
Alonso, began to stand up to work up his medi-
cine for him as he got to make the company
that he is a physician himself to the other barber,
and so, his name, or whatever you are, know,
you are at your profession, and have had my
services of examination above these twenty years,
as we were well acquainted with all the instruments
of surgery without missing one. I have like-
wise been a student in my youthful days, and therefore
you will be a doctor and what a motion or steel
you are what a corpse with its beaver, as well as
a corpse making to sickness. I mean to all kinds
of ailments, and by sickness. And I say (with
words to better judgements) that this
is, which this honest gentleman
not only is not a barber's boon,
being so as white is from black,

and truth from falsehood. I say also that, though it be a helmet, it is not a complete one. No, verily, said Don Quixote, for the beaver that should make half of it, is wanting. It is so, quoth the priest who perceived his friend the barber's design, and Cardenio, Don Fernando, and his companions, confirmed the same: and even the judge had not his thoughts been so taken up about the business of Don Lope, would have helped on the jest, but the concern he was in so employed his thoughts, that he attended but little, or not at all, to these pleasantries.

Lord have mercy upon me! quoth the bantered barber, how is it possible so many honest gentlemen should maintain, that this is not a basin, but a helmet! a thing enough to astonish a whole university, though never so wise: well if this be so be a helmet, then this pannel must needs be a horse's furniture as this gentleman has said. To me it seems indeed to be a pannel, quoth Don Quixote. but I have already told you, I will not intermeddle with the dispute whether it be an ass's pannel or a horse's furniture. All that remains, said the priest, is, that Señor Don Quixote declare his opinion, for in matters of chivalry, all these gentlemen, and myself, yield him the preference. By the living God, gentlemen said Don Quixote, so many and such unaccountable things have befallen me twice that I have lodged in this castle that I dare not venture to touch positively for any thing that may be asked me about it: for I am of opinion, that everything passes in it by the way of enchantment. The first time, I was very much harassed by an enchanted Moor that was in it, and Sancho found little better among some of his followers, and to-night I hung almost two hours by this arm, without being able to guess how I came to fall into that snare. And therefore, for me to meddle now in so confused a business, and to be giving my opinion, would be to spend my judgement rashly. As to the question, whether this be a basin or a helmet, I have already answered: but as to declaring, whether this

trivial and invalid. Let me never enjoy a place in heaven, quoth the bantered barber, if your worship is not all mistaken; and so may my soul appear before God, as this appears to me a pannel, and not a caparison: but, so go the laws—I say no more; and verily I am not drunk, for I am fasting from everything but sin.

The barber's simplicity caused no less laughter than the follies of Don Quixote, who, at this juncture, said: There is now no more to be done, but for every one to take what is his own; and to whom God has given it, may St. Peter give his blessing. One of Don Louis's four servants said: If this be not a premeditated joke, I cannot persuade myself, that men of so good understanding as all here are, or seem to be, should venture to say and affirm, that this is not a head, nor that a pannel: but seeing they do actually say and affirm it, I suspect there must be some mystery in obstinately maintaining a thing so contrary to truth and experience: for, by — (and out he rapped a round ostb), all the men in the world will never persuade me that this is not a barber's skin, and that a jackan's pannel. May it not be the same? quoth the priest. That is all one, said his servant; for the question is only, whether it be, or be not, a pannel, as your worship say. One of the officers of the Holy Brotherhood, who came in, and had overheard the dispute, full of choler and indignation, said: It is as much a pannel as my father's my father; and whoever says, or shall say, to the contrary, must be drunk. You be like a pitiful scoundrel, answered Don Quixote; and, lifting up his lance, which he had never let go out of his hand, he went and gave him such a blow over the head, that had not

‘The laws go as kings with’ a proverb originating in the dispute concerning the Mozarabic and Gallican ritual which were submitted to the test of fire. The Mozarabic ritual survived the ordeal; but Alfonso VI. perjured of the French ritual, threw it into the fire and it was burnt.

the officer slipped aside, he had been laid flat on the spot. The lance was broke to splinters on the ground; and the other officers, seeing their comrade abused, cried out, Help! help the Holy Brotherhood! The innkeeper, who was one of the troop, ran in that instant for his wand and his sword, and prepared himself to stand by his comrades. Don Louis's servants got about him, lest he should escape during that burly-burly. The barber, perceiving the house turned to-joy-torry, laid hold again of his pannel, and Sancho did the same. Don Quixote drew his sword and fell upon the troopers. Don Louis called out to his servants to leave him, and assist Don Quixote, Cardeno, and Don Fernando, who all took part with Don Quixote. The priest cried out, the hostess shrieked, her daughter roared, Maritornes wept, Dorothea was confounded, Laciada stood amazed, and Doña Clara fainted away. The barber cuffed Sancho, and Sancho pummelled the barber. Don Louis gave one of his servants, who laid hold of him by the arm, lest he should escape, such a dash in the chops, that he bathed his mouth in blood. The judge interposed in his defence. Don Fernando got one of the troopers down, and kicked him to his heart's content. The innkeeper reinforced his voice demanding aid for the Holy Brotherhood. Thus the whole inn was nothing but weeping, cries, shrieks, confusions, fears, frights, mischances, ruffa, cudgels, kicks, and effusion of blood. And in the midst of this chaos, this mass, and labyrinth of things, came into Don Quixote's fancy, that he was plunging over head and ears in the discord of king Agramento's camp; and therefore he said, with a voice which made the inn shake: Hold all of you! all put up your swords; be pacified all, and hearken to me, you would all continue alive. At which tremendous voice they all desisted, and he went on, saying: I

* Chief of the Moorish kings who besieged Paris.
Ariosto's Orlando Furioso, xxvii.

I not tell you, sir, that this castle was enchanted, and that some legion of devils must certainly inhabit it in confirmation whereof, I would have you see with your own eyes, how the discord of Agramante's camp is passed over and transferred hither among us; behold, how there they fight for the sword, here for the horse, yonder for the eagle, here again for the helmet; and we all fight, and no one understands one another. Come, therefore, my lord judge, and you, master priest, and let one of you stand for king Agramante, the other for king Sobrino¹, and make peace among us; for, by the eternal God, it is a thousand pities, so many gentlemen of quality, as are here of us, should kill one another for such trivial matters. The troopers, who did not understand Don Quixote's language, and found themselves roughly handled by Don Fernando, Cardenio, and their companions, would not be pacified; but the barber intervened, for both his beard and his pannel were demolished in the scuffle. Eschto, as became a dutiful servant, obeyed the least word of his master. Don Louis's four servants were the quiet, seeing how little they got by being otherwise. The innkeeper alone was refractory, and maintained that the insolence of that madman ought to be chastised, who at every foot turned the inn upside down. At last the bustle ceased for that time; the pannel was to remain a caparvon, the basin a helmet, and the inn a castle, in Don Quixote's imagination, and the Day of Judgement.

Soe all being pacified, and all made friends, by the persuasion of the judge and the priest, Don Louis's servants began again to press him to go with them that moment; and, while they were debating, and ruling the point, the judge consulted Don Fernando, Cardenio, and the priest, what he should do in the emergency, telling them all that Don Louis had said. At last it was agreed, that Don Fernando should tell Don Louis's servants who he was, and that it was his desire that Don Louis should go along with him

¹ An ally of Agramante's.

to raise the fallen and cast-down, and to relieve the needy and distressed! Ah, scornful face! understanding, by the meanness and baseness of your undertakings, that heaven should reveal to you the worth inherent in knight-errantry, or make you sensible of your own sin and ignorance in not reverencing the very shadow, and much more the presence, of any knight-errant whatever! Come hither, ye rogues in a troop, and not troopers; highwaymen with the licence of the Holy Brotherhood; tell me, who was the blackhead that signed the warrant for apprehending such a knight-errant as I am? Who was he that knew not that knights-errant are exempt from all judicial authority, that their sword is their law, their bravery their privilege, and their will their edicts? Who was the madman, I say again, that is ignorant that no patent of gentility contains so many privileges and exemptions, as are acquired by the knight-errant the day he is dubbed, and gives himself up to the rigorous exercise of chivalry? What knight-errant ever paid custom, poll-tax, subsidy, quit-rent, portage, or ferry-boat? What tailor ever brought in a bill for making his clothes? What governor, that lodged him in his castle, ever made him pay a reckoning? What king did not seat him at his table? what damsel was not in love with him, and did not yield herself up to his whole pleasure and will? and lastly, what knight-errant has there ever been, is, or shall be, in the world, who has not courage singly to bestow four hundred bastinadoes, on four hundred troopers of the Holy Brotherhood, that shall dare to present themselves before him?

CHAPTER XLVI

In which is finished the notable adventure of the troopers of the Holy Brotherhood ; with the great ferocity of our good knight, Don Quixote.

WHILE Don Quixote was talking at this rate, the priest was endeavouring to persuade the troopers that Don Quixote was out of his wits, as they might easily perceive by what he did, and said that they need not give themselves any further trouble upon that subject; for, though they should apprehend and carry him away, they must soon release him, as being a madman. To which the officer that had produced the warrant answered, that it was no business of his to judge of Don Quixote's madness, but to obey the orders of his superior, and that, when he had once secured him, they might set him free three hundred times if they pleased. For all that, said the priest, for this once you must not take him, nor do I think he will suffer himself to be taken. In effect, the priest said so much, and Don Quixote did such extravagances, that the officers must have been more mad than he, had they not discovered his infirmity; and therefore they judged it best to be quiet, and moreover to be mediators for making peace between the barber and Sancho Panza, who still continued their scuffle with great rancour. At last they, as officers of justice, compounded the matter, and arbitrated it in such a manner, that both parties rested, if not entirely contented, at least somewhat satisfied; for they exchanged pannels, but not girths nor halteres. As for Mambrino's helmet, the priest, underhand and unknown to Don Quixote, gave eight reals for the basin, and the barber gave him a discharge in full, acquitting him of all fraud from henceforth and for evermore, Amen.

These two quarrels, as being the chief, and of the

greatest wright, being thus made up, it remained, that three of Don Louis's servants should be contented to return home, and leave one of their fellows behind to wait upon him, whithersoever Don Fernando pleased to carry him. And, as now good luck and better fortune had begun to pave the way, and smooth the difficulties, in favour of the lovers and heroes of the inn, so fortune would carry it quite through, and crown all with prosperous success: for the servants were contented to do as Don Louis commanded, wherest Doda Clara was so highly pleased, that nobody could look in her face without discovering the joy of her heart. Zoraida, though she did not understand all she saw, yet grew sad or cheerful in conformity to what she observed in their several countenances, especially that of her Spaniard, on whom her eyes were fixed, and her soul depended. The innkeeper, observing what recompense the priest had made the barber, demanded Don Quixote's reckoning, with ample satisfaction for the damage done to his skins, and the loss of his wine, swearing, that neither Roderigo nor the ass should stir out of the inn, until he had paid the uttermost farthing. The priest pacified him, and Don Fernando paid him all; though the judge very generously offered payment: and thus they all remained in peace and quietness, and the inn appeared no longer the discord of Agramante's camp, as Don Quixote had called it, but peace itself, and the very tranquillity of Octavius Cæsar's days: and it was the general opinion, that all this was owing to the good intention and great eloquence of the priest, and the incomparable liberality of Don Fernando.

Don Quixote, now finding himself freed, and clear of so many quarrels both of his squire's and his own, thought it was high time to pursue his voyage, and put an end to that grand adventure, wherunto he had been called and elected: and therefore, being resolutely determined, he went and knelt to Dorothea, who would not suffer him to speak a

word until he stood up; which he did in obedience to her, and said: It is a common saying, fair lady, that 'diligence is the mother of good success', and experience has shown, in many and weighty matters, that the care of the solicitor brings the doubtful suit to a happy issue: but this truth is in nothing more evident than in matters of war, in which expedition and dispatch prevent the designs of the enemy, and carry the victory, before the adversary is in a posture to defend himself. All this, I say, high and deserving lady, because our abode in this castle seems to me now no longer necessary, and may be so far prejudicial, that we may repent it one day: for who knows but your enemy the giant may, by secret and diligent spies, get intelligence of my coming to destroy him? and time, giving him opportunity, he may fortify himself in some impregnable castle or fortress, against which my industry, and the force of my unwearied arm may little avail. And therefore, sovereign lady, let us prevent, as I have said, his designs by our diligence, and let us depart quickly in the name of good fortune, which you can want no longer than I delay to encounter your enemy. Here Don Quixote was silent, and said no more, expecting with great eagerness the answer of the beautiful Infanta, who, with an air of grandeur, and in a style accommodated to that of Don Quixote, answered in this manner: I am obliged to you, Sir Knight, for the inclination you show to serve me in my great need, like a true knight, whose office and employment it is to succour the orphans and distressed, and heaven grant that your desire and mine be soon accomplished, that you may see there are some grateful women in the world. As to my departure, let it be instantly: for I have no other will but yours, and, pray, dispose of me entirely at your own pleasure; for she who has once committed the defence of her person, and the restoration of her dominions, into your hands, must not contradict whatever your wisdom shall direct. In the name of God, good Don Quixote, since it is so, that a lady

this, sir, because, supposing that, after we have travelled through thick and thin, and passed many bad nights and worse days, one, who is now solacing himself in the inn, should chance to reap the fruit of our labours. I need be in no haste to saddle Rosinante, nor to get the ass and the palfrey ready; for we had better be quiet; and let every drab mind her spinning, and let us to dinner. Good God! how great was the indignation of Don Quixote at hearing his squire speak thus disrespectfully! I say it was so great, that, with speech stammering, tongue faltering, and brass fire darting from his eyes, he said: Scoundrel! dawning, unmannerly, ignorant, ill-spoken, foul-mouthed, impudent, murmuring, and back-biting villain! darrest thou utter such words in my presence, and in the presence of these illustrious ladies? and hast thou dared to entertain such rude and insolent thoughts in thy confused imagination? Avoid my presence, monster of nature, treasury of lies, magazine of deceits, storehouse of rogueries, inventor of machiefs, publisher of absurdities, and enemy of the respect due to royal personages! Begone! appear not before me on pain of my indignation! And in saying this, he arched his brows, pulled his cheeks, stared round about him, and gave a violent stamp with his right foot on the floor; all manifest tokens of the rage locked up in his breast. At whose words and furious gestures Sancho was so frightened, that he would have been glad the earth had opened that instant, and swallowed him up. And he knew not what to do but to turn his back, and get out of the enraged presence of his master.

But the discreet Dorothea, who so perfectly understood Don Quixote's humour, to pacify his wrath, said: Be not offended, good Sir Knight of the Sorrowful Figure, at the follies your good squire has uttered; for, perhaps, he has not said them without some ground; nor can it be suspected, considering his good understanding and Christian conscience, that he would slander, or bear false witness against any



being convinced he had been tossed in the blanket by persons of flesh and blood, and not by imaginary or visionary phantoms, as his master supposed and affirmed.

Two days had already passed since all this illustrious company had been in the inn; and thinking it now time to depart, they contrived how, without giving Dorothea and Don Fernando the trouble of going back with Don Quixote to his village, under pretence of restoring the Queen of Micomicon, the priest and the barber might carry him as they desired, and endeavour to get him cured of his madness at home. While this was in agitation, Don Quixote was laid down upon a bed to repose himself after his late fatigues; and in the meantime they agreed with a waggoner, who chanced to pass by with his team of oxen, to carry him in this manner. They made a kind of cage with poles, grate-work, large enough to contain Don Quixote at his ease: and immediately Don Fernando and his companions, with Don Louis's servants, and the officers of the Holy Brotherhood, together with the innkeeper, all by the contrivance and direction of the priest, covered their faces, and disguised themselves, some one way, some another, so as to appear to Don Quixote to be quite other persons than those he had seen in that castle. This being done, with the greatest silence they entered the room where Don Quixote lay fast asleep, and not dreaming of any such accident; and laying fast hold of him, they bound him hand and foot, so that, when he awoke with a start, he could not stir, nor do anything but look round him, and wonder to see such strange viages about him. And presently he fell into the usual conceit that his disordered imagination was perpetually presenting to him, believing that all those shapes were goblins of that enchanted castle, and that, without all doubt, he must be enchanted, since he could not stir nor defend himself: all precisely as the priest, the projector of the stratagem, fancied it would fall out. Sancho alone, of all that

the footsteps of the valorous and enchanted knight, for it is expedient for you to go where you may both rest: and because I am permitted to say no more, God be with you: for I return I well know whither. And, at finishing the prophecy, he raised his voice very high, and then sunk it by degrees, with so soft an accent, that even they who were in the secret of the jest were almost ready to believe that what they heard was true.

Don Quixote remained much comforted by the prophecy he had heard; for he presently comprehended the whole signification thereof, and saw that it promised he should be joined in holy and lawful wedlock with his beloved Dulcinea del Toboso, from whose happy womb should issue the whelps, his sons, to the everlasting honour of La Mancha. And, with this firm persuasion, he raised his voice, and, fetching a deep sigh, he said: O thou, whoever thou art, who hast prognosticated me so much good, I beseech thee to entreat, on my behalf, the sage enchanter, who has the charge of my affairs, that he suffer me not to perish in this prison, wherein I am now carried, until I see accomplished those joyous and incomparable promises now made me: for, so they come to pass, I shall account the pains of my imprisonment glory, the chains with which I am bound refreshment, and this couch, whereon I am laid, not a hard field of battle, but a soft bridal bed of down. And, as touching the consolation of Sancho Panza, my squire, I trust in his goodness and integrity, that he will not forsake me, either in good or evil fortune. And though it should fall out, through his or my hard hap, that I should not be able to give him the island, or something else equivalent, that I have promised him, at least he cannot lose his wages; for in my will, which is already made, I have declared what shall be given him, not indeed proportionable to his many and good services, but according to my own poor ability. Sancho Panza bowed with great respect, and kissed both his master's hands: for one alone he could not,

DON QUIXOTE

both being tied together. Then the goblins set the cage on their shoulders, and placed it on the ground.

CHAPTER XLVII

The strange and wonderful manner in which Don Quixote de la Mancha was enchanted, with other marvellous occurrences.

DON QUIXOTE, finding himself cooped up in this manner, and placed upon a cart, said: Many and grave histories have I read of knights-errant; I never read, saw, or heard of enchanted knights being carried away after this manner, and so slowly these lazy, heavy animals seem to promise. For I always used to be carried through the air with marvellous speed, wrapped up in some thick and dark cloud, or in some chariot of fire, or mounted upon a pegasus, or some such beast. But to be carried by a team drawn by oxen, by the living God, it puts me into confusion! But, perhaps, the chivalry and enchantments of these our times may have taken a different turn from those of the ancients; and perhaps, as I am a new knight in the world, and the first to have revived the long-forgotten exercise of knight-errantry, there may have been lately invented new kinds of enchantments, and other methods of carrying away those that are enchanted. What say you of this, son Sancho? I do not know what to think, answered Sancho, not being so well read as his master, in worship in scriptures-errant. Yet I dare affirm and swear, that these hobgoblins here about us are not either Catholic or Catholic! my father! answered Don Quixote; how can they be Catholic, being devils, have assumed fantastic shapes, on purpose to deceive me and put me into this state? And if you would be convinced of this, touch them and feel them, and you will find they have no bodies but of air, consisting

in nothing but appearance only. Before God, my nephew Sancho, I have already touched them, and the devil, who is so very busy here about us, is as plump as a partridge, and has another property very different from what people say your devils are wont to have: for it is said, they all smell of brimstone, and other worse scents; but this spark smells of amber at half a league's distance. Sancho meant this of Don Fernando, who being a cavalier of such quality, must have smelt as Sancho hinted. Wonder not at it, friend Sancho, answered Don Quixote; for you must know that the devils are a knowing sort of people, and, supposing they do carry perfumes about them, they have no scents in themselves, because they are spirits: or, if they do smell, it can be nothing that is good, but of something bad and stinking: and the reason is, because, let them be where they will, they carry their hell about them, and can receive no kind of ease from their torments: now, a perfume being a thing delightful and pleasing, it is not possible they should smell of so good a thing: and if you think that this devil smells of amber, either you deceive yourself, or he would deceive you, that you may not take him for a devil. All this discourse passed between the master and the man: and Don Fernando and Cardenio, fearing lest Sancho should light upon their plot, he being already in the pursuit, and pretty far advanced towards it, they resolved to hasten their departure, and, calling the innkeeper aside, they ordered him to saddle Rocinante and pannel the ass, which he did with great expedition.

In the meanwhile the priest had agreed, for so much a day, with the troopers of the Holy Brotherhood, that they should accompany Don Quixote home to his village. Cardenio took care to hang the buckler on one side, and the basin on the other, of the pommel of Rocinante's saddle, and made signs to Sancho to mount his ass, and take Rocinante by the bridle, and placed two troopers with their carbines on each side of the wagon. But, before the car moved forward,

the hostess, her daughter, and Maritornes, came out to take their leave of Don Quixote, pretending to shed tears for grief at his misfortune; to whom Don Quixote said: Weep not, my good ladies; for these kind of mishaps are incident to those who profess what I profess; and if such calamities did not befall me, I should not take myself for a knight-errant of any considerable fame: for such accidents as these never happen to knights of little name and reputation, since nobody in the world thinks of them at all: but to the valorous indeed they often fall out; for many princes and other knights, curious of their extraordinary virtue and courage, are constantly endeavouring by indirect ways to destroy them. Notwithstanding all which, so powerful is virtue, that of herself alone, in spite of all the necromancy that its first inventor, Zoroaster, ever knew, she will come off victorious from every encounter, and spread her lustre round the world, as the sun does over the heavens. Pardon me, fair ladies, if I have, through inadvertency, done you any displeasure; for willingly and knowingly I never offended anybody: and pray to God, that he would deliver me from these bonds, into which some evil-minded enchanter has thrown me; for, if ever I find myself at liberty, I shall not forget the favours you have done me in this castle, but shall acknowledge and requite them as they deserve.

While this passed between the ladies of the castle and Don Quixote, the priest and the barber took their leave of Don Fernando and his companions, and of the captain and his brother the judge, and of all the now happy ladies, especially of Dorothea and Lucinda. They all embraced, promising to give each other an account of their future fortunes. Don Fernando gave the priest directions where to write to him, and acquaint him with what became of Don Quixote, assuring him that nothing would afford him more pleasure than to know it; and that, on his part, he would inform of whatever might amuse or interest him, either in relation to his own marriage, or

the baptizing of Zoraida, as also concerning Don Louis's success, and Locinda's return to her parents. The priest promised to perform all that was desired of him with the utmost punctuality. They again embraced, and renewed their mutual offers of service. The innkeeper came to the priest, and gave him some papers, telling him he found them in the lining of the wallet, in which the novel of the *Curious Impertinent* was found, and since the owner had never come back that way, he might take them all with him; for, as he could not read, he had no desire to keep them. The priest thanked him, and, opening the papers, found at the head of them this title, *The Novel of Rinconete and Cortadillo*¹; from whence he concluded it must be some tale, and imagined, because that of the *Curious Impertinent* was a good one, this must be so too, it being probable they were both written by the same author: and therefore he kept it with a design to read it when he had an opportunity. Then he and his friend the barber mounted on horseback, with their masks on, that Don Quixote might not know them, and placed themselves behind the wagon; and the order of the cavalcade was this. First marched the car, guided by the owner; on each side went the troopers with their firelocks, as has been already said; then followed Sancho upon his ass, leading Rinconete by the bridle: the priest and the barber brought up the rear on their pumental mules, and their faces masked, with a grave and solemn air, marching no faster than the slow pace of the oxen allowed. Don Quixote sat in the cage, with his hands tied, and his legs stretched out, leaning against the bars, with as much patience and silence, as if he had not been a man of flesh and blood, but a statue of stone. And thus, with the same slowness and silence, they travelled about two leagues, when they came to a valley, which the wagoner thought a convenient place for resting and baring his cattle;

¹ A picaresque story published in Cervantes's *Novelas exemplares* (1613).

and acquainting the priest with his purpose, the barber was of opinion they should travel a little farther, telling them, that behind a rising ground not far off, there was a vale that afforded more and much better grass than that in which they had a mind to stop. They took the barber's advice, and so went on.

Now the priest, happening to turn his head about, perceived behind them about six or seven horsemen, well mounted and accoutred, who soon came up with them; for they travelled, not with the pælegm and slowness of the oxen, but as persons mounted on ecclesiastical mules, and in haste to arrive quickly, and pass the heat of the day in the inn, which appeared to be not a league off. The speedy overtook the slow, and the companies saluted each other courteously; and one of the travellers, who, in short, was a canon of Toledo, and master of the rest, observing the orderly procession of the wagon, the troopers, Sancho, Rouseante, the priest, and the barber, and especially Don Quixote, caged up and imprisoned, could not forbear inquiring what was the meaning of carrying that man in that manner; though he already guessed, by seeing the badges of the Holy Brotherhood, that he must be some notorious robber, or other criminal, the punishment of whom belonged to that fraternity. One of the troopers, to whom the question was put, answered thus: Sir, if you would know the meaning of this gentleman's going in this manner, let him tell you himself; for we know nothing of the matter. Don Quixote overheard the discourse, and said: If perchance, gentlemen, you are versed and skilled in matters of chivalry, I will acquaint you with my misfortunes; but if not, I need not trouble myself to recount them. By this time the priest and the barber, perceiving the travellers were in discourse with Don Quixote de la Mancha, were come close up, to be ready to give such an answer as might prevent the discovery of their plot. The canon, in answer to what Don Quixote said, replied: In truth, brother, I am more conversant in books of chivalry than in

Villalpando's *Summoner*¹, so that, if that be all, you may safely communicate to me whatever you please. With heaven's permission, replied Don Quixote, since it is so, you must understand, señor cavalier, that I am enchanted in this cage, through the envy and fraud of wicked necromancers; for virtue is more persecuted by the wicked than beloved by the good. A knight-errant I am, not one of those whose names time has forgot to eternalize, but one of those, who, meagre and in despite of envy itself, and of all the malicious Furies ever bred, the Brahmins of India, and the gymnosophists of Ethiopia, shall enroll his name in the temple of immortality, to serve as an example and mirror to future ages, in which knights-errant may see the track they are to follow, if they are ambitious of reaching the honourable summit and pinnacle of arms. Señor Don Quixote de la Mancha says the truth, quoth the priest at this time; for he goes enchanted in this wagon, not through his own fault or dement, but through the malice of those to whom virtue is odious, and courage offensive. This, sir, is the Knight of the Sorrowful Figure, if ever you have heard him spoken of, whose valorous exploits and heroic deeds shall be written on solid brass and everlasting marble, though envy take never so much pains to obscure them, and malice to conceal them. When the canon heard him that was imprisoned, and him at liberty, both talk in such a style, he was ready to crowd himself with amazement, not being able to imagine what had befallen him; and all his followers were in equal admiration.

Now Sancho, being come up to them, and overhearing their discourse, to set all to rights, said: Look ye, gentlemen, let it be well or ill taken, I will out with it: the truth of the case is, my master, Don Quixote, is just as much enchanted as my mother; he is in his perfect senses, he eats, and drinks, and does his occasions like other men, and as he did yesterday before they cooped him up. This being so, will

¹ Published at Alcalá de Henares in 1537.

you persuade me he is enchanted? Have I not many people say, that persons enchanted neither sleep, nor speak? and my master, if nobody told him, will talk ye more than thirty barristers, turning his eyes on the priest, he went on. Ah, master priest, master priest, do you think I do not know you? and think you I do not perceive what these new enchantments drive at? me tell you I know you, though you disgust me never so much: and I would have you to understand you, though you manage your advances never so slyly. In short, virtue cannot where envy reigns, nor liberality subsist where hardness. Evil befall the devil! had it not your reverence, my master had been married time to the infanta Micomicona, and I had earl at least: for I could expect no less, as the generosity of my master, the Knight of the sorrowful Figure, as from the greatness of my But I find the proverb true, that 'the wheel turns swifter than a mill-wheel', and they, yesterday at the top, are to-day on the bottom: I am grieved for my poor wife and children: they might reasonably expect to see their father home a governor or viceroy of some island. All this that I have said, master priest, tended to put your paternity in mind of the conscience of the evil treatment of my master: take heed that God does not call you to account in the next life for this imprisonment of me, require at your hands all those succours good he might have done, during this confinement. Suffice me three candles, quoth he at this juncture: what! Sancho, remember of your master's confraternity? as God be, I began to think you are likely to keep company in the cage, and to be as much rewarded, for your share of his humour and folly. In an evil hour were you with child by

and in an evil hour the island you so long for entered into your pate. I am not with child by anybody, answered Sancho, nor am I a man to suffer myself to be got with child by the best king that may be; and though I am a poor man, I am an Old Christian, and owe nobody anything: and if I covet islands, there are others who covet worse things; and every one is the son of his own works; and, being a man, I may come to be Pope, and much more easily governor of an island, especially since my master may win so many, that he may be at a loss on whom to bestow them. I pray, master barber, take heed what you say; for shaving of beards is not all, and there is some difference between Pedro and Poldo. I say this because we know one another, and there is no putting false dice upon me: as for my master's enchantment, God knows the truth, and let that rest; for it is the worse for stirring. The barber would not answer Sancho, lest, by his simplicity, he should discover what he and the priest took so many pains to conceal; and for the same reason the priest desired the canon to get on a little before, and he would let him into the secret of the engaged gentleman, with other particulars that would divert him.

The canon did so, and rode on before with his servants, listening to all the priest had to tell him of the quality, manner of life, and customs of Don Quixote: recounting to him briefly the beginning and cause of his distraction, with the whole progress of his adventures, to the putting him into that cage, and the design they had to carry him home, and try if by any means they might find a cure for his madness. The servants admired afresh, and the canon also, to hear the strange history of Don Quixote; and when he had heard it all, he said to the priest: Truly, sir, I am convinced that those they call books of chivalry are prejudicial to the common weal; and though, led away by an idle and false taste, I have read the beginning of almost all that are printed, I could never prevail with myself to read any of them

expatiate without any let or incumbrance, describing shipwrecks, tempests, encounters, and battles; delineating a valiant captain with all the qualifications requisite to make him such, showing his prudence in preventing the stratagems of his enemy, his eloquence in persuading or disuading his soldiers; mature in council, prompt in execution, equally brave in expecting as in attacking the enemy; sometimes painting a sad and tragical accident, then a joyful and unexpected event; here a most beautiful lady, modest, discreet, and reserved; there a Christian knight, valiant, and courteous; now an unruly and barbarous braggadocio; then an affable, valiant, and good-natured prince; describing the goodness and loyalty of subjects, the greatness and generosity of nobles. Then again he may show himself an excellent astronomer or geographer, a musician, or a statesman; and, some time or other, he may have an opportunity, if he pleases, of showing himself a necromancer. He may set forth the subtlety of Ulysses, the piety of Aeneas, the bravery of Achilles, the misfortune of Hector, the treachery of Simon, the friendship of Euryalus, the liberality of Alexander, the valour of Caesar, the clemency and probity of Trajan, the fidelity of Zopyrus, the wisdom of Cato, and finally all those actions which may serve to make an illustrious person perfect; sometimes placing them in one person alone, then dividing them among many; and this being done in a smooth and agreeable style, and with ingenious invention, approaching as near as possible to truth, will, doubtless, weave a web of such various and beautiful texture, that, when it is finished, the perfection and excellency thereof may attain to the ultimate end of writing, that is, both to instruct and delight, as I have already said: because the unconfined way of writing these books gives an author room to show his skill in the epic or lyric, in tragedy or comedy, with all the parts included in the sweet charming science of poetry and oratory: for the same may be written as well in prose as in verse.

CHAPTER XLVIII

In which the canon prosecutes the subject of books of chivalry, with other matters worthy of his pen.

It is as you say, sir, quoth the priest to the canon ; and for this reason, those who have hitherto composed such books are the more to blame, proceeding, as they do, without any regard to good sense, or art, or to those rules, by the observation of which they might become as famous in prose as the two princes of the Greek and Latin poetry are in verse. I myself, replied the canon, was once tempted to write a book of knight-errantry, in which I purposed to observe all the restrictions I have mentioned ; and, to confess the truth, I had gone through above a hundred sheets of it : and, to try whether they answered my own opinion of them, I communicated them to some learned and judicious persons, who were very fond of this kind of reading, and to other persons who were ignorant, and regarded only the pleasure of reading extravagances ; and I met with a kind approbation from all of them : nevertheless I would proceed no farther, as well in regard that I looked upon it as a thing foreign to my profession, as because the number of the unwise is greater than that of the prudent : and though it is better to be praised by the few wise than mocked by a multitude of fools, yet I am unwilling to expose myself to the confused judgement of the giddy vulgar, to whose lot the reading [of] such books for the most part falls. But that which chiefly moved me to lay it aside, and to think no more of finishing it, was an argument I formed to myself, deduced from the modern comedies that are daily represented, saying : Of those nowadays in fashion, whether fictitious or historical, all, or most of them, are known absurdities, and things without head or tail, and yet the vulgar take a pleasure in listening to them, and maintain

and approve them for good: and the authors who compose, and the actors who represent them, say, such they must be, because the people will have them so, and so otherwise; and those which are regular, and carry on the plot according to the rules of art, serve only for half a score men of sense, who understand them, while all the rest are at a loss, and can make nothing of the contrivance; and for their part, it is better for them to get bread by the many than reputation by the few: then, probably, it would have fared with my book, after I had burnt my eyebrows with poring to follow the aforesaid precepts, and I should have got nothing but my labour for my pains'. And though I have often endeavoured to convince the actors of their mistake, and that they would draw more company, and gain more credit, by acting plays written according to art than by such ridiculous pieces, they are so attached and wedded to their own opinion, that no reason, nor even demonstration, can wrest it from them. I remember, that, talking one day to one of these headstrong fellows, Tell me, said I, do you not remember that, a few years ago there were three tragedies acted in Spain, composed by a famous poet of this kingdom, which were such, that they surprised, delighted, and raised the admiration of all who saw them, as well the ignorant as the judicious, as well the vulgar as the better sort: and that these alone got the players more money than any part of the best that have been written since? That man answered the actor I speak of, you would never see the *Inubella*, *Phylis*, and *Lisimachus*. He said it pined I; and pray you, whether they did not exactly observe the rules of art, and whether the ladies threw from appearing what they really were, and not pleasing all the world. So that the fault is not in the people's coveting absurdities, but in those who write

of them. 'Tis that he like the other of Don Quixote's
was working for nothing, and now knows it. I have
seen it. I have seen it. I have seen it.

not how to exhibit anything better: for there is nothing absurd in the play of *Ingratitude Rewarded*¹, nor in the *Nemesis*²; nor can you find any in the *Merchant Lover*³, much less in the *Favourable Sycemoy*⁴, and in some others, composed by ingenious and judicious poets to their own fame and renown, and to the advantage of those who acted them. And to these I added other reasons, at which I fancied he was somewhat confounded, but not convinced nor satisfied, so as to make him retract his erroneous opinion.

Señor canon, said then the priest, you have touched upon a subject, which has awakened in me an old grudge I bear to the comedies now in vogue, equal to that I have against books of chivalry: for, whereas comedy, according to the opinion of Cicero, ought to be a mirror of human life, an exemplar of manners, and an image of truth, those that are represented nowadays are mirrors of inconsistency, patterns of folly, and images of wantonness. For what greater absurdity can there be in the subject we are treating of than for a child to appear, in the first scene of the first act, in swaddling clothes, and in the second enter a grown man with a beard? and what can be more fabulous than to draw the character of an old man valiant, a young man a coward, a footman a rhetorician, a page a privy-counsellor, a king a water-carrier, and a princess a scullion? Then what shall we say to their observance of the time and place in which the actions they represent are supposed to have happened? I have seen a comedy, the first act of which was laid in Europe, the second in Asia, and the third in Africa; and, had there been four acts, the fourth would doubtless have concluded in America; and so the play

¹ By Lope de Vega.

² By Orraxton.

³ By Gaspar de Aguilas, a dramatist of the Valencian school.

⁴ By Francisco Turró, also a dramatist of the Valencian school.

would have taken in all the four parts of the world. If imitation be the principal thing required in comedy, how is it possible any tolerable understanding can endure to see an action, which passed in the time of king Pepin or Charlemagne, ascribed to the emperor Heraclius, who is introduced carrying the cross into Jerusalem, or recovering the holy sepulchre, like Godfrey of Bouillon; numberless years having passed between these actions: and besides, the comedy being grounded upon a fiction, to see truths applied out of history, with a mixture of facts relating to different persons and times; and all this with no appearance of probability, but, on the contrary, full of manifest and altogether inexcusable errors? But the worst of it is, that some are so besotted as to call this perfection, and to say, that all besides is mere pedantry. If we come to the comedies upon divine subjects, how many false miracles do they invent, how many apocryphal and ill-understood, ascribing to one saint the miracles of another? and even in the plays upon profane subjects, the authors take upon them to work miracles, for no other reason in the world, but because they think such a miracle will do well, and make a figure in such a place, that ignorant people may admire, and be induced to see the comedy. Now all this is to the prejudice of truth, and discredit of history, and even to the reproach of our Spanish wits; for foreigners, who observe the laws of comedy with great punctuality, take us for barbarous and ignorant, seeing the absurdities and extravagances of those we write. It would not be a sufficient excuse to say, that the principal intent of well-governed commonwealths, in permitting stage-plays to be acted, is, that the populace may be entertained with some innocent recreation, to divert, at times, the ill humours which idleness is wont to produce; and since this end may be attained by any play, whether good or bad, there is no need of prescribing laws, or confining those who write or act them to the strict rules of composition, since, as I have said, any of

them serve to compass the end proposed by them. To this I would answer, that this end is, beyond all comparison, much better attained by those that are good than by those that are not so, for the hearer, after attending to an artful and well-contrived play, would go away diverted by what is witty, instructed by what is serious, in admiration at the incidents, improved by the reasoning, forewarned by the frauds, made wise by the examples, increased against vice, and in love with virtue: for a good comedy will awaken all these passions in the mind of the hearer, let him be never so gross or stupid. And, of all impossibilities, it is the most impossible not to be pleased, entertained, and satisfied much more with that comedy which has all these requisites, than by one which is defective in them, as most of our comedies nowadays are. Nor is this abuse to be charged chiefly on the poets themselves; for there are some among them who know very well wherein they err, and are perfectly acquainted with what they ought to do: but, as plays are made a saleable commodity, they say, and they say right, that the actors would not buy them, if they were not of that stamp: and therefore the poet endeavours to accommodate himself to what is required by the player, who is to pay him for his work. And, that this is the truth, may be evinced by the infinite number of plays composed by a most happy genius of these kingdoms¹, with so much sprightliness, such elegant verse, expressions so good, and such excellent sentiments, and lastly with such richness of elocution, and loftiness of style, that the world resounds with his fame. Yet, by his sometimes adapting himself to the taste of the actors, they have not all reached that point of perfection that some of them have done. Others, in writing plays, so little consider what they are doing, that the actors are often under the necessity of abdicating for fear of being punished, as has frequently happened, for having acted things to the prejudice of the crown, or the

¹ Lope de Vega.

must be, that they who have enchanted me, have assumed that appearance and likeness: for enchanters can easily take what form they please, and may have taken that of our two friends, in order to make you think as you do, and to invite you in such a labyrinth of imaginations, that you shall not be able to find your way out though you had Theseus's clue. Besides, they may have done it to make me also waver in judgement, and not be able to guess from what quarter this injury comes. For, if on the one side, you me that the priest and the barber of our village are us company, and, on the other side, I find myself locked up in a cage, and know of myself, the force but that which is supernatural could be sufficient to imprison me; what can I say or think, but the manner of my enchantment exceeds all I ever read of in the histories of knights-errant have been enchanted? so that you may set your heart at rest as to their being what you say they are just as much so as I am a Turk. What concerns your asking me questions, ask for I will answer you, though you should come asking from this time until to-morrow morning. Blessed Virgin! answered Sancho, raising his head, and is it then possible your worship can be so skulled and devoid of brains, that you cannot perceive what I tell you to be the very truth, and that there is more roguery than enchantment in this condition and disgrace of yours: and seeing it is so, I will most evidently that you are really not enchanted. Now tell me, as God shall save you from this, and as you hope to find yourself in my lady Dulcinea, when you least think of it— Cease, said Don Quixote, and ask what question you will: for I have already told you I will answer you with the utmost punctuality. That is what have you do, replied Sancho; and what I mind to know, is, that you tell me, without diminishing a tittle, and with all truth and as is expected from, and practised by, all w

the exercise of arms, as your worship does, under the title of knights-errant.— I tell you I will be in nothing, answered Don Quixote; therefore, make either a beginning or an end of asking; for, in truth, you tire me out with so many *salvos*, *postulatums*, and *preparatives*, Sancho. I say, replied Sancho, that I am fully satisfied of the goodness and veracity of my master, and, that being to the purpose in our affair, I ask, with respect be it spoken, whether, since your being cooped up, or, as you say, enchanted in this cage, your worship has not had an inclination to open the greater or the lesser sluices, as people are wont to say? I do not understand, Sancho, said Don Quixote, what you mean by opening sluices: explain yourself, if you would have me give you a direct answer. Is it possible, quoth Sancho, your worship should not understand that phrase, when the very children at school are weaned with it? know then, it means, whether you have not had a mind to do what nobody can do for you? Aye, now I comprehend you, Sancho, said Don Quixote; and, in truth, I have often had such a mind, and have at this very instant: help me out of this strait; for I doubt all is not so clean as it should be.

CHAPTER XLIX

Of the ingenious conference between Sancho Panza and his master Don Quixote.

Hail quoth Sancho, now I have caught you: this is what I longed to know with all my heart and soul. Come on, sir, can you deny what is commonly said everywhere, when a person is in the dumps; I know not what such or such a one ails; he neither eats, nor drinks, nor sleeps, nor answers to the purpose when he is asked a question; he looks as if he were enchanted. From whence it is concluded, that they who do not eat, nor drink, nor sleep, nor perform the

they are, I throw the very best of them against the wall, and should into the fire, had I one near me, as well deserving such a punishment, for being false and intriguing, and out of the road of common sense, as broachers of new sects and new ways of life, and as giving occasion to the ignorant vulgar to believe, and look upon as truths, the multitude of absurdities they contain. Nay, they have the presumption to dare to disturb the understandings of ingenious and well-born gentlemen, as is but too notorious in the effect they have had upon your worship, having reduced you to such a pass, that you are forced to be shut up in a cage, and carried on a team from place to place, like some lion or tiger, to be shown for money. Ah, Señor Don Quixote, have pity on yourself, and return into the bosom of discretion, and learn to make use of those great abilities heaven has been pleased to bestow upon you, by employing that happy talent you are blessed with in some other kind of reading, which may redound to the benefit of your conscience, and to the increase of your honour. But if a strong natural impulse must still lead you to books of exploits and chivalries, read, in the holy scripture, the Book of Judges, where you will meet with wonderful truths, and achievements no less true than heroic. Portugal had a Viriatus, Rome a Cæsar, Carthage a Hannibal, Greece an Alexander, Castile a Count Fernan Gonzalez¹, Valencia a Cal, Andalusia a Gonzalo Hernandez, Extremadura a Diego Garcia de Paredes², Xeres a Garri Perez de Vargas³, Toledo a Garcilaso⁴, and Sevilla a Don Manuel de

¹ Commemorated in the *Poema de Fernan Gonzalez*: he died in 910.

² Mentioned in Chapter xxvi, p. 222.

³ Mentioned in Chapter viii, p. 41.

⁴ An ancestor of the famous poet. He was killed at Rota on September 21, 1434, and is celebrated in the Spanish ballads for having slain in single combat a Moor who trailed at his charger's tail a placard bearing the words *Que Muer*. The same story is told of an earlier hero.

Leon¹: the reading of whose valorous exploits may entertain, instruct, delight, and raise admiration in the most elevated genius. This, indeed, would be a study worthy of your good understanding, my dear friend, whereby you will become learned in history, enamoured of virtue, instructed in goodness, bettered in manners, valiant without rashness, and cautious without cowardice: and all this will redound to the glory of God, to your own profit, and the fame of La Mancha, from whence, as I understand, you derive your birth and origin.

Don Quixote listened with great attention to the canon's discourse, and when he found he had done, after having stared at him a pretty while, he said: I find, sir, the whole of what you have been saying tends to persuade me there never were any knight-errant in the world, and that all the books of chivalry are false, lying, mischievous, and unprofitable to the commonwealth; and that I have done ill in reading, worse in believing, and worst of all in imitating them, by taking upon me the rigorous profession of knight-errantry, which they teach: and you deny, that ever there were any Amadis, either of Gaul or of Greece, or any other knights, such as those books are full of. It is all precisely as you say, quoth the canon. To which Don Quixote answered: You also were present at the battle of Salado in 1340: both tales are incredible. In December, 1490, Hernan Perez del Pulgar, *El de las Hazañas* ('He of the Feats-of-Arms') rode into Granada, and ran his dagger through a flaming torch which he had fastened to the door of the mosque as a sign that he took possession of it. The ballad-makers confused the two Garcilasas, and there is a distorted fashion ascribed to the latter of the two the exploits performed by Perez del Pulgar.

¹ A fifteenth-century knight, son of the Count de Riba, to whom tradition attributes the exploit recounted by Browning in *The Wound*. The story is told by a contemporary poet, Garcil Sanchez de Badajoz, and by Basilio Nevila, Part III, xxix, who says he heard it from a Spaniard; but it is found in the histories of several countries.

to add, that those books had done me much prejudice, having turned my brain, and reduced me to the being carried about in a cage; and that it would be better for me to amend and change my course of study, by reading other books, more true, more pleasant, and more instructive. True, quoth the canon. Why then, said Don Quixote, in my opinion you are the madman and the enchanted person, since you have set yourself to utter so many blasphemies against a thing so universally received in the world, and held for such truth, that he who should deny it, as you do, deserves the same punishment you are pleased to say you bestow on those books, when you read them, and they vex you. For to endeavour to make people believe, that there never was an Amadis in the world, nor any other of the knights-adventurers, of which histories are full, would be to endeavour to persuade them, that the sun does not enlighten, the frost give cold, nor the earth yield sustenance. What genius can there be in the world able to persuade another, that the affair of the Infanta Floripes¹ and Goy of Burgundy² was not true; and that of Fierabras at the bridge of Manble³, which fell out in the time of Charlemagne; which, I vow to God, is as true, as that it is now daylight? And, if these be lies, so must it also be, that there ever was a Hector or an Achilles, or a Trojan war, or the Twelve Peers of France, or King Arthur of England, who is still wandering about transformed into a raven, and is every minute expected in his kingdom. And will any one presume to say, that the history of Guarino Mesquino⁴, and that of the parent of [the] Saint Graal

¹ Goy married Floripes, sister of Fierabras

² A toll on Christians was levied by the giant Calatre at this bridge (which tradition identifies with the bridge of Alconetar), till he was overcome by Charlemagne and Fierabras.

³ A romance of the Charlemagne cycle translated from Italian into Spanish in 1327

of Bas fought the famous lord of Charai, Monseigneur Pierre, and afterwards in the city of Basle, with Monseigneur Enrique of Remestan, coming off from both engagements conqueror, and loaded with honourable fame, besides the adventures and challenges, accomplished in Burgundy, of the valiant Spaniards Pedro Barba and Gutierrez Quixada (from whom I am lineally descended), who vanquished the sons of the Count Saint Paul. Let them deny, likewise, that Don Fernando de Guevara travelled into Germany in quest of adventures, where he fought with Messire George, a knight of the duke of Austria's court. Let them say, that the jousts of Suero de Quinones of the Pass¹ were all mockery; with the enterprises of Monseigneur Louis de Falece against Don Gonzalo de Guzman, a Castilian knight, with many more exploits, performed by Christian knights of these and of foreign kingdoms: all so authentic and true, that I say again whoever denies them, must be void of all sense and reason².

The canon stood in admiration to hear the madley Don Quixote made of truths and lies, and to see how skilful he was in all matters any way relating to knight-errantry; and therefore answered him: I cannot deny, Señor Don Quixote, but there is some truth in what you say, especially in relation to the Spanish knights-errant; and I am also ready to allow, that there were the Twelve Peers of France: but I can never believe they did all those things ascribed to them by Archbishop Turpin³: for the truth is, they were knights chosen by the kings of France, and called peers, as being all equal in quality and prowess; at least, if they were not, it was fit they should be

¹ See the note on Quinones in Chapter iv, p. 35.

² There is a basis of truth for the exploits ascribed to the knights whom Don Quixote mentions—see the *Cronica de Don Juan II* and *El Paso Heoroso*.

³ Turpin, Archbishop of Rheims, died about 800, two centuries before the compilation of the spurious chronicle ascribed to him.

so, and in this respect, they were not unlike our religious military orders of Santiago or Calatrava, which presuppose that the professors are, or ought to be, cavaliers of worth, valour, and family: and, as nowadays we say, a knight of St. John, or of Alcántara, in those times they said, a knight of the Twelve Peers, those of that military order being twelve in number, and all equal. That there was a Cid, is beyond all doubt, as likewise a Bernardo del Carpio¹; but that they performed the exploits told of them, I believe there is great reason to suspect. As to Peter of Provence's peg, and its standing close by Babieca's saddle, in the king's armoury, I confess my sin, in being so ignorant, or short-sighted, that, though I have seen the saddle, I never could discover the peg; which is somewhat strange, considering how big you say it is. Yet, without all question, there it is, replied Don Quixote, by the same token that they say it is kept in a leather case, that it may not take rust. It may be so, answered the canon; but by the holy orders I have received, I do not remember to have seen it. But supposing I should grant you it is there, I do not therefore think myself bound to believe the stories of so many Amadis, nor those of such a rabble rout of knights as we hear of; nor is it reasonable, that a gentleman, so honourable, of such excellent parts, and endued with so good an understanding as yourself, should be persuaded that such strange follies as are written in the absurd books of chivalry are true.

¹ A fabulous personage who passes in the histories of Lucas of Ley and Rodrigo Ximenes de Rada as son of the Count Don Sancho and India Escamea, or Ximena, sister of Alfonso II (The Chaste).

CHAPTER L

Of the ingenious contest between Don Quixote and the canon, with other accidents

A good jest indeed ! answered Don Quixote : that books, printed with the licence of kings and the approbation of the examiners, read with general pleasure, and applauded by great and small, poor and rich, learned and ignorant, gentry and commonalty, in short, by all sorts of people, of what state or condition soever they be, should be all lies, and especially carrying such an appearance of truth ! for do they not tell us the father, the mother, the country, the kindred, the age, the place, with a particular detail of every action, performed daily by such a knight or knights ? Good sir, be silent, and do not utter such blasphemies ; and believe me, I advise you to act in this affair like a discreet person : do but peruse them, and you will find what pleasure attends this kind of reading. For, pray tell me, can there be a greater satisfaction than to see, placed as it were before our eyes, a vast lake of boiling pitch, and in it a prodigious number of serpents, snakes, crocodiles, and diverse other kinds of fierce and dreadful creatures, swimming up and down ; and from the midst of the lake to hear a most dreadful voice, saying : ' O knight, whoever thou art that standest beholding this tremendous lake, if thou art desirous to enjoy the happiness that lies concealed beneath these sable waters, show the valour of thy undaunted breast, and plunge thyself headlong into the midst of the black and burning liquor ; for, if thou dost not, thou wilt be unworthy to see the mighty wonders enclosed therein, and contained in the seven castles of the seven enchanted nymphs, who dwell beneath this horrid blackness '. And scarcely has the knight

heard the fearful voice, when, without further consideration, or reflecting upon the danger to which he exposes himself, and even without putting off his cumbersome and weighty armour, recommending himself to God and his mistress, he plunges into the middle of the boiling pool; and, when he neither heeds nor considers what may become of him, he finds himself in the midst of flowery fields, with which those of Elysium can in no wise compare. There the sky seems more transparent, and the sun shines with a fresher brightness. Beyond it appears a pleasing forest, so green and shady, that its verdure rejoices the sight, whilst the ears are entertained with the sweet and artless notes of an infinite number of little painted birds, hopping to and fro among the intricate branches. Here he discovers a warbling brook, whose cool waters, resembling liquid crystal, run murmuring over the fine sands and snowy pebbles, out-glittering sifted gold and purest pearl. There he repairs an artificial fountain of variegated jasper and polished marble. Here he beholds another of rustic work, in which the minute shells of the mussel, with the white and yellow wreathed houses of the snail, placed in orderly confusion, interspersed with pieces of glittering crystal and pellucid emeralds, compose a work of such variety, that art, imitating nature, seems here to surpass her. Then on a sudden he descends a strong castle, or stately palace, whose walls are of massy gold, the battlements of diamonds, and the gates of hyacinths; in short, the structure is so admirable, that, though the materials whereof it is framed, are no less than diamonds, carbuncles, rubies, pearls, gold, and emeralds, yet the workmanship is still more precious. And, after having seen all this, can anything be more charming than to behold, saluting each at the castle gate, a bravely troop of damsels, whose bravery and gorgeous attire should I pretend to describe, as the histories do at large. I should never have done! And then she who appears to be the chief of them all, presently taken by the hand the damsel

knight, who threw himself into the burning lake, and, without speaking a word, carries him into the rich palace, or castle, and stripping him as naked as his mother bore him, bathes him in milk-warm water, and then anoints him all over with odouriferous unguents, and puts on him a shirt of the finest lawn, all sweet-scented and perfumed. Then comes another damsel, and throws over his shoulders a mantle, reckoned worth, at the very least, a city or more. What a sight is it then, when after this he is carried to another hall, to behold the tables spread in such order, that he is struck with surprise and wonder: then to see him wash his hands in water distilled from amber and sweet-scented flowers: to see him seated in a chair of ivory: to behold the damsels waiting upon him in marvellous silence: then to see such variety of delicious viands, so artfully dressed, that the appetite is at a loss to direct the hand: To hear soft music while he is eating, without knowing who it is that sings, or from whence the sounds proceed! And when dinner is ended, and the cloth taken away, the knight sitting in his chair, and perhaps picking his teeth, according to custom, enters unexpectedly at the hall door a damsel much more beautiful than any of the former, and seating herself by the knight's side, begins to give him an account what castle that is, and how she is enchanted in it, with sundry other matters which surprise the knight, and raise the admiration of those who read his history. I will enlarge no further hereupon, for from hence you may conclude, that whatever part our trade of whatever history of knight-errant must needs cause delights and wonder to the reader. Believe me then, sir, and, as I have already hinted, read these books, and you will find, that they will banish all your melancholy, and amehorate your disposition, if it happens to be a bad one. Thus I can say for myself, that since I have been a knight-errant, I am become valiant, civil, liberal, well-bred, generous, courteous, daring, active, patient, a conqueror of toads, improve

If there be wanting in the beginnings the means and ends will always be erroneous, and therefore God usually prospers the good intentions of the simple, and disappoints the evil designs of the cunning. I do not understand these philosophies, answered Sancho. I only know, I wish I may as speedily have the earldom as I should know how to govern it, for I have as large a soul as another, and as large a body as the best of them: and I should be as much a king of my own dominions, as any one is of his: and being so, I would do what I pleased, and doing what I pleased, I should have my will; and having my will, I should be contented, and when one is contented, there is no more to be desired, and when there is no more to be desired, there's an end of it. and let the estate come, and God be with ye, and let us see it, as one blind man said to another. These are no bad philosophies, as you say, Sancho, quoth the canon: nevertheless there is a great deal more to be said upon the subject of earldoms. To which Don Quixote replied: I know not what more may be said: only I govern myself by the example of the great Amadis de Gaul, who made his squire knight of the Firm Island, and therefore I may, without scruple of conscience, make an earl of Sancho Panza, who is one of the best squires that ever knight errant had. The canon was amazed at Don Quixote's metaphysical and orderly madness, the manner of his describing the adventure of the Knight of the Lake the impression made upon him by those personated her he had read in his books, and lastly, he admired the simplicity of Sancho, who so vehemently desired to obtain the earldom his master had promised him.

By this time the canon's servants, who went to the inn for the sampler maid, were come back, and spreading a carpet on the green grass, they sat down under the shade of some trees, and dined there, that the waggoner might not lose the convenience of that fresh pasture, as we have said before. And while they were eating, they heard on a sudden a loud

I verily believe you, said the priest : for I have found, by experience, that the mountains breed learned men, and the cottages of shepherds contain philosophers. At least, sir, replied the goatherd, they afford men, who have some knowledge from experience, and to convince you of this truth, though I seem to invite myself without being asked, if it be not tiresome to you, and if you please, gentlemen, to lend me your attention, I will tell you a true story, which will confirm what I and this same gentleman (pointing to the priest) have said.

To this Don Quixote answered : Seeing this business has somewhat the face of an adventure, I for my part will listen to you, brother, with all my heart, and so will all these gentlemen, being discreet and ingenious persons, and such as love to hear curious novelties, that surprise, gladden, and entertain the senses, as I do not doubt but your story will do. Begin then, friend, for we will all hearken. I draw my stake, quoth Sancho, and hire me with this party to yonder brook, where I intend to stuff myself for three days ; for I have heard my master, Don Quixote, say : That the squire of a knight errant must fast, when he has it, until he can eat no longer, because it often happens that they get into some wood so intricate, that there is no way of hitting the way out in six days : and then, if a man has not his belly well lined, or his wallet well provided, there he may remain, and often does remain, until he is turned into a mummy. You are in the right, Sancho said Don Quixote : go whither you will, and eat what you can ; for I am already sated, and want only to give my mind its repast, which I am going to do, by listening to this honest man's story. We all do the same, quoth the canon, and then desired the goatherd to begin the tale he had promised. The goatherd gave the goat, which he held by the horns, two slaps on the back with the palm of his hand, saying : Lie thee down by me, speckled lord ; for we have time and to spare for returning to our fold. The goat

right it was to dispose of so precious a jewel, was perplexed, not knowing, amidst the great number of importunate suitors, on which to bestow her. Among the many who were thus disposed, I was one, and flattered myself with many and great hopes of success, as being known to her father, born in the same village, untainted in blood, in the flower of my age, tolerably rich, and of no despicable understanding. With the very same advantage another of our village demanded her also in marriage: which occasioned a suspense and balancing of her father's will, who thought his daughter would be very well matched with either of us; and, to get out of this perplexity, he determined to acquaint Leandra with it (for that is the rich maiden's name, who has reduced me to this wretched state), considering that since our pretensions were equal, it was best to leave the choice to his beloved daughter: an example worthy the imitation of all parents, who would marry their children. I do not say, they should give them their choice in things prejudicial, but they should propose to them good ones, and out of them let them choose to their minds. For my part, I know not what was Leandra's liking: I only know that her father put us both off by pleading the too tender age of his daughter, and with such general expressions as neither laid any obligations upon him, nor disobliged either of us. My rival's name is Anselmo, and mine Eugenio, for it is fit you should know the names of the persons concerned in this tragedy, the catastrophe of which is still depending, though one may easily foresee it will be disastrous.

About that time there came to our town one Vincent de la Roca, son of a poor farmer of the same village: which Vincent was come out of Italy, and other countries, where he had served in the wars. A captain, who happened to march that way with his company, had carried him away from our town at twelve years of age, and the young man returned at the end of twelve years more, in the garb of a

speak. But his graces and accomplishments did not end here; for he was also a bit of a poet, and would compose a ballad a league and a half in length on every childish accident that happened in the village.

Now this soldier, whom I have here described, this Vincent de la Roca, this hero, this gallant, this musician, this poet, was often seen and admired by Leandra from a window of her house which faced the market-place. She was struck with the tinsel of his gaudy apparel: his ballads enchanted her, and he gave at least twenty copies about of all he composed: the exploits he related of himself reached her ears lastly (for so it seems the devil had ordained). she fell downright in love with him, before he had entertained the presumption of courting her. And, as in affairs of love, none are so easily accomplished as those which are favoured by the inclination of the lady, Leandra and Vincent easily came to an agreement, and before any of the multitude of her suitors had the least suspicion of her design, she had already accomplished it: for she left the house of her dear and beloved father (for mother she had none), and absented herself from the town with the soldier, who came off with this attempt more triumphantly than from any of those others he had so arrogantly boasted of. This event amazed the whole town, and all that heard anything of it. I, for my part, was confounded, Aquilino astonished, her father sad, her husband exhaled, justice alarmed, and the troopers of the Holy Brotherhood in readiness. They burnt the highways, and searched the woods, leaving no place unexamined; and, at the end of three days, they found the poor fond Leandra in a cave of a mountain, naked to her shift, and stripped of a large sum of money, and several valuable jewels, she had carried away from home. They brought her back into the presence of her desconsolate father; they asked her how this misfortune had befallen her; she readily confessed, that Vincent de la Roca had deceived her, and, upon promise of marriage, had persuaded her to leave her

our parlours, or singing together the praises or reproaches of the fair Leandra, or sighing alone, and each apart communicating our plaints to heaven, several others of Leandra's suitors, in imitation of us, are come to these rocky mountains, practising the same employments; and they are so numerous, that this place seems to be converted into the pastoral meadow, it is so full of shepherds and flocks: nor is there any part of it where the name of the beautiful Leandra is not heard. One utters execrations against her, calling her fond, fickle, and immodest, another condemns her forwardness and levity: some excuse and pardon her: others arraign and condemn her, some celebrate her beauty: another rails at her ill qualities; in short, all blame and all adore her, and the madness of all runs to that pitch, that some complain of her disdain who never spoke to her. Yes, some there are who bemoan themselves, and feel the raging disease of jealousy, though she never gave any occasion for it; for, as I have said, her guilt was known before her inclination. There is no hollow of a rock, nor brink of a rivulet, nor shade of a tree, that is not occupied by some shepherd, who is recounting his misfortunes to the air: the echo, wherever it can be formed, repeats the name of Leandra: the mountains resound Leandra, the brooks murmur Leandra: in short, Leandra holds us all in suspense and enchanted, hoping without hope, and fearing without knowing what we fear. Among these extravagant madmen, he who shows the least and the most sense is my rival Anselmo, who, having so many other causes of complaint, complains only of absence, and to the sound of a rebeck, which he touches to admiration, pours forth his complaints in verse, which discover an excellent genius. I follow an easier, and, in my opinion, a better way, which is to inveigh against the levity of women, their inconstancy, and double-dealing, their lifeless promises, and broken faith; and, in short, the little discretion they show in placing their affections, or making their choice.

Quixote stirred neither hand nor foot ; and so, believing he had killed him, in all haste he tucked up his frock under his girdle, and he began to fly away over the field as nimble as a buck.

By this time all Don Quixote's company was come up, and the processioners, seeing them running towards them, and with them the troopers of the Holy Brotherhood with their crossbows, began to fear some ill accident, and drew up in a circle round the image ; and, lifting up their hoods, and grasping their whips, as the ecclesiastics did their taper, they stood expecting the assault, determined to defend themselves, and, if they could, to offend their aggressors. But fortune ordered it better than they imagined : for all that Sancho did, was, to throw himself upon the body of his master, and to pour forth the most dolorous and ridiculous lamentation in the world, believing verily that he was dead. The priest was known by another priest, who came in the procession, and their being acquainted dissipated the fear of the two squadrons. The first priest gave the second an account in two words who Don Quixote was ; whereupon he and the whole rout of disciplinants went to see whether the poor knight was dead or not, and they overheard Sancho Panza say, with tears in his eyes : O flower of chivalry, who by one single thrack hast finished the career of thy well-spent life ! O glory of thy race, credit and renown of La Mancha, yea, of the whole world, which, by wanting thee, will be overrun with evil-doers, who will no longer fear the being chastised for their iniquities ! O liberal above all Alexanders, seeing that, for eight months' service only, thou hast given me the best island the sea doth compass or surround ! O thou that wert humble with the haughty, and arrogant with the humble, undertaker of dangers, sufferer of affronts, in love without cause, imitator of the good, scourge of the wicked, enemy of the base, in a word, knight-errant, which is all that can be said ! At Sancho's cries and lamentations Don Quixote revived, and the first word he said, was.

Quixote stirred neither hand nor foot; and so, believing he had killed him, in all haste he tucked up his frock under his girdle, and he began to fly away over the field as nimble as a buck.

By this time all Don Quixote's company was come up, and the processioners, seeing them running towards them, and with them the troopers of the Holy Brotherhood with their crossbows, began to fear some ill accident, and draw up in a circle round the image; and, lifting up their hoods, and grasping their whips, as the ecclesiastice did their tapers, they stood expecting the assault, determined to defend themselves, and, if they could, to offend their aggressors. But fortune ordered it better than they imagined. For all that Sancho did, was, to throw himself upon the body of his master, and to pour forth the most dolorous and ridiculous lamentation in the world, believing verily that he was dead. The priest was known by another priest, who came in the procession, and their being acquainted dissipated the fear of the two squadrons. The first priest gave the second an account in two words who Don Quixote was, whereupon he and the whole rout of disciplinants went to see whether the poor knight was dead or not, and they overheard Sancho Panza say, with tears in his eyes, O flower of chivalry, who by one single thrust hast founded the career of thy well-spent life! O glory of thy race, credit and renown of La Mancha, yea, of the whole world, which, by wasting thee, will be covered with evil-doers, who will no longer fear the being charmed for their iniquities! O liberal above all Alexanders, seeing that, for eight months' service only, thou hast given me the best island the sea doth compass or surround! O thou that wert humble with the lowly, and arrogant with the humble, undertaker of dangers, sufferer of affronts, in love without cause, imitator of the good, saviour of the wicked, enemy of the base, in a word, knight-errant, which is all that can be said! At Sancho's cries and lamentations Don Quixote revived, and the first word he said was, His

nament in that city, and that there befell him things worthy of his valour and good understanding. Nor should he have learned anything at all concerning his death, if a lucky accident had not brought him acquainted with an aged physician, who had in his custody a leaden box, found, as he said, under the ruins of an ancient hermitage then rebuilding: in which box was found a manuscript of parchment written in Gothic characters, but in Castilian verse, containing many of his exploits, and giving an account of the beauty of Dulcinea del Toboso, the figure of Rocinante, the fidelity of Sancho Panza, and the burial of Don Quixote himself, with several eptaphs and eulogies on his life and manners. All that could be read, and perfectly made out, were those inserted here by the faithful author of this strange and never before seen history: which author desires no other reward from those who shall read it, in recompense of the vast pains it has cost him to inquire into and search all the archives of La Mancha to bring it to light, but that they would afford him the same credit that ingenious people give to books of knight-errantry, which are so well received in the world: and herewith he will reckon himself well paid, and will rest satisfied; and will moreover be encouraged to seek and find out others, if not as true, at least of as much invention and entertainment. The first words, written in the parchment which was found in the leaden box, were these:—

THE ACADEMICIANS OF ALCAMASILLA,

A TOWN OF LA MANCHA,

OR

THE LIFE AND DEATH OF

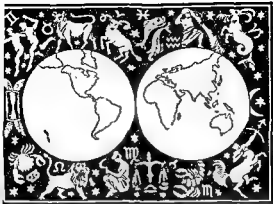
THE VALOROUS DON QUIXOTE DE LA MANCHA,

WROTE THIS:

These were all the verses that could be read: the rest, the characters being worm-eaten, were consigned to one of the Academicians, to find out their meaning by conjectures. We are informed he has done it after many lucubrations and much pains, and that he designs to publish them, giving us hopes of Don Quixote's third sally.

Ferre altro catterà con miglior plettro¹

¹ Adapted from Ariosto's *Orlando Furioso*, xii. 10.



THE
WORLD'S
CLASSICS



OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS

The World's Classics



THE best recommendation of *The World's Classics* is the books themselves, which have earned unstinted praise from critics and all classes of the public. Some two million copies have been sold, and of the volumes already published very many have gone into a second, third, fourth, fifth, sixth, seventh, eighth, ninth, tenth, or later impression. It is only possible to give so much for the money when large sales are certain. The clearness of the type, the quality of the paper, the size of the page, the printing, and the binding—from the cheapest to the best—cannot fail to commend themselves to all who love good literature presented in worthy form. That a high standard is insisted upon is proved by the list of books already published and of those on the eve of publication. A great feature is the brief critical introductions written by leading authorities of the day.



A NUMBER of the volumes are issued in the *Oxford Library of Standard Works*, the size and type as *The World's Classics*, but bound in antique leather, in Italian, thin boards, gilt design, gilt top, and in Suede, yapp edges, gilt top; each with bookmark. These are specially recommended for presentation. (The volumes are obtainable only through the booksellers.)

Pocket size, 6 x 4 inches. Large type, on thin paper per paper
Obtainable either in superfine art cloth or vulcanized rubber

LIST OF THE SERIES

The figures in parentheses denote the number of the book in the series

- Aeschylus.** The Seven Plays. Translated by E. V. Rieu (1157)
- Ainsworth (W. Harrison).** The Town of London (1161)
- A Kempis Thomas.** The Imitation of Christ (1162)
- Alexander Sergeyevich.** Trans. 1 to 1000
A Russian Grammar (1163) Years of Childhood (1164)
A Russian Vocabulary (1165)
- Aristophanes.** From a translation of the Aristophanes English Poets
and Plays. Introduction by W. W. Moore (1166)
- Arnold (Matthew).** Poems. Intro. by the A. T. Gifford (1167)
- Aurelius (Marcus).** Thoughts. Trans. 1 to 1000 (1168)
- Austen (Jane).** Poems. Introduction by E. V. Rieu (1169)
- Bacon.** The Advancement of Learning and the New Organon. Intro.
written by Professor Lamb (1170) Essays (1171)
- Balcan.** The Inquisitor's Legend (1172)
- Barnes (Sir John).** The Master of the House (1173)
- Barnes-Edwards (M.).** The Lord of the Manor. Introduction by
Professor H. H. H. (1174)
- Blackmore (R. D.).** Poems. Intro. by the A. T. Gifford (1175)
- Borrow.** The Bible in Spain (1176) Lavengro (1177)
The Ringers of the Bell (1178) Wild Wales (1179)
- Brontë Sisters.**
Charlotte Brontë. Jane Eyre (1180) Shirley (1181) Villette (1182)
The Professor and the Poems of Charlotte Brontë and Anne
Brontë. Introduction by Professor Moore (1183) The Poems
of Charlotte Brontë by E. C. Gifford (1184)
Emily Brontë. Wuthering Heights (1185)
Anne Brontë. Agnes Grey (1186)
The Poems of Anne Brontë (1187)
- Brown Dr. John.** Poems. Introduction by the A. T. Gifford (1188)
- Browning (Elizabeth Barrett).** Poems. A Selection (1189)
- Browning (Robert).** Poems and Plays. Selections (1190)
Poems, 1840-1860 (1191)
- Buckle.** The History of Civilization in England. Books 1 to 3 (1192)
- Bunyan.** The Pilgrim's Progress (1193)
- Burke.** Speeches and Writings. Introduction by Judge W. W. W. and
Preface by E. C. Gifford (1194)
- Vol. 1 to 3. Preface by E. C. Gifford (1195) P. 1 to 100 (1196)
Vol. 1 to 100. Preface by E. C. Gifford (1197)
- Caesar.** Commentaries with Introduction by the A. T. Gifford (1198)
- Chaucer.** Poems (1199)
- Chaucer.** Poems. A Selection (1200)

LIST OF THE SERIES

5

- English Letters. (Fifteenth to Nineteenth Centuries.) (192)
 English Prose. Chosen and arranged by W. FRASCOCK
 Mandeville to Raskin (149) Wycliffe to Clarendon (219)
 Milton to Gray (220) Walpole to Lamb (221)
 Lander to Holmes (222) Mrs. Gaskell to Henry James (223)
 English Prose. Narrative, Descriptive, and Dramatic. Selected
 by H. A. TRENDA. (204)
 English Short Stories. (Nineteenth Century.) (191)
 Second Series. (Nineteenth and Twentieth Centuries.) (224)
 English Songs and Ballads. Compiled by T. W. H. CROSLAND. (113)
 English Speeches, from Burke to Gladstone. (190)
 Fielding. Journal of a Voyage to Lisbon, &c. Intro. A. DODSON (148)
 Fraunce (St.). The Love Flowers of St. Francis. In English Verse by
 J. RICHARDS. (263)
 Franklin (Benjamin). Autobiography (136)
 Froese (J. A.). Short Studies on Great Subjects. First Series. (169)
 Galt (John). The Emerald. Introduction by JOHN ARSCOTT (177)
 Gaskell (Mrs.). Introductions by C. BARNES SHOOTER
 Cousin Philie, and Other Tales, &c. (102)
 Cranford, The Cage at Cranford, and The Moorland Cottage. (104)
 Lionel Lincoln, The Grey Woman, and Other Tales, &c. (173)
 Mary Barton (186) North and South (164)
 Ruth at Lamb, and Other Tales, &c. (103)
 Rosedale House (190) Ruth (181) Sylvia's Lovers (156)
 Wives and Daughters (155) Life of Charlotte Brontë (214)
 Gheeta and Marvels: a Selection of Limerick Tales made by V. H.
 CULLUM, with an Introduction by MONTAGUE R. JAMES. (284)
 Gibbon. Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire. With Maps. 3 vols.
 (14, 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21)
 Autobiography. Introduction by J. E. SEAT (130)
 Goethe. Faust, Part I (with Marlowe's Dr. Faustus). (112)
 Goldsmith. Poems (113) The Vicar of Wakefield (41)
 Gray (Thomas). Letters, selected by JOHN BARNES. (219)
 Hawthorne. The House of the Seven Gables (173)
 The Scarlet Letter (164)
 Hazlitt. Characters of Shakespeare's Plays. Introduction by Sir A.
 QUILLER-COUCH (205)
 Lectures on the English Comic Writers. Introduction by R. BARNES
 JOHNSON (124) Lectures on the English Poets (115)
 Sketches and Essays (115) Spirit of the Age (27)
 Table-Talk (5) Waverley (15)
 Herbert (George). Poems. Introduction by ARTHUR WAGNER. (1)
 Herrick. Poems (146)
 Holmes (Oliver Wendell). The Autocrat of the Breakfast Table (1)
 The Post at the Breakfast Table. Intro. Sir W. R. RUSSELL (191)
 The Professor at the Breakfast Table. Intro. Sir W. R. RUSSELL (1)

- Homer. Translated by POPE. Lond. (18) *Odyssey*. (36)
Iliad. *Forma*. Introduction by WALTER JARROLD. (87)
Horne (R. H.). *A New Spirit of the Age*. Intro. W. JARROLD. (17)
Homer. *Epics*. (13)
Hunt (Leigh). *Essays and Sketches*. Intro. R. B. JENNINGS. (119)
The Town. Introduction and Notes by ARTHUR DODD. (134)
Irving (Washington). *The Conquest of Canada*. (190)
The Sketch Book. Introduction by T. BALSTON. (173)
Johnson (Samuel). *Letters*, selected by R. W. CHAPMAN. (221)
Letters of the Poets. Intro. A. WATSON. 2 vols. (23, 24)
Keats. *Poems*. (7)
Kable. *The Christian Year*. (141)
Kingsley (Henry). *Ravenshoe*. (461) *Crofters Hamlyn*. (271)
Lamb. *Essays of Elia, and The Last Essays of Elia*. (2)
Lander. *Imaginary Conversations*. Selected, with Introduction, by Prof. H. DE SALMONOIS. (196)
Lange. *Gil Blas*. Translated by T. SWOLLETT, with Introduction and Notes by J. FITZGERALD KELLY. 2 vols. (131, 132)
Letters written in War Time. Selected by H. W. BACON. (221)
Longfellow. *Evangelist, The Golden Legend, &c.* (39)
Humana, Miles Standish, Tales of a Wayside Inn, &c. (174)
Lytton. *Harold*. With 6 Illustrations by CHARLES BLTON. (165)
Macaulay. *Lays of Ancient Rome*, (177) *The Armada*. (17)
Machlaviell. *The Prince*. Translated by LUCIA RICCI. (41)
Marcus Aurelius. See *Aurelius*.
Marlowe. *Dr. Faustus* (with Goethe's *Faust*, Part I). (115)
Marryat. *Mr. Midshipman Easy*. (100)
Melville (Herman). *Moby Dick*. Intro. VIOLA MITCHELL. (275)
Typee. (274) *Omoo*. (273)
White-Jacket. Intro. LARA VON DORR. (210)
Mill (John Stuart). *On Liberty, &c.* Intro. Mrs. FAUCHET. (170)
Autobiography. Intro. H. J. LASEL. (261)
Milton. *The English Poems*. (141)
Montaigne. *Essays*. Translated by J. FLORIO. 3 vols. (65, 70, 71)
Moriarty (J. J.). *Haji Baba of Ispahan*. Ed. by C. W. STEWART. With a Map. (237)
Haji Baba in England. (284)
Morris (W.). *The Defence of Guinevere, Juvenal, &c.* (181)
Molloy. *Rise of the Dutch Republic*. 3 vols. 196, 197, 198)
Who can be happy and free in Ruins? A Poem. Trans. by JULIUS BOENKE. (212)
The Golden Treasury. With additional Poems, including FITZGERALD'S translation of *Our Khyphim*. (133)

Peacock (T. L.). *Misnomers of Fiction* and *Crochet Langle*. Intro-
duced by R. W. CHAPMAN. 1944

Peacock W. J. *English Prose from Mandeville to Ruskin*. 149

English Prose. 4 vols. —

Wycliffe to Chaucer. 1910

Milton to Carlyle. 1920

Wycliffe to Lamb. 1911

Lamb to Holmes. 1919

Mrs. Gaskell to Henry James. 1913

Selected English Essays. 191

Parlan (From the). *The Three Derivatives, and Other Stories*. Trans-
lated by R. LEE. 1942

Poe Edgar Allan. *Tales of Mystery and Imagination*. 111

Poish Tales. *A Selection*. Translated by ELIZABETH BENTLEY and
MARGARET BENTLEY. 191

Prescott (W. H.). *History of the Conquest of Mexico*. Introduction
by Mrs. ALICE TAPPIN. 2 vols. 1919 1920

Reynolds (Sir Joshua). *The Dissipation and the Letters to 'The
Lion'*. Introduction by ARTHUR DODD. 147

Rossetti (Christina). *Golden Masket*. *The Prince's Progress*, and
Other Poems. 1844

Rossetti (D. G.). *Poems and Translations*. 1911 1912 1913

Ruskin. *Ruskin House*. Edited by arrangement with Messrs. Allen
and Unwin Ltd.

'A Fox for Love' and 'The Two Paths'. Illustrated. 1917

Sesame and Lilies, and *Lilies of the Field*. 191

Time and Tide, and *The Crown of Wild Olive*. 1919

Unto the Last, and *Masters of the Past*. 191

Scott, Thomas. 191

Lives of the Novelists. Introduction by ARTHUR DODD. 1941

Poems. A Selection. 1915

Selected English Short Stories. (A selection of the best and most
interesting). 1919 1921

*Selected Speeches and Documents on British Colonial Policy
1773-1873*. Edited with introduction by Professor A. B. KERR
and L. D. LEE. 2 vols. 1918 1919

Selected Speeches and Documents on Indian Policy 1738-1873
Edited with introduction by Prof. A. B. KERR. 1911 1912

Selected Speeches on British Foreign Policy 1738-1873. Edited
by Professor A. B. KERR. 1911 1912

Shakespeare. *Poems and Prose*. With a Preface by A. C. SWINBURNE
and others. Introduction to the several parts and poems by
Professor LEE and a Preface by T. W. ARNOLD. 1919 1920 1921
Special typographical treatment of this Edition. 4 vols.

Comedies. 1 vol. 1919, 1921, 1922

Historical and Prose. 2 vols. 1919, 1921, 1922

Tragedies. 2 vols. 1919, 1921, 1922

Shakespeare's Contemporaries. See Preface by Professor
L. D. LEE, Introduction, Preface and Introduction. Edited by
C. B. MURPHY. 1919

Shakespearean Collection. A Selection. T. D. R. SMITH. 1919

Shelley Poems. A Selection. 1919

Shelley Poems. Introduction by Henry Keston. 1919

Shelley Poems. The Works of Shelley. 2 vols. 1919

- Smith (Alexander). *Discourses*, with *Selections from Lect. Lect.*
Introduction by Prof. HUGH WARREN. (100s)
- Smollett. *Travels through France and Italy*. Intro. T. SACCOMBE. 10s
- Sophocles. *The Seven Plays*. Trans. LEWIS CAMPBELL. (11s)
- Southeby (Robert). *Lectures, Select*, with an Introduction and Notes
by MARGARET H. FITZGERALD. (10s)
- Sterne. *Tristram Shandy*. (12s)
- Swift. *Gulliver's Travels*. (10s)
- Taylor (Kendall). *Confessions of a Thief*. (10s)
- Tennyson. *Selected Poems*. Introduction by Sir H. WARDEN. (3s)
- Thackeray. *Book of Snobs, Sketches and Travels in London, &c.* (5s)
Henry James. (10s)
- Thoreau. *Walden*. Introduction by THEODORE WATTS-DUTTON. (6s)
- Terrry (three Tales). Translated by L. and A. MACON. (7s)
- Three Derivatives, The, &c. *Stories from the Persian* by R. LEVY. (12s)
- Tolstoy. Translated by LOUIS and ARLINE MACON.
A Confession, and What I Believe. (10s)
Anna Karenina. 3 vols. (11s, 11s, 11s)
The Cosacks, &c. (10s) *Essays and Lectures*. (10s)
The Kreutzer Sonata, &c. (10s) *Plays complete*. (14s)
Resurrection. (10s) *Twenty-three Tales*. (7s)
War and Peace. 3 vols. (12s-4) *What then must we do?* (10s)
- Trollope. *An Autobiography*. Intro. by MICHAEL SADLER. (12s)
Bartholomew Town. (10s)
The Broken Empire. (10s)
The Claverings. Intro. by G. S. STREET. (12s)
Miss Mackenzie. (10s) *Rachel Ray*. (10s)
The Three Clerks. Intro. by W. TEICHHOWTH SHORE. (14s)
The Warden. (12s) *The Vicar of Bathampton*. (12s)
- Virgil. Trans. by DAVIES (7s) Trans. by J. RHOADS. (12s)
- Watts-Dutton (Theodore). *Astoria*. (3s)
- Wells (Charles). *Joseph and his Brothers*. With an Introduction by
ALGERNON CHARLES SWINBURNE, and a Note on *Romans* and
Charles Wells by THEODORE WATTS-DUTTON. (14s)
- White (Gilbert). *The Natural History of Selborne*. (12s)
- Whitman. *Leaves of Grass - A Selection*. Introduction by E. GE
SELIVGENT. (12s)
- Whittier. *Poems - A Selection*. (10s)
- Wordsworth. *Poems - A Selection*. (10s)

Other Volumes in preparation.

FORD UNIVERSITY PRESS

Edinburgh Glasgow Copenhagen

Toronto Melbourne Cape Town

Calcutta Madras Shanghai

Wamphrey Midford

